This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

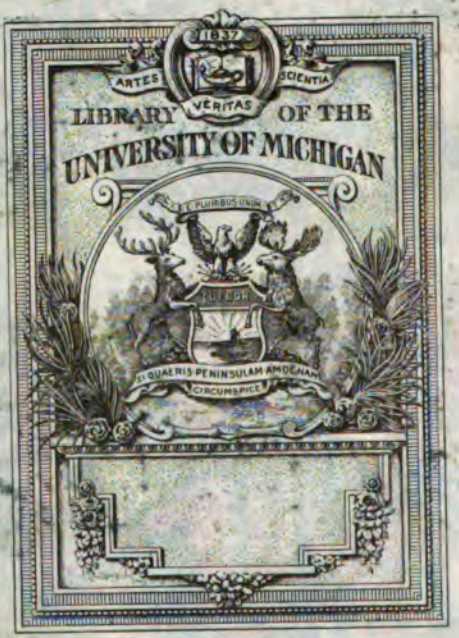
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google



THIS BOOK
FORMS PART OF THE
ORIGINAL LIBRARY
OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN
BOUGHT IN EUROPE
1838 TO 1839
BY
ASA GRAY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

~~L. H. S. U.~~

DC
211
.L343

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

5998

2 — 497

MEMORIAL DE SAINTE HÉLÈNE.

JOURNAL

OF THE

PRIVATE LIFE

AND

CONVERSATIONS

OF THE

EMPEROR NAPOLEON

AT SAINT HELENA.

BY

THE COUNT DE LAS CASES.

VOL. III.

PART THE FIFTH.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR HENRY COLBURN AND CO.

1823.

Digitized by Google

B. Bensley,
Bolt Court, Fleet Street.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF

THE FIFTH PART.

	Page
The Bill respecting our Exile—Beaumarchais—Account of the Works of Cherbourg	1
Long audience given to the Governor—Remote Conversation	16
On the beautiful Women of Italy—Madame Grassini—Madame V.... ;—and Berthier	19
Faubourg Saint Germain—Aristocracy ; Democracy—The Emperor's Intention to marry a French Woman	23
Our Establishment on Fire—Etiquette at Longwood	29
Establishments for Mendicity in France—Napoleon's Projects on Illyria—Hospitals—The Foundling—Prisoners of State—Ideas of the Emperor	31
Egypt—Saint-Jean d'Acre—The Desert—Anecdotes, &c.	58
Paternal Advice—Remarkable Conversation—Cagliostro ; Mesmer, Gall, Lavater, &c.	64
Singular Accumulation of Contrarieties, &c. &c.	70
Madame de B....—Details, &c.—Anecdotes respecting the Emigrants	73
The Emperor receives Letters from his Family—Conversation with the Admiral—The Commissioners of the Allied Powers	76
Fresh Instance of the Governor's Malignity, &c.—Desperate Project of Santini, the Corsican	82
La Harpe's Mélanie—Nuns—Convents—Monks of La Trappe—The French Clergy	86
Marie Antoinette—The Manners of Versailles—Anecdote—Beverley—Diderot's Père de Famille	91
Historical Sketch of the Emigration to Coblentz—Anecdotes, &c.	94
Napoleon's Sentimental Journey—Public Spirit of the Time—Events of the 10th of August	139
Masked Balls—Madame de Mégrigny—Piedmont and the Piedmontese—Canals of France—Dreams on Paris—Versailles—Fontainebleau, &c	145
Plan of a History of Europe—Selim III.—Forces of a Turkish Sultan—The Mamelukes—On the Regency..	161
Campaigns of Italy, &c.—Epoch of 1815, &c.—Gustavus III.—Gustavus IV.—Bernadotte—Paul I.	165
Napoleon's Patrimonial Vine, &c.—His Nurse—His Paternal Roof—Tears of Josephine, during Wurmser's Skirmishes in the Environs of Mantua	179

Digitized by Google

Page

The Emperor Bishop, &c.—Had never suffered in his Stomach 185
Campaign of 1809, &c. &c..... 186
On the War with Russia—Fatalities, &c.—M. de Talleyrand, &c.—The Corinna of Madame de Staël.—M. Necker, &c..... 188
Shooting Party at St. Helena, &c.—Eve of the 15th of August, &c..... 195
The Emperor's Birth-Day..... 197
Polytechnic School suppressed, &c.—Indecency of the English Journals—Ice Machine..... ib.
Religious Ideas of Napoleon—Bishop of Nantez (de Voisin)—The Pope—Liberties of the Gallican Church—Anecdotes—Concordat of Fontainebleau..... 199
Warm Conversation with the Governor, in the Admiral's Presence 219
The Conversation with the Governor again noticed, &c.—Effect of the Libels against Napoleon—Treaty of Fontainebleau—The Work of General S——n 224
The Baroness de S ...., &c..... 230
Corvisard—Anecdotes of the Saloons of Paris..... 233
The Emperor continues ill—Remarkable Official Document, addressed to Sir Hudson Lowe 239
Official Document 241
My English Family—Just Debt of Gratitude to the English on the part of the Emigrants, &c.—General Joubert — Petersburg — Moscow; the Fire—Projects of Napoleon, had he returned victorious 254
On the Coronation, &c.—Decrees of Berlin and Milan—The Grand Cause of the Hatred of the English 281
Account of the Campaign of Waterloo, dictated by Napoleon 286

INDEX 311

Digitized by Google

MY RESIDENCE

WITH

THE EMPEROR NAPOLEON

AT ST. HELENA.

The Bill respecting our Exile.—Beaumarchais.—Account of the Works of Cherbourg.

July 15, 1816. About ten o'clock, the Emperor entered my apartment; he came unawares, as he wished to take a walk. I followed him, and he walked for some time towards the wood, where we were taken up by the calash. A considerable interval had elapsed since he made use of it. I was the only person with him, and the bill, which related to him, and with the nature of which we were unacquainted, was, during the whole time, the subject of our conversation. . . . . .

. . . . . .

. . . . . .

Upon our return, the Emperor, after some hesitation, whether he should breakfast under the trees, determined to go in, and remained at home the whole of the day. He dined alone.

Digitized by Google

He sent for me after dinner; I found him engaged in reading some Mercuries or old journals. They supplied various anecdotes and circumstances respecting Beaumarchais, whom the Emperor, during his consulate, had, notwithstanding all his wit, uniformly discountenanced, on account of his bad character and his gross immorality. The difference of manners imparted a poignancy to the anecdotes, although the difference of times was so trifling. He found an account of Louis the Sixteenth's visit to Cherbourg, on which he dwelt for some time. He next adverted to the works of Cherbourg, and took a rapid review of them, with the clearness, precision, and lively manner that characterized every thing he said.

Cherbourg is situated at the bottom of a semicircular bay, the two extremities of which are the the isle Pelée on the right, and the point Querqueville on the left. The line, by which these two points are connected, forms the chord or the diameter, and runs East and West.

Opposite, to the North, and at a very small distance, about 20 leagues, is the celebrated Portsmouth, the grand arsenal of the English. The remainder of their coast runs nearly parallel opposite to ours. Nature has done every thing for our rivals; nothing for us. Their shores are safe and every day freed from obstruction. They abound in good soundings, in the means of shel-

Digitized by Google

ter, in harbours and excellent ports; ours are, on the contrary, filled with rocks, their water is shallow, and they are every day choaking up. We have not in these parts a single real port of large dimensions, and it might be said, that the English are, at the same moment, both at home and on our coast, since it is not requisite for their squadrons, at anchor in Portsmouth, to put to sea to molest us. A few light vessels are sufficient to convey intelligence of our movements, and, in an instant, without trouble and danger, they are ready to seize upon their prey.

If, on the contrary, our squadrons are daring enough to appear in the British Channel, which ought, in reality, to be called the French sea only, they are exposed to perpetual danger; their total destruction may be effected by the hurricanes or the enemy's superiority, because in both these cases there is no shelter for them. This is what happened at the famous battle of La Hogue, where Tourville might have been enabled to unite the glory of a skilful retreat with that of a hard-fought and so unequal a contest, had there been a port for him to take shelter in.

In that state of things, men of great sagacity and attached to the good of their country, prevailed upon government, by dint of projects and memorials, to seek, by the assistance of art, for those resources of which we had been deprived by nature; and after a great deal of hesitation,

Digitized by Google

the bay of Cherbourg was selected, and was to be suited to the design by the means of an immense dike, projecting into the sea. In that way, we were to acquire, even close to the enemy, an artificial road, whence our ships might be enabled, in all times and weather, to attack his, and where they might escape from their pursuit.

"It was," said the Emperor, "a magnificent "and glorious undertaking, very difficult with "respect to the execution and to the finances of "that period. The dike was to be formed by "immense cones constructed empty in the port "and towed afterwards to the spot, where they "were sunk by the weight of the stones with which "they were filled.* There certainly was great "ingenuity in the invention. Louis XVI. ho-"noured these operations with his presence. His "departure from Versailles was a great event. "In those times, a king never left his residence, "his excursions did not extend beyond the limits "of a hunting party; they did not hurry about "as at present, and I really believe, that I con-"tributed not a little to the rapidity of their "movements.

"However, as it was absolutely necessary, "that things should be impressed with the cha-"racter of the age, the eternal rivalry between "the land and sea, that question which can never

* The diameter of these cones, which were 60 feet high, was 104 feet at the base, and 60 at the top.

Digitized by Google

"be decided, continued to be carried on. It "might have been said in that respect, that there "were two kings in France, or that he, who "reigned, had two interests, and ought to have "two wills, which proved rather, that he had "none at all. Here the sea was the only subject "for consideration, yet the question was decided "in favour of the land, not by superiority of ar-"gument, but by priority of right. Where the "fate of the empire was at stake, a point of pre-"cedence was substituted, and thus the grand "object, the magnificent enterprize, failed of suc-"cess. The land-party established itself at the "isle Pelée and at fort Querqueville; it was em-"ployed there merely to lend an auxiliary hand "to the construction of the dike, which was itself "the chief object; but instead of that, it began by "establishing its own predominance, and after-"wards compelled the dike to become the instru-"ment of its convenience, and subservient to its "plans and discretion. What was the result? "The harbour, that was forming and which ought "to contain the mass of our navy, whether de-"signed to strike at the heart of the enemy's "power, or to take occasional shelter, could only "accommodate fifteen sail at most, while we "wanted anchorage for more than a hundred, "which might have been effected without more "labour and with little more expense, had the "works been carried more forward into the sea,

Digitized by Google

" merely beyond the limits, which the land-party
" had appropriated to itself.

" Another blunder highly characteristic and
" scarcely conceivable took place. All the prin-
" cipal measures for completing the harbour were
" fixed upon; the dike commenced; one of the
" channels, that to the eastward, finished, and
" the other to the westward was on the point of
" being formed, without an exact and precise
" knowledge of all the soundings. This over-
" sight was so great, that the channel already
" formed, that to the eastward, five hundred
" fathoms broad, having been extended too closely
" to the fort, did not, without inconvenience, ad-
" mit of vessels at low water, and that the other
" which was about to be constructed to the west-
" ward would have been impracticable, or at
" least very dangerous, but for the individual
" zeal of one officer (M. de Chavagnac), who
" made that important discovery in time, and
" caused the works on the left extremity of the
" dike to be stopped at the distance of twelve
" hundred fathoms from Querqueville fort, by
" which it was to be defended. This seems to
" me, and is, in fact, too great a distance.*

* It was not until 1789, five years after the commencement of these works, that orders were given by government for taking the soundings of the harbour and ascertaining the state of the bottom. Up to that time, the works had been carried on solely on vague and imperfect notions!! (Mémoire du Baron Cachin, inspecteur général des ponts et chaussées.)

Digitized by Google

"The system adopted in the works of the dike, "which is more than a league from the shore, "and more than 1900 fathoms long by 90 feet "broad, was also liable to numerous changes, "suggested, however, by experience. The cones, "which, according to the established principle, "ought to have touched each other in their bases, "were, in that respect, either separated by acci- "dent or with a view of economy. They were "damaged by storms, eaten by worms, or they "rotted with age. They were at length altoge- "ther neglected, with the exception of stones "thrown at random into the sea, and when it "was observed, that these were scattered by the "rolling of the waves, recourse was had to enor- "mous blocks, which finally answered every ex- "pectation.

"The works were continued, without interrup- "tion, under Louis XVI. An encreased degree "of activity was imparted to them by our legis- "lative assemblies; but in consequence of the "commotions, which soon followed, they were "completely abandoned, and at the time of the "Consulate, there was not a trace of that famous "dike to be seen. Every thing had been de- "stroyed for several feet under low water level, "by the original imperfection of the plan, by the "length of time and the violence of the waves.

"The moment, however, I took the helm of "affairs, one of my first employments was to

Digitized by Google

" turn my attention to so important a point. I " ordered commissions of inquiry, I had the sub- " ject discussed in my presence, I made myself " acquainted with the local circumstances, and " I decided, that the dike should be run up with " all possible means and expedition, and that " two solid fortifications should, in the course of " time, be constructed at the two extremities; " but that measures should be immediately taken " for the establishment of a considerable provi- " sional battery. I had then to encounter, on all " sides, the inconveniencies, the objections, the " particular views, the fondness which attaches " itself to individual opinions, &c. &c. Several " maintained, that the thing certainly could not " be done; I continued steady, I insisted, I " commanded, and the thing was done. In less " than two years, a real island was seen to rise, " as it were by magic, from the sea, on which " was erected a battery of large calibre. Until " that moment, our labours had almost constantly " been the sport of the English; they had, they " said, been convinced from their origin, that " they would prove fruitless; they had foretold; " that the cones would destroy themselves, that " the small stones would be swept away by the " waves, and above all, they relied upon our " lassitude and our inconstancy. But here things " were completely altered, and they made a shew " of molesting our operations; they were, how-

Digitized by Google

"ever, too late; I was already prepared for "them. The western channel naturally conti- "nued very wide, and the two extreme fortifica- "tions, which defended, each its peculiar passage, "being incapable of maintaining a cross-fire, it "was probable, that an enterprising enemy might "be enabled to force the western channel, come "himself to an anchor within the dike, and there "renew the defeat of Aboukir. But I had al- "ready guarded against this with my central "provisional battery. However, as I am for per- "manent establishments, I ordered within the "dike, in the centre, by way of support, and "which in its turn might serve as an envelope, "an enormous elliptical pie to be constructed, "commanding the central battery, and mounted "itself in two casemated tiers, bomb proof, with "50 pieces of large calibre and 20 mortars of an "extensive range, as well as barracks, powder- "magazine, cistern, &c. &c.

"I have the satisfaction of having left this noble "work in a finished state.

"Having provided for the defensive, my only "business was to prepare offensive measures, "which consisted in the means of collecting the "mass of our fleets at Cherbourg. The harbour, "however, could contain but fifteen sail. For "the purpose of increasing the number, I caused "a new port to be dug; the Romans never un- "dertook a more important, a more difficult task,

Digitized by Google

" or one which promised a more lasting dura-
" tion! It was sunk into the granite to the depth
" of 50 feet, and I caused the opening of it to be
" celebrated by the presence of Maria Louisa,
" while I myself was on the fields of battle in
" Saxony. By this means I procured anchorage
" for 25 sail more. Still that number was not
" sufficient, and I therefore relied upon very dif-
" ferent means of augmenting my naval strength.
" I was resolved to renew the wonders of Egypt
" at Cherbourg. I had already erected my py-
" ramid in the sea; I would have also had my
" lake Mœris. My great object was to be enabled
" to concentrate all our maritime force, and in
" time, it would have been immense and ade-
" quate to strike a fatal blow against the enemy.
" I was preparing my scene of action in such a
" way, that the two nations, in their totality,
" might have been enabled to grapple with each
" other, man to man, and the issue could not be
" doubtful, for we would have been more than
" 40 millions of French against 15 millions of
" English. I should have wound up the war,
" with a battle of Actium, and afterwards what
" did I want of England? Her destruction? Cer-
" tainly not. I merely wanted the end of an
" intolerable usurpation, the enjoyment of impre-
" scriptible and sacred rights, the deliverance,
" the liberty of the seas, the independence, the
" honour of flags. I was speaking in the name

Digitized by Google

" of all and for all, and I should have succeeded " by concession or by force. I had, on my side, " power, indisputable right, the wishes of na- " tions," &c. &c.

I have reasons for believing, that the Emperor, disgusted with the losses, occasioned by partial attempts at sea, and enlightened by fatal experience, had adopted a new system of maritime war.

The war between England and France had insensibly assumed the aspect of a real struggle for life or death. The irritation of all the English against Napoleon was raised to the highest degree. His Berlin and Milan decrees, his continental system and offensive expressions had shocked all minds on the other side of the channel, while the ministers, by their libels, fabrications, and all imaginable means, had succeeded in exciting every passion to render the quarrel altogether national. On this ground, it was declared in full parliament, that the war was *perpetual* or at least for *life*. The Emperor thought it his duty to shape his plans in conformity to that state of things, and from that instant, as much from calculation as from necessity, he gave up all kind of cruizing, distant enterprizes, and hazardous attempts. He determined upon a strict defensive system, until his continental affairs should be finally settled, and the accumulation of his maritime force should allow him to strike, with

Digitized by Google

certainty, at a later period. He, therefore, retained the whole of his shipping in port, and confined himself to the gradual augmentation of our naval resources, without exposing them to any further risk. Every thing was calculated on the basis of a remote result.

Our navy had lost a great number of vessels, the greatest part of our good seamen were prisoners in England, and all our ports were blockaded by the English, who straitened their communications. The Emperor ordered canals to be constructed in Britanny, by the means of which and in spite of the enemy, points of communication for providing Brest with all kinds of supplies were established between Bordeaux, Rochefort, Nantes, Holland, Antwerp, Cherbourg, and that port. He was desirous of having wet docks at Flushing or in its neighbourhood, for the purpose of containing the Antwerp squadron, completely equipped and ready to put to sea in four-and-twenty hours, which was necessarily confined in the Scheldt, four or five months of the year. Finally, he projected near Boulogne, or on some spot along that coast, the construction of a dike similar to that of Cherbourg, and a harbour between Cherbourg and Brest, suitable to the Ile-à-Bois. All this was planned, for the purpose of securing, at all times and without danger, a full and free communication to our ships from Antwerp as far as Brest. To obviate the want of seamen, and the great dif-

Digitized by Google

ficulty of forming them, it was ordered, that the young conscripts should be, every day, trained in all our ports. They were, at first, to be put on board of small light vessels, and a flotilla of that kind was even to navigate the Zuiderzee; they were afterwards to be turned over to large ships and immediately replaced by others of the same class. The vessels were ordered to get under sail every day, to go through every possible manœuvre and evolution, and even to exchange shots with the enemy, without exposing themselves to the chance of an engagement.

The last point was the force and number of our vessels; they were considerable notwithstanding all our losses, and the Emperor calculated on being enabled to build 20 or 25 yearly. The crews would be ready as fast as they were wanted, and thus, at the expiration of four or six years, he could have relied upon having 200 sail of the line, and perhaps 300, had that number been necessary, in less than 10 years. And what was that period of time with regard to the perpetual or the war for life, which was declared against us? The affairs of the continent would, in the mean time, be brought to a termination; the whole of it would have embraced our system; the Emperor would have marched back the greatest part of his troops to our coast, and it was in that situation, that he looked, with confidence to, a decisive issue of the contest. All the respective

Digitized by Google

resources of the two nations would have been called into action, and we should then, in his opinion, subdue our enemies by moral energy, or strangle them by our natural strength.

The Emperor entertained several projects for the improvement of the navy, and adapted to that end part of his military tactics. He intended to establish his offensive and defensive line from Cape Finisterre to the mouths of the Elbe. He was to have had three squadrons with admirals commanding in chief, as he had corps d'armée with their generals in chief. The admiral of the centre was to establish his head quarters at Cherbourg; of the left at Brest, and of the right at Antwerp. Smaller divisions were to be stationed at the extremities, at Rochefort, and at Ferrol, in the Texel, and at the mouths of the Elbe, for the purpose of turning and outflanking the enemy. All these points were to be connected by numerous intermediate stations, and their respective commanders in chief were to be considered as constantly present, by the assistance of telegraphs, which lining the coast, preserved an uninterrupted communication between the parts of the grand system.

Let us consider, however, what would have been the conduct of the English during our preparations and the progressive increase of our naval power? Would they have continued the blockade of our ports? We should have had the

Digitized by Google

satisfaction of witnessing the wear and tear of their cruising squadrons; we should have compelled them to maintain 100 or 150 vessels constantly exposed on our coasts to the violence of tempests, to the danger of rocks, to all the hazards of disaster, while we, on the contrary, had every chance of success, should any unforeseen catastrophe present itself from natural events, or the faults of their admirals, which could not fail to happen in the course of time. What advantages should we not have derived from the event? We, fresh and in excellent condition; we, who waited for the opportunity, always ready to set sail and engage! Should the English be tired out? Our vessels would immediately put to sea for the purpose of exercising and training their crews.

On the completion of our armaments and at the approach of the decisive moment, were the English, frightened for the safety of their island, to collect their strength in front of their principal arsenals, Plymouth, Portsmouth, and the Thames, our three divisions of Brest, Cherbourg, and Antwerp, would attack them, and our wings would turn then on the side of Ireland and Scotland. Were they, relying upon their skill and bravery, resolved to oppose us in one great body, then the struggle would be reduced to a decisive issue, of which we should have been at liberty to choose the *time*, the *place*, and the *opportunity*;—and this is what the Emperor called the battle of Actium,

Digitized by Google

in which, if we were defeated, we experienced but simple losses, while, if we proved victorious, the enemy ceased to exist. But our triumph, he maintained, was certain, for the two nations would have to contend man to man, and we were upwards of forty millions against fifteen. This was the favourite position on which he uniformly dwelt. Such was one of his grand ideas, his gigantic conceptions.

Napoleon has been the founder of so many establishments, that his works and monuments are injurious to each other by their number, variety, and importance. It was my earnest wish to have given a full relation of his works, which were executed at Cherbourg, as well as of those which he had projected. A person precisely of the profession, best qualified to appreciate the subject, and one of its brightest ornaments, has promised me a description of them. Should he keep his word, it will be found in the following volume.

Long Audience given to the Governor.—Remote Conversation.

16th.—About nine o'clock, the Emperor took an airing in the calash. There was a vessel in sight, at which he looked through the glass. He invited the Doctor, whom he found employed in the same way, to accompany him. On our return, we breakfasted under the trees. He conversed at great

Digitized by Google

length with the Doctor respecting the Governor's conduct to us, his endless vexations, &c. &c.

About two o'clock, a message was brought to the Emperor to ascertain, whether he was willing to receive the Governor. He gave him an audience that lasted nearly two hours, and ran over, without falling into a passion, he said, all the objects under discussion. He recapitulated all our grievances; enumerated all his wrongs; addressed himself, he observed, by turns to his understanding, his imagination, his feelings, and his heart. He put it in his power to repair all the mischief he had done, to recommence upon a plan altogether new, but in vain, for that man, he declared, was without fibres; nothing was to be expected from him.

This Governor, said the Emperor, had assured him, that when the detention of M. de Montholon's servant took place, he did not know he was in our service, and he added, that he had not read Madame Bertrand's sealed letter. The Emperor observed to him, that his letter to Count Bertrand was altogether repugnant to our manners and in direct opposition to our prepossessions; that if he, the Emperor, were but a simple general and private individual, and had received such a letter from him, the Governor, he would have called him out; that a man so well known and respected in Europe, as the Grand Marshal, was not to be insulted, under the penalty of social reprobation;

Digitized by Google

that he did not take a correct view of his situation with regard to us; that all his actions here came within the province of history, and that even the conversation which passed at that moment belonged to history; that he injured every day by his conduct, his own government and his own nation, and that in time he might feel the consequences of it; that his government would disclaim his conduct in the end, and that a stain would attach itself to his name, which would disgrace his children. "Will you allow me," said the Emperor, "to tell you what we think of you? "We think you capable of every thing; *yes, of* "*every thing;* and while you retain your hatred, "we shall retain our opinion. I shall still wait "for some time, because I like to act upon cer- "tainties; and I shall then have to complain, not "that the worst proceeding of ministers was to "send me to St. Helena, but that they gave you "the command of it. You are a greater calamity "to us than all the wretchedness of this horrible "rock."

The Governor's answer to all this was, that he was about to transmit an account of it to his government; that he learned at least something from the Emperor, but that he received only provoking treatment from us, and that we made matters worse.

With respect to the commissioners of the powers, whom the Governor wished to present, the

Digitized by Google

Emperor rejected them in their political capacity, but assured the Governor, that he would readily receive them as private individuals; that he had no dislike to any one of them, not even to the French commissioner, M. de Montchenu, who might be a very worthy man, who had been his subject ten years, and having been an emigrant, was probably indebted to him, the Emperor, for the happiness of returning to France; that, besides, after all, he was a Frenchman; that that title was indelible in his eyes, that there was no opinion which could destroy it in his estimation, &c. &c.

With regard to the new buildings at Longwood which were the great object of the Governor's visit, the Emperor replied to his communication on that topic, that he did not wish for them; that he preferred his present inconvenient residence to a better one situated at a great distance, and at the expense of a great deal of noise and the trouble of moving; that the buildings which he had just mentioned to him required years to be completed, and that before that time, either we should not be worth the cost incurred for us, or providence would have delivered him from us, &c. &c.

On the beautiful Women of Italy.—Madame Grassini—Madame V. . . . and Berthier.

17th.—The Emperor sent for me about two o'clock; he dressed himself and went out in

Digitized by Google

the calash. Madame de Montholon was one of the party. It was her first appearance since her accouchement. The conversation turned particularly on the Italian ladies, their character and beauty.

The young General, who effected the conquest of Italy, excited in that country, from the first moment, every feeling of enthusiasm and ambition. The Emperor was delighted in acknowledging and telling it. Above all, there was not a beauty, who did not aspire to please and touch his heart, but in vain. His mind, he said, was too strong to be caught in the snare; the precipice, concealed under the flowers, was present to his view. His situation was singularly delicate; he had the command of veteran generals; the task he had to execute, he observed, was immense, all his motions were watched by jealous eyes; his circumspection was extreme. His fortune consisted in his prudence; he might have forgotten himself for a single hour, and how many of his victories, said he, had been connected with a point of no superior importance!

Several years afterwards, at the time of his coronation at Milan, his attention was attracted by *Grassini*, the celebrated singer. Circumstances were then more auspicious. He desired to see her, and immediately after her introduction, she put him in mind, that she had made her début precisely during the early achievements of the

Digitized by Google

General of the army of Italy. . " I was then," said she, " in the full lustre of my beauty and " my talent. My performance in the Virgins of " the Sun was the topic of universal conversation. " I fascinated every eye and inflamed every heart. " The young General alone was insensible to my " charms, and yet he was the only object of my " wishes! What caprice, what singularity! When " I possessed some value, when all Italy was at " my feet, and I heroically disdained its admira- " tion for a single glance from you; I was un- " able to obtain it, and now, how strange an " alteration, you condescend to notice me—now, " when I am not worth the trouble and am no " longer worthy of you!"

The celebrated Madame V..... was also among the crowd of Armidas; but tired with losing her time, she lowered her pretensions to Berthier, who, from the first instant, lived but for her. The Commander-in-Chief made him a present one day of a magnificent diamond worth more than 100,000 francs. " Here," said he, " take that; we often play high, lay it up against " a rainy day." — Four-and-twenty hours had scarcely elapsed, when Madame Buonaparte came to tell her husband of a diamond which was the subject of her admiration. It was the present that was to have been laid up against a rainy day, which had already found its way from Berthier's hand

Digitized by Google

to Madame V. . . . .'s head. He has since, in all the circumstances of his life, been uniformly governed by her.

The Emperor, having gradually heaped riches and honours upon Berthier, pressed him often to marry, but he as constantly refused, declaring, that Madame V. . . . . could alone make him happy. The son, however, of Madame V. . . . . having got acquainted with a duchess of Bavaria, who had come to Paris, with the hope of obtaining a husband, through the Emperor's favour, Madame V. . . . . thought she was doing wonders and advancing her son's fortune by the marriage of her lover, and, with this impression, she prevailed upon Berthier to espouse the Bavarian princess. But, said the Emperor, there is no project, however excellent, which does not become the sport of fortune; for scarcely was the marriage concluded, when Madame V. . . . . .'s husband died and left his wife at liberty. That event proved to her and to Berthier the source of real despair; they were inconsolable. Berthier came with tears in his eyes to communicate his wretched fate to the Emperor, who laughed at his misfortune. To what a miserable condition, he exclaimed, was he reduced; with a little more constancy, Madame V. . . . . might have been his wife! &c. &c.

Digitized by Google

Faubourg Saint Germain.—Aristocracy; Democracy.—The Emperor's intention to marry a French Woman.

18th.—About four o'clock, I was sent for by the Emperor, who was in a very weak state. He had by an absence of mind remained three hours in a very hot bath and burnt his right thigh with the boiling water. He had read two volumes in the bath. He shaved, but would not dress himself.

At half-past seven, the Emperor ordered two covers to be laid in his cabinet, and was very much out of temper, because his papers were thrown into confusion by using the table on which they lay. They were replaced by his direction, and the covers laid upon another small table.

We conversed for a long time; he brought me back to topics, which often suggested themselves to him when we were together, and upon which I must endeavour not to be guilty of repetitions, the more so, as they possess attractions, which to me are peculiarly interesting. We talked a great deal about our youthful years and the time we passed at the military school. This subject led him again to notice the new schools he had established at Saint Cyr and at Saint Germain, and he finally recurred to the emigrants and those he called *nos encroûtés*. He became gay and lively in consequence of some anecdotes of the Faubourg Saint Germain, respecting his person,

Digitized by Google

which I related, and as the slightest things grew into importance, the moment he touched upon them, he said—" I see plainly that my plan with " respect to your Faubourg Saint Germain was " ill managed. I did too much or too little. I " did enough to dissatisfy the opposite party, " and not enough to connect the other with me " altogether. Although some of them were fond " of money, the multitude would have been con- " tent with the rattles and sound, with which I " could have crammed them, without any injury, " in the main, to our new principles. My dear " Las Cases, I did too much and not enough, and " yet I was earnestly occupied with the business. " Unfortunately, I was the only one seriously en- " gaged in the undertaking. All who were about " me thwarted, instead of promoting it, and yet " there were but two grand measures to be taken " with regard to you;—that of annihilating, or " that of melting you down in the great mass of " society. The former could not enter my head, " and the latter was not an easy task, but I did " not consider it beyond my strength. And, in " fact, although I had no support, and was even " counteracted in my views, I nearly realized " them at length. Had I remained, the thing " would have been accomplished. This will ap- " pear astonishing to him, who knows how to " appreciate the heart of man and the state of " society. I do not think that history can fur-

Digitized by Google

" nish any case of a similar kind, or that so im-
" portant a result, obtained in so short a space
" of time, can be found. I should have carried
" that fusion into effect, and cemented that union
" by every sacrifice; it would have rendered us
" invincible. The opposite conduct has ruined
" us, and may for a long time protract the mis-
" fortunes, perhaps the last gasps, of unhappy
" France. I once more repeat, that I did too
" much or too little. I ought to have attached
" the emigrants to me upon their return; I might
" have easily become an object of adoration with
" the aristocracy. An establishment of that na-
" ture was necessary for me. It is the real, the
" only support of monarchy—its guide—its lever
" —its point of resistance. Without it, the
" state is but a vessel without a rudder, a real
" balloon in the air. But, the essence of aristo-
" cracy, its talismanic charm, consists in anti-
" quity, in age; and these were the only things
" I could not create. The intermediate means
" were wanting. M. de *Breteuil*, who had insinu-
" ated himself into my favour, encouraged me.
" On the contrary, M. de T....., who cer-
" tainly was not a favourite with the emigrants,
" discouraged me by every possible means. Rea-
" sonable democracy contents itself with hus-
" banding equality for all, as a fair ground of pre-
" tension and possession. The real line of conduct
" would have been to employ the remains of aris-
" tocracy, together with the forms and design of

Digitized by Google

" democracy. Above all, it was necessary to " collect the ancient names; those celebrated in " our history. This is the only mode of giving " an instantaneous air of old age to the most mo- " dern institutions.

" I entertained, upon that subject, ideas which " were altogether peculiar to myself. Had any " difficulties been started by Austria and Russia, " I would have married a French woman, I would " have selected one of the most illustrious names " of the monarchy. That was even my original " thought, my real inclination. My ministers " were unable to prevent me, but by their earn- " est appeals to political views. Had I been sur- " rounded by the Montmorencies, the Nesles, " and the Clissons, I should, by adopting their " daughters, have united them with foreign sove- " reigns. My pride and my delight would have " been to extend these noble French stocks, had " they taken part with, or given themselves up to " us altogether. They and those belonging to " me thought, that I was influenced by prejudice " alone, when I was acting in conformity with " the most profound combinations. Be that as " it will, your friends have lost more in me than " they are aware of!..... They are destitute " of soul, of the feeling of true glory. By what " unhappy propensity have they preferred wal- " lowing in the mire of the allies to the noble task " of following me to the top of mount Simplon, " and commanding, from its summit, the respect

Digitized by Google

" and admiration of the rest of Europe. Senseless men!—I had, however," he continued, "a project in my port-folio; time alone was wanting to mature it, which would have rallied round me a great number of that description of persons, and which, after all, would have been but just. It was, that every descendant of ancient marshals, or ministers, &c. &c. should be considered at all times capable of getting himself declared a duke, by presenting the requisite endowment. All the sons of generals and governors of provinces were, upon the same principle, to be qualified to assume the title of count, and so on in gradation. This would have advanced some, raised the hopes of others, excited the emulation of all, and hurt the pride of none; grand, but altogether harmless rattles, and belonging, besides, to my system and my combinations.

" Old and corrupt are not governed like ancient and virtuous nations. For one individual, at present, who would sacrifice himself for the public good, there are thousands and millions who are insensible to every thing but their own interests, enjoyments, and vanity. To pretend, therefore, to regenerate a people in an instant, or as if one were travelling post, would be an act of madness. The genius of the workman ought to consist in knowing how to employ the materials he has at hand, and that is one of the

Digitized by Google

" causes of the resumption of all the monarchical
" forms, of the re-establishment of titles, of
" classes, and of the insignia of orders. The
" secret of the legislator should consist in know-
" ing how to derive advantage even from the ca-
" price and irregularities of those whom he pre-
" tends to rule; and after every consideration, all
" these gewgaws were attended with few incon-
" veniencies and not destitute of some benefit.
" At the point of civilization, to which we have
" now attained, they are calculated to attract the
" respect of the multitude, provided always, that
" the person decorated with them, preserves re-
" spect for himself. They may satisfy the vanity
" of the weak, without scaring, in the slightest
" degree, strong and powerful minds," &c. &c.—
It was very late, and the Emperor said, at part-
ing, " there is another pleasant evening spent."

N. B. How many conversations of this kind have I not lost from the want of elucidation, since I first noted them down! For there was not one, however different the subject, that was not occasionally characterized by very extraordinary expressions and sallies. The reader will, perhaps, be gratified with my narrative; for myself, I feel, I think only of what I have lost! When I made a careless entry of some lines in my journal, my mind was full of the entire object, which, according to my design, was to be explained and displayed a short time afterwards, and, besides, I

Digitized by Google

was close to the source, from which I expected fresh supplies the following day. At present, every thing is obliterated by time, vexation, and affliction; a single day does not, however, pass by, in which some scattered fragments, some ideas, some sentences, some isolated expressions, do not recur to my memory; but where are they to be placed? How are they to be suitably introduced? That is a difficulty which, however easy and agreeable in appearance, is beyond my faculties, and to which my state of health is inadequate.

Our Establishment on fire.—Etiquette at Longwood.

19th.—The chimney of the saloon took fire in the night, but the flames did not break out until day-light. Two hours sooner, and the building would have been a heap of ashes.

The Emperor took a walk; he was attended by several of us, and we went round the park on foot.

One of his shoe-buckles fell out, and we all eagerly strove to put it in again; he, who succeeded, considered himself the most fortunate. The Emperor, who would not have allowed us to behave so at the Tuileries, seemed here to feel a kind of satisfaction at our conduct; he let us do as we liked, and we were thankful to him for indulging us in an action, that did honour to us, in our own opinion.

Digitized by Google

This leads me to observe, that I have not yet spoken of our customary manners near his person, and I am more peculiarly induced to notice them, because we have received several London newspapers, which circulate, in this respect, a thousand idle stories, and assert, that the imperial etiquette was as strictly maintained at Longwood as at the Tuileries.

The Emperor behaved to us in the kindest manner, and with a paternal familiarity. We were, on our part, the most attentive and respectful of courtiers. We uniformly endeavoured to anticipate his wishes; we carefully watched all his wants, and he had scarcely time to make a sign with his hand, before we were in motion.

None of us entered his apartment without being sent for, and if any thing of importance was to be communicated to him, he was previously made acquainted with it. If he walked separately with any of us, no other presumed to intrude. In the begining, we constantly remained uncovered near his person, which appeared strange to the English, who had been ordered to put on their hats, after the first salute. This contrast appeared so ridiculous to the Emperor, that he commanded us, once for all, to behave like them. Nobody, except the two ladies, took a seat in his presence, unless desired to do so. He was never spoken to but at his own peculiar instance, and when the conversation became general, which was, always

Digitized by Google

and in all cases, under his control and guidance. Such was the etiquette of Longwood, which entirely was, as it must be evident, that of our recollections and feelings.

On our return the Emperor received and questioned, for a long time, the master of the Newcastle.

In consequence of the fire in the saloon and the laying down of a billiard table in the dining-room, we adjourned to the topographical cabinet. After dinner, there being no other apartment to retire to, we were obliged to remain a long time at table. That circumstance seemed, however, to give an additional interest to the conversation; we became more acquainted, more united with each other; we gave a greater scope to our language, and the evening passed off more rapidly.

Establishments for Mendicity in France.—Napoleon's projects on Illyria.—Hospitals.—The Foundling.—Prisoners of State.—Ideas of the Emperor.

20th.—The Emperor sent for me in the morning; I found him reading an English work on the poor's rate, the immense sums raised, and the vast number of individuals maintained at the expense of their parishes; the account embraced millions of men and hundreds of millions of money.*

* See the first part, note, page 381.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor was apprehensive that he had not read the work correctly, or that he had mistaken the sense. The thing, he said, seemed altogether impossible. He could not conceive by what vices and defects so many poor could be found in a country so opulent, so industrious, and so abundant in resources for labour as England. He was still less capable of comprehending, by what prodigy, the proprietors, overloaded with a horrible ordinary and extraordinary taxation, were also enabled to provide for the wants of such a multitude. "But we have nothing," he observed, "in France to be compared to it in the proportion of a hundredth or a thousandth degree. "Have you not told me, that I sent you into the "departments on a particular mission with regard to mendicity? Let us see, what is the "number of our beggars? What did they cost? "How many poor-houses did I establish? What "was the number they held? What effect had "they in removing mendicity?"

To this crowd of questions I was compelled to answer, that a considerable period of time had since elapsed, that my mind had been occupied with several other objects, and that it was impossible for me to enter into correct statements from mere recollection; but that I had the official report itself among the few papers I had preserved, and that the first time he might be pleased to send for me, I should be enabled to satisfy him.

Digitized by Google

"But," said he, "go instantly and look for it, "things are not profitable unless seasonably ap- "plied, and I shall soon run it over *with my* "*thumb*, as Abbé de Pradt ingeniously said; al- "though, to deal candidly with you, I am not "at present over desirous to give up my atten- "tion to such objects; they put me in mind of "mustard after dinner."

In two minutes the report was in his hand. "Well!" said the Emperor to me, also, in a very few minutes, for it might be really said that he had not turned over the leaves; "well, this, in "fact, has no resemblance whatever to England. "Our organization, however, had failed; I sus- "pected as much, and it was on that account I "intrusted you with the mission. Your report "would have been in perfect conformity with my "views. You took up the consideration ingenu- "ously and like an honest man, without the fear "of exciting the displeasure of the minister, by "depriving him of a great many appointments.

"I am pleased with a great number of your "details. Why did you not come and converse "with me about them yourself? You would have "satisfied me, and I should have known how to "value your services."—"Sire, as things were "then situated, it would have been impossible "for me; we were then involved in the confusion "and embarrassment caused by our misfortunes." "—Your observation is perfectly correct; you

Digitized by Google

" establish an unquestionable position. The fact " is, that in the flourishing state to which I had " raised the empire, no hands could any where " be found destitute of employment. It was " laziness and vice alone that could produce " mendicants.

" You think that their complete annihilation " was possible; and, for my part, I am of the " same opinion.

" Your levy, in mass, of a vast and single prison " in each department, was equally adapted to the " tranquillity of society, and the well-being of " those confined in it;—your idea of construct- " ing monuments to last for centuries would have " attracted my attention. That gigantic under- " taking, its utility, its importance, the perma- " nence of its results, all these points belonged to " my system.

" With respect to your university for the peo- " ple, I am very apprehensive, that it would have " been but a beautiful chimera of philanthropy, " worthy of the unsophisticated Abbé de Saint " Pierre. There is, however, some merit in the " aggregate of those conceptions; but an energy " of character, and an unbending perseverance, " for which we are not generally distinguished, " would be requisite to produce any good result.

" As for the rest, I every day collect ideas " from you in this place, of which I did not ima- " gine you capable; but it was not at all my

Digitized by Google

"fault. You were near me; why did you not "open your mind to me? I did not possess the "gift of divination. Had you been minister, "those ideas, however fantastical they might at "first have appeared to me, would not have been "the less attended to, because, there is, in my "opinion, no conception altogether unsusceptible "of some positive good, and a wrong notion, "when properly controlled and regulated, often "leads to a right conclusion. I should have "handed you over to commissioners, who would "have analyzed your plans; you would have de-"fended them by your arguments, and after a "thorough knowledge of the subject, I alone "should have finally decided according to my "own judgment. Such was my way of acting "and my intention. I gave an impulse to in-"dustry; I put it into a state of complete acti-"vity throughout Europe; I was desirous of "doing as much for all the faculties of the mind, "but time was not allowed me. I could not "bring my plans to maturity in full gallop; and, "unfortunately, I but too often wasted them "upon a sandy foundation, and consigned them "to unproductive hands.

"What were the other missions with which I "entrusted to you?"—"One in Holland, another "in Illyria."—"Have you got the reports?"—"Yes, Sire."—"Go for them." But I had not got to the door, when he said, "Never mind,

Digitized by Google

"come back, spare me the trouble of reading "such matters!—They are henceforth, in reality, "altogether useless."—What discoveries did not these words enable me to make!*

The Emperor resumed the subject of Illyria.—"In obtaining possession of Illyria, it was never "my intention to retain it; I never entertained "the idea of destroying Austria. Her existence, "was, on the contrary, indispensably requisite "for the execution of my plans. But Illyria was, "in our hands, a van-guard to the heart of Au-"stria, calculated to keep a check upon her; a "sentinel at the gates of Vienna to keep her "steady to our interests. Besides, I was desir-"ous of introducing and establishing in that "country our doctrines, our system of govern-"ment, and our codes. It was an additional "step to the regeneration of Europe. I had "merely taken it as a pledge, and intended, at a "later period, to exchange it for Gallicia, at the "restoration of Poland, which I hurried on "against my own opinion. I had, however, "more than one project with regard to Illyria; "for I frequently fluctuated in my designs, and

* However short the report on mendicity may be—however necessary for more distinctly understanding the Emperor's observations, and although not destitute of interest for those who are fond of the study of philanthropic economy, I have declined the insertion of it here, out of deference to the greater number of my readers.

Digitized by Google

" had few ideas that were fixed on solid grounds.
" This arose rather from adapting myself to cir-
" cumstances than from giving an impulse and
" direction to them, and I was every instant com-
" pelled to shift about. The consequence was,
" that, for the greater part of the time, I came to
" no absolute decision, and was occupied merely
" with projects. My predominant idea, how-
" ever, particularly after my marriage, was to
" give it up to Austria as an indemnity for Gal-
" licia, on the re-establishment of Poland, with
" all its consequences, as a separate and inde-
" pendent kingdom. Not that I cared upon
" whose head, whether on that of a friend, an
" enemy, or an ally, the crown was placed, pro-
" vided the thing was effected. The results were
" indifferent to me. I have, my dear Las Cases,
" formed vast and numerous projects, all unques-
" tionably for the advancement of reason and the
" welfare of the human race. I was dreaded as
" a thunderbolt; I was charged with having a
" hand of iron; but the moment that hand had
" struck the last blow, every thing would have
" been softened down for the happiness of all.
" How many millions would have poured their
" benedictions on me, both then and in future
" times! But how numerous, it must be confess-
" ed, the fatal misfortunes which were accumu-
" lated and combined to effect my overthrow,
" at the end of my career! My unhappy mar-

Digitized by Google

" riage; the perfidies which resulted from it; that " villainous affair of Spain, from which I could " not disengage myself; that fatal war with Rus- " sia, which occurred through a misunderstand- " ing; that horrible rigour of the elements, which " devoured a whole army; ..... and then, the " whole universe against me! .... Is it not won- " derful, that I was still able to make so long a " resistance, and that I was more than once on " the point of surmounting every danger and " emerging from that chaos more powerful than " ever? ..... O! destiny of man!—What is hu- " man wisdom, human foresight!"—And then abruptly adverting to my report, he said, " I " observed, that you travelled over a great num- " ber of departments. Did your mission last " long? Was your journey agreeable? Was it " of real benefit to you? Did you collect much " information? Were you enabled to form a cor- " rect judgment on the state of the country, on " that of public opinion? &c. &c.

" I now recollect, that I selected you precisely, " because you had just returned from your mis- " sion to Illyria, and I found in your report seve- " ral things, which made a strong impression " upon me; for it is surprising, how many circum- " stances at present are every day brought back " to my memory, which, at the time, struck me " with respect for you, and which, by a singular fa- " tality, were immediately afterwards completely

Digitized by Google

" forgotten. When any appointments were about " to take place to those special and confidential " missions, the decree, with blanks for the names, " was laid before me, and I filled them up with " persons of my own selection—I must have " written your name with my own hand."

" Sire," I replied, " there never was, perhaps, " a mission more agreeable and satisfactory in " every point of view. I commenced it early in " the spring, and proceeded from Paris to Tou- " lon, and from Toulon to Antibes, following the " line of coast and occasionally diverging into the " interior. I travelled nearly thirteen hundred " leagues, but unfortunately the time was short. " The minister, in his instructions, had strictly " limited the period to three, or at most, to four " months. It would be difficult for me to give " an adequate description of all the delight, en- " joyments, and advantages which I derived from " the journey. I was a member of your council, " an officer of your household. I was every " where considered as one of your *missi dominici*, " and was received with suitable respect. The " more I behaved with discretion, moderation, " and simplicity, visiting myself the high func- " tionaries, whose attendance I was authorized " to require, the more I was treated with defer- " ence and complaisance. For one, who shewed " any distrust, or betrayed any symptom of ill- " humour or envy; for I afterwards learnt from

Digitized by Google

" themselves, that my character, as a nobleman,
" emigrant, and chamberlain, formed three cer-
" tain grounds for reprobation; for one, I repeat,
" who looked upon me with a jealous eye, I found
" many others whose communications were alto-
" gether unreserved, even upon objects, respect-
" ing which I should not have presumed to make an
" inquiry. They assured me, that they took plea-
" sure in unbosoming themselves to me with per-
" fect openness, that they viewed my situation,
" near the person of the sovereign, as a favourable
" medium, and considered me as the confessor
" upon whom they relied for transmitting their
" most secret thoughts to the *Most High*, &c. &c.
" The more I endeavoured to convince them, that
" they were mistaken with regard to my situa-
" tion and the nature of my mission, the more
" they were confirmed in the contrary opinion.
" In so short a period, what a lesson for me
" on mankind! There were none of these high
" functionaries who did not differ from each other
" with regard to the views, means, and designs of
" all the objects under consideration; and yet
" they were all men, selected with care, of tried
" ability, and generally possessed of a great deal
" of merit. Persons in private life, also, looked
" up to me as to a ray of providence, and applied
" to me either publicly or in secret. How many
" things did I not learn? How numerous the de-
" nunciations and accusations, communicated to

Digitized by Google

" me! What a multitude of local abuses, of petty
" intrigues disclosed to me!

" Altogether unacquainted with affairs, and
" until then absolutely ignorant of official pro-
" ceedings, I made use of that peculiar opportu-
" nity to obtain information. I did not fail to
" make myself acquainted with all the objects
" and particular circumstances of every party.
" I was not apprehensive of shewing my igno-
" rance to the first who presented themselves,
" for I was thus enabled to qualify myself for dis-
" cussing business with the others.

" It is true, Sire, that my special mission was
" restricted to the mendicity establishments and
" the houses of correction; but feeling, as I did,
" all the want of a stock of knowledge, fit to ren-
" der myself useful to the council of state, and
" taking advantage of my appointment, I con-
" nected with it, of my own accord, the minute
" inspection of prisons, hospitals, and beneficent
" institutions, and I also took a survey of all our
" ports and squadrons.

" How magnificent the combination which thus
" presented itself to my view! I every where be-
" held the most perfect tranquillity and complete
" confidence in the government; every hand,
" every faculty, every branch of industry was
" employed; the soil was embellished by the
" flourishing state of agriculture, it was the finest
" time of the year; the roads were excellent;

Digitized by Google

" public works were carried on almost in every " quarter;—the canal of Arles, the noble bridge " of Bordeaux, the works of Rochefort, the ca- " nals from Nantes to Brest, to Rennes, to Saint " Malo; the foundation of Napoleon town, in- " tended to be the key of the whole peninsula of " Britanny; the magnificent works of Cherbourg, " those of Antwerp, sluices, moles, or other im- " provements in most of the towns of the channel. " Such is the sketch of what I saw.

" On another side, the ports of Toulon, Roche- " fort, L'Orient, Brest, Saint Malo, Havre, and " Antwerp, displayed an extraordinary degree " of activity; our roads were filled with ves- " sels, and the numbers increased daily; our " crews were training in spite of every obstacle, " and our young conscripts were becoming good " seamen, fit for future service. I, who belonged " to the old naval establishment, was astonished " at every thing I saw on board, so very great " were the improvements made in the art, and so " far did they exceed, in every point of view, all " that I had witnessed.

" The squadrons belonging to the different " ports got under sail every day, and executed " their regular manœuvres like the parades of " garrisons, and all this took place within sight " of the English, who thought it a ridiculous " farce, without foreseeing the danger with which " they were threatened; for, never at any period,

Digitized by Google

" was our navy more formidable, nor our ships " more numerous. We already had upwards " of 100 afloat or on the stocks, and we made " daily additions to the number. The officers " were excellent, and animated with zeal and " ardour. I had no idea whatever of the forward " state of our preparations, before I witnessed it " in person, and should not have believed it, were " I not confidently assured of the fact.

" With respect to the mendicity establish- " ments, the special object of my mission, your " intentions, Sire, had been ill understood, and " the plan was altogether unsuccessful. In most " of the departments, mendicity not only re- " mained with all its defects, but no steps what- " ever had been taken for its annihilation. The " fact was, that several prefects, far from mak- " ing the establishments a terror to the *mendi-* " *cants*, had merely considered them as a refuge " for the *poor*. Instead of holding out confine- " ment as a punishment, they caused it to be " sought after as an asylum, and thus the lot of " the persons shut up in them might be envied " by the hard-working peasantry of the neigh- " bourhood. France might, in that way, have been " covered with similar establishments, which, " however full, would not have diminished the " number of mendicants, who commonly make a " trade of begging, and follow it in preference. " I was, however, enabled to judge, that the ex-

Digitized by Google

" tirpation of the evil was possible, and the exam-
" ple of some departments, in which the prefects
" had taken a better view of the subject, was
" sufficient to produce that conviction. There
" were a few in which it had entirely disap-
" peared.

" It is an observation which makes an imme-
" diate and striking impression, that all other
" things fairly averaged, mendicity is much more
" rare in those parts, which are poor and barren,
" and much more common in those, which are
" fruitful and abundant. It is also infinitely
" more difficult to effect its destruction in the
" places where the clergy have enjoyed superior
" wealth and power. In Belgium, for instance,
" mendicants were seen to derive honour from
" their trade, and boast of having followed it for
" several generations. These claims belonged
" peculiarly to them, and that country was ac-
" cordingly the rendezvous of mendicity." " But
" I am not surprised at it," resumed the Emperor,
" the difficulty of this important consideration
" consists entirely in discriminating accurately
" between the *poor* man who commands our re-
" spect, and the *mendicant* who ought to excite
" our indignation; besides, our religious oddities
" confound these two classes so completely, that
" they seem to make a merit, a kind of virtue of
" mendicity, and to encourage it by the promise
" of heavenly rewards. The mendicants are, in

Digitized by Google

" reality, neither more nor less, than monks *au petit*
" *pied*, and that such is the fact is evident from the
" mendicant monks being so classed in the voca-
" bulary. How was it possible for such ideas not
" to produce confusion in the mind, and disorder
" in society? A great number of saints have been
" canonized, whose only apparent merit was
" mendicity. They seem to have been trans-
" planted to Heaven, for that, which, considered
" as a matter of sound police, ought to have sub-
" jected them to castigation and confinement in
" this world. This would not, however, have
" prevented them from being worthy of Heaven.
" But go on."—" It was not, Sire, without emo-
" tion that I observed the details of the charitable
" establishments. In contemplating the anxiety,
" the cares, the ardent charity of so many sym-
" pathetic hearts, I was enabled to ascertain that
" we were far from yielding the palm, whatever
" might be the consideration, to any other peo-
" ple, and that we merely had less ostentation,
" and made less use of artificial means to enhance
" our merits. The South above all, and Langue-
" doc in particular, displayed a zeal and animation
" of which it would be difficult to form an ade-
" quate conception. The hospitals and alms-houses
" were every where numerous and well attended
" to. The foundlings had increased tenfold since
" the revolution and I instantly ascribed it to
" the corruption of the times; but I was desired

Digitized by Google

" to remark, and constant reflection convinced
" me of the truth, that the result was, on the
" contrary, to be attributed to very satisfactory
" causes. I was assured, that formerly the found-
" lings were so wretchedly taken care of, and so
" badly fed, that the whole of their population
" was diminutive, sickly, and short-lived, and
" that from seven to nine perished out of ten;
" while at present their food, cleanliness, and the
" care taken of them in every respect are such, that
" nearly all of them are preserved, and constitute
" a fine race of children. They are thus indebted
" for their numbers solely to their own preserva-
" tion. Vaccination has also contributed, in an
" immense proportion, to their increase. These
" children are now treated with such attention
" as to give rise to a singular abuse. Mothers,
" even in easy circumstances, are tempted to ex-
" pose their infants; they afterwards apply at
" the hospital, and under a charitable pretence,
" offer to bring up one themselves; it is their
" own which is restored to them with the benefit
" of a small allowance. All this is carried on
" through the favour of the agents themselves, and
" often for the purpose of obtaining a trifling pen-
" sion for one of their relations. Another abuse
" of this kind and not less extraordinary, was that
" which I observed in Belgium, of persons get-
" ting their names entered a long time before,
" for the purpose of entitling them to send their

Digitized by Google

" children to the hospital. Any young couple, " on their marriage, strove to get their names " entered for vacancies, which fell to them some " years afterwards, as a matter of right, it was a " part of the marriage arrangement."—" O Jesus! " Jesus!" exclaimed the Emperor, shrugging up his shoulders and laughing, " and after this make " laws and regulations!"—" But with regard to " the prisons, Sire, they were almost uniformly " the scenes of horror and real misery, the shame " and disgrace of our provinces, absolute sinks of " corruption, abominable intrenchments, which " I was obliged to pass through with the utmost " haste, or from which I was driven back in spite " of all my exertions. I had formerly visited cer- " tain prisons in England, and indulged in a " smile at the kind of luxury which I observed " in them, but it was quite a different thing with " respect to ours, and my indignation was excited " by the contrary extreme. There are no offences, " I might even say crimes, that are not sufficiently " punished by such habitations, and those, who " leave them, should not, in strict justice, have " any further expiation to make. Yet after all, " those confined in them were merely under a " simple accusation, while those who had been " found guilty, the real criminals, and hardened " villains, had their special prisons, their houses " of correction, where they were, perhaps, too " well taken care of; and even in the latter case,

Digitized by Google

" the honest day-labourer might have reason to " envy their lot, and make comparisons injurious " to providence and society. Another striking " inconsistency was observable in these houses " of correction; it was the amalgamation, the " habitual mixture of all the classes upon whom " sentence had been passed. Some being im- " prisoned for small offences only for a year, and " others for fifteen, twenty years, or for life, on " account of the dreadful crimes they had perpe- " trated, it necessarily followed, that they would " be all reduced to one moral level, not by the " amelioration of the latter, but rather by the " corruption of the former.

" What struck me also very forcibly in La " Vendée and the adjacent country was, that " madmen had increased there, perhaps, tenfold " more than in any other part of the empire, and " that individuals were detained in the mendi- " city establishments and other places of confine- " ment, who were treated as vagabonds, or likely " to become so, and who having been taken up in " their childhood, had no knowledge of their pa- " rents or origin. Some of them had wounds on " their persons, but were ignorant how they had " been inflicted. They were marks which had, " no doubt, been made upon them in their in- " fancy. The opportunity of employing these " individuals, who had not acquired a single so- " cial idea, has been suffered to pass by; they

Digitized by Google

"are now unfit for any purpose."—"Ah!" exclaimed the Emperor, "this is civil war and its "hideous train; its inevitable consequences and its "certain fruits! If some leaders make fortunes, "and extricate themselves from danger, the "dregs of the population are always trodden "under foot, and become the victims of every ca-"lamity!"

"With respect to other matters, I found in the "aggregate of these establishments, a consider-"able number of persons who, I was told, whe-"ther right or wrong, were prisoners of state, "and were kept in custody by order of the high, "the intermediate, or the low police.

"I listened to all those prisoners, I heard "their complaints, and received their petitions, "certainly, without any engagement on my part; "for I had no right to contract any, and besides, "I was perfectly aware, that having heard their "own testimony only, I could not attach guilt to "any person. With the exception, however, of "some notorious villains, they did not really, in "general, deserve more at farthest than the com-"mon punishments of the correctional police.

"I found among them, in the prisons of Rennes, a "boy between twelve and fourteen, who had, when "only a few months old, been taken with a band "of *Chauffeurs*. They had been all executed, and "the child had remained there ever since, without "any decision on his case. His moral capabili-

Digitized by Google

"ties may be easily appreciated. He never saw, "knew, or heard any but villains; they were the "only kind of people of whose existence he was "able to form an idea.

"At Mont Saint-Michel, a woman, whose name "I have forgotten, particularly attracted my at- "tention. She had rather a pretty face, pleasing "manners, and a modest deportment. She had "been imprisoned fourteen years, having taken "a very active part in the troubles of La Vendée, "and constantly accompanied her husband, who "was the chief of a battalion of insurgents, and "whom she succeeded, after his death, in the "command. The wretchedness she suffered, and "the tears she shed, had sensibly impaired her "charms. I assumed a severe air during the "recital of her misfortunes, but it was put on "for the purpose of concealing the emotions she "excited. She had, by the kindness of her man- "ners and her other qualifications, created a "kind of empire over the vulgar and depraved "women that were about her. She had devoted "herself to the care of the sick; the prison infir- "mary was entrusted to her, and she was be- "loved by every one.

"With the exception of that woman, a few "priests, and two or three old Chouan spies, "the rest exhibited but a filthy compound of "disgusting or extravagant depravity.

"I met with a married man, with an annual in-

Digitized by Google

"come of 15,000 livres, evidently confined in consequence of his wife's intrigues, after the manner of the ancient lettres de cachet; and with prostitutes, who assured me they were detained, not as a punishment for the indiscriminate profusion of their favours, but out of spite for want of complaisance for a single person. They told me lies, or they did not; but in either case ought they to be honoured with the title of prisoners of state, to be maintained at the expense of two francs a day, and to be made subservient in rendering the government odious and ridiculous? Finally, I met with an unhappy man in a town of Belgium, who had married one of those girls for whom the municipalities provide marriage portions on great occasions. He was imprisoned for having stolen, as I was informed, the portion, because he had neglected to earn it. He was positively required to acquit himself of that important debt, and he as positively refused. He was, perhaps, required to do that, which was not in his power, &c. &c.

"Immediately upon my return to Paris, I called on M. Réal, prefect of police of the district I had just revisited. I considered it my duty, I said, to communicate to him, in a *friendly* manner, the result of my observations. I must do him justice; for whether he was very far from having a bad heart, whether he

Digitized by Google

" was impressed with my plain dealing, or affected " perhaps, Sire, by the magic influence of your " uniform, he thanked me, observed that I was " doing him a real service, and assured me, that " he would take immediate steps for *relieving* " and *redressing*, such were his words, the cases " I had laid before him. Meeting him, however, " a few days afterwards at an assembly, he said, " with apparent grief, 'That is an unfortunate " business, and very unfavourable to your Amazon, " (he alluded to General Mallet's rash enter- " prise,) which I thought myself capable of " doing a few days ago of my own accord. I " cannot now pretend to undertake it without an " order from a superior quarter.'—I do not know " how the thing ended."

The Emperor dwelt some time on the abuses I had pointed out, and then concluded: " In the " first place, in order to proceed regularly, it was " incumbent upon you to ascertain, whether your " information was well grounded, and to hear " the evidence against the persons accused; and " then it must be frankly admitted, that abuses " are inherent in every human establishment. " You see, that almost every thing, of which you " complained, was committed by the very per- " sons, who were expressly entrusted with the " means of prevention. Can a remedy be pro- " vided, when it is impossible to see what passes " every where? There is something like a kind

Digitized by Google

" of net-work, which, extended on flat grounds,
" envelops the lower classes. A mesh must be
" broken and discovered by a fortunate observer
" like you, before any thing of the matter is known
" in the upper regions. Accordingly, one of my
" dreams would have been, when the grand
" events of war were completely terminated, and
" I returned to the interior in tranquillity and
" at ease, to look out for half a dozen, or a
" dozen, of real good philanthropists, of those
" worthy men who live but to do good. I should
" have distributed them through the empire
" which they would have secretly inspected for
" the purpose of making their report to me. They
" would have been the *spies of virtue!* They
" would have addressed themselves directly to
" me, and would have been my confessors, my
" spiritual directors, and my decisions with them,
" would have been my good works in secret.
" My grand occupation, when at full leisure, and
" at the height of my power, would have been
" the amelioration of every class of society. I
" should have descended to the details of indivi-
" dual comfort, and had I found no motive for
" that conduct in my natural disposition, I should
" have been actuated by the spirit of calculation;
" for after the acquisition of so much glory, what
" other means would have been left to me to
" make any addition to it? It was, because I
" was well aware, that that swarm of abuses

Digitized by Google

"necessarily existed, because I wished for the "preservation of my subjects, and was desirous "of throwing every impediment in the way of "subordinate and intermediate tyranny, that I "conceived my system of state prisons, adapted "to any crisis that might occur."—"Yes, Sire, but "it was far from being well received in our "saloons, and did not a little contribute to make "you unpopular. An outcry was every where "raised against the *new bastiles*, against the re- "newal of *lettres de cachet*."—"I know it very "well," said the Emperor, "the outcry was echoed "by all Europe, and rendered me odious. And yet, "observe how powerful the influence of words, "envenomed by perfidy! The whole of the dis- "content was principally occasioned by the pre- "posterous title of my decree, which escaped me "from distraction, or some other cause; for in "the main, I contend, that the law itself was an "eminent service, and rendered individual liberty "more complete and certain in France than in "any other country of Europe.

"Considering the crisis, from which we had "emerged, the factions by which we had been "divided, and the plots which had been laid, "and were still contriving, imprisonment became "indispensable. It was, in fact, a benefit; for "it superseded the scaffold. But I was desirous "of sanctioning it by legal enactments, and of "placing it beyond the reach of caprice, of arbi-

Digitized by Google

"trary powers of hatred, and of vengeance. "Nobody, according to my law, could be im- "prisoned and detained as a prisoner of state, "without the decision of my privy council, which "consisted of sixteen persons; the first, the most "independent and most distinguished characters "of the state. What unworthy feeling would "have dared to expose itself to the detection of "such a tribunal? Had I not voluntarily de- "prived myself of the power of consigning indi- "viduals to prison? None could be detained "beyond a year, without a fresh decision of the "privy council, and four votes out of sixteen "were sufficient to effect his release. Two "counsellors of state were bound to attend to "the statements of the prisoners, and became "from that moment their zealous advocates with "the privy council. These prisoners were also "under the protection of the Committee of indi- "vidual liberty, appointed by the Senate, which "was the object of public derision, merely be- "cause it made no parade of its labours, and "their results. Its services, however, were "great; for it would argue a defective know- "ledge of mankind to suppose, that Senators, "who had nothing to expect from ministers, and "who were their equals in rank, would not make "use of their prerogative to oppose and attack "them; whenever the importance of the case "called for their interferences. It must also be

Digitized by Google

"considered, that I had assigned the superin-
"tendance of the prisoners of the police of the
"prisons to the tribunals, which, from that in-
"stant, paralized the exercise of every kind of
"arbitrary authority, belonging to the other
"branches of administration, and their numerous
"subordinate agents. After such precautions,
"I do not hesitate to maintain, that civil liberty
"was as effectually secured by that law in France
"as it could possibly be. The public miscon-
"ceived, or pretended to misconceive that truth,
"for it is necessary for us Frenchmen to murmur
"at every thing and on every occasion.

"The fact is that at the time of my downfal, the
"state prisons scarcely contained 250 individuals,
"and I found nine thousand in them, when I
"became Consul. It will appear from the list
"of those who were imprisoned, and upon an
"examination into the causes and motives of
"their confinement, that almost every one of
"them deserved death, and would have been
"sentenced to it by regular process of law; and
"it consequently follows, that their imprisonment
"was, on my part, a benefit conferred upon them.
"Why is there nothing published against me on
"this subject at present? Where are the serious
"grievances to be found with which I am re-
"proached? There are none in reality. If some
"of the prisoners afterwards made a merit of
"their sufferings with the King, on account of

Digitized by Google

"their exertions in his favour, did they not by "that proceeding pronounce their own sentence "and attest my justice? For what may seem a "virtuous action in the King's eye, was incon- "testably a crime under me; and it was only "because I was repugnant to the shedding of "blood on account of political crimes, and be- "cause such trials would have but tended to the "continuance of commotion and perplexity in "the heart of the country, that I commuted the "punishment for simple detention.

"I repeat it, the French were, at my era, the "freest people of all Europe, without even ex- "cepting the English; for in England, if any "extreme danger causes the suspension of the "*Habeas Corpus* act, every individual may be "sent to prison at the mere will of ministers, "who are not called upon to justify their mo- "tives, or give an explanation of their conduct. "My law was very differently restricted." He concluded with saying;—"And then at last, if, "in spite of my good intention, and notwith- "standing my utmost care, all that you have just "said, and no doubt, many other things, were "well founded, it must not still be considered "so easy a task, as it is thought, to create a "beneficial establishment for a nation. It is "a remarkable circumstance, that the countries, "which have been separated from us, have re- "gretted the laws, with which I governed them.

Digitized by Google

"This is a homage paid to their superiority. "The real, the only mode of passing a decisive "sentence upon me with regard to their defects, "would be to shew the existence of a better code "in any other country! New times are drawing "near, it will be seen," &c. &c.

About five o'clock, I was told by the Grand Marshal, who had just left the Emperor, that he wished to see me. He had staid at home the whole of the day. I found him engaged in examining the new billiard table. He was apprehensive that the weather was too damp for walking, and he played at chess until dinner. In the evening, he read us Crebillon's *Atrée et Thyeste*. That piece seemed horrible to us; we found it disgusting, and by no means of a tragic cast. The Emperor could not finish it.

. . . . . .

Egypt.—Saint-Jean d'Acre.—The Desert.—Anecdotes, &c. &c.

21st.—About three o'clock the Emperor called for his calash. He sent for me, and we walked together to the bottom of the wood where he had ordered the carriage to take him up. I had some particulars of no great moment to communicate, which personally concerned him. . . . . .

. . . . . .

We observed, in the course of our ride, two vessels under sail for the island.

Digitized by Google

At dinner the Emperor seemed very fond of conversation. He had been just employed on his campaign of Egypt, which he had, for some time, neglected, and which, he said, would be as interesting as an episode of romance. In speaking of his position at Saint-Jean d'Acre, he observed:—

"The position which I occupied in the middle "of Syria, with 12,000 men only, was, it must be "admitted, a very enterprizing measure. I was "at the distance of 500 leagues from Desaix, who "formed the other extremity of my army. It "has been related by Sydney Smith, that I lost "18,000 men before Saint-Jean d'Acre, although "my army consisted but of 12,000. An obscure "person M. . . . , who had just gone through his "exercises at college, as it seemed, who knows "nothing of what he describes, and whose only "talent is that of tacking some sentences toge-"ther, with a view, no doubt, of converting "them to his emolument, the brother, however, "of one, whom I have loaded with favours, and "who was one of my council of state, has re-"cently published something on that subject, on "which I have cast a glance, and which vexes "me on account of its silliness and the gloomy "tint it endeavours to shed on the glory and ex-"ploits of that army, &c. &c.

"Had I been master of the sea, I should have "been master of the East, and the thing was so "practicable, that it failed only through the stupi-

Digitized by Google

"dity or bad conduct of some officers of the "navy.

"Volney, who travelled in Egypt before the "revolution, had stated his opinion, that that "country could not be occupied without three "great wars against England, the Grand Signior, "and the inhabitants. The latter, in particular, "seemed difficult and terrible to him. He was "altogether mistaken in that respect, for it gave "us no trouble. We had even succeeded in "making friends of the inhabitants, in the course "of a short time, and of connecting their cause "with ours. A handful of Frenchmen had then "been sufficient to conquer that fine country, "which they ought never to have lost. We had "actually accomplished prodigies in war and in "politics. Our undertaking was altogether dif-"ferent from the crusades; the crusaders were "innumerable and hurried on by fanaticism. My "army, on the contrary, was very small, and the "soldiers were so little inclined to the enter-"prize, that they were frequently tempted to "carry off the colours and return. I had, how-"ever, succeeded in familiarizing them with the "country, which supplied every thing in abund-"ance, and at so cheap a rate, that I was one "time on the point of placing them on half pay "for the purpose of laying by the other half for "them. I had acquired such an ascendency "over them, that I had it in my power, by a

Digitized by Google

"simple order of the day, to convert them to "Mahometanism. They would have treated it as "a joke, the population would have been gratified, "and the Christians of the East themselves would "have considered themselves gainers, and ap- "proved of it, as they knew that we could not "act better for them and for ourselves.

"The English were struck with consternation "at seeing us in possession of Egypt. We ex- "posed to Europe the certain means of wresting "India from them. They have not yet dismissed "their apprehensions, and they are in the right. "If 40 or 50,000 European families ever succeed "in establishing their industry, laws, and go- "vernment in Egypt, India will be more effec- "tually lost to the English by the commanding "influence of circumstances, than by the force "of arms."

In the course of the evening, the grand Marshal put the Emperor in mind of one of his conversations with Monge, the mathematician, at Cutekié, in the midst of the desert. "What do you "think of all this, citizen Monge?" said Napoleon.—"Why, citizen general," answered Monge, "I think, if there are ever seen in this place as "many equipages as at the Opera house, there "must be some wonderful revolutions on the "globe." The Emperor laughed very heartily at the recollection. He had, however, he observed, a carriage with six horses on the spot.

Digitized by Google

It was unquestionably the first of the kind that travelled over the desert, and accordingly it very much surprised the Arabs.

The Emperor remarked, that the desert always had a peculiar influence on his feelings. He had never crossed it without being subject to a certain emotion. It seemed to him, he said, the image of immensity: it shewed no boundaries, and had neither beginning nor end; it was an ocean on terra firma. His imagination was delighted with the sight, and he took pleasure in drawing our attention to the observation that Napoleon meant *Lion of the desert!* . . . . .

The Emperor also told us, that when he was in Syria, it was a settled opinion at Cairo, that he never would be seen there again, and he noticed the thievery and impudence of a little Chinese, who was one of his servants. "It was," said he, "a little deformed dwarf, whom Josephine "once took a fancy to at Paris. He was the "only Chinese in France, and was generally "placed behind her carriage. She took him to "Italy, but as he was in the constant habit of "pilfering, she wished to get rid of him. With "that view, I put him on board of my Egyptian "expedition. Egypt was a lift to him half-way "on his journey. This little monster was entrusted with the care of my cellar, and I had "no sooner crossed the desert, than he sold, at a "very low price, 2,000 bottles of delicious claret.

Digitized by Google

"His only object was to make money, and he "was convinced, that I should never come back. "He was not at all disconcerted at my return, "but came eagerly to meet me, and acquainted "me, as he said, like a faithful servant, with the "loss of my wine. The robbery was so glaring, "that he was himself compelled to confess it. I "was much urged to have him hanged, but I re- "fused, because, in every sense of justice, I "ought to have done as much to those in em- "broidered clothes, who had knowingly bought "and drank the wine. I contented myself with "discharging and sending him to Suez, where he "was at liberty to do what he pleased."

With respect to this topic I must observe, that we were induced, in this place, to give momentary credit to a very singular coincidence. We were informed a few months ago, that on board one of the Chinese traders, which were then off the island, on their return to Europe, there was a Chinese, who said, he had been in the Emperor's service in Egypt. The Emperor instantly exclaimed, that it was his little thief, whose story I have just told; but it was, in fact, a cook that had belonged to Kleber.

The Emperor put a sudden stop to the conversation, and with more gaiety than usual, turning to Madame Bertrand, said with a smile, "When "will you be at your apartments in the Tuileries? "When will you give your splendid dinners to

"the ambassadors? But you will be obliged, at "least, I am told so, to have new furniture, for "it is reported, that the fashion has entirely "changed in that country." The conversation then naturally turned on the magnificence and luxury, which we had witnessed under the Emperor.

Paternal advice—Remarkable conversation—Cagliostro; Mesmer, Gall, Lavater, &c.

22d.—The Emperor came to my apartment about 10 o'clock, and took me out to walk. We all breakfasted under the trees. The weather was delightful, and the heat, though intense, wholesome. The Emperor ordered his calash, two of us were with him, and the third accompanied us on horseback. The Grand Marshal could not attend. The Emperor recurred to some misunderstanding, which had taken place among us a few days before. He took a view of our situation and our natural wants;—"You are bound," said he, "when you are one day restored to the "world, to consider yourselves as *brothers*, on "my account. My memory will dictate this "conduct to you. Be so, then, from this mo-"ment!" He next described how we might be of mutual advantage to each other, the sufferings we had it in our power to alleviate, &c. &c. It was, all at once, a family and moral lesson, alike

Digitized by Google

distinguished for excellent sentiment and practical rules of conduct. It ought to have been written in letters of gold. It lasted nearly an hour and a quarter, and will, I think, never be forgotten by any of us. For myself, not only the principles and the words, but the tone, the expression, the action, and above all, the entire affection with which he delivered them, will never be erased from my mind.

About five o'clock, the Emperor entered my apartment, where I was employed, with my son, on the sketch of the battle of Arcola. He had something to say to me and I followed him to the garden, where he resumed, at great length, the conversation that had taken place in the calash. . . . . .

We now dined in the old topographical cabinet, adjoining that of the Emperor and the apartment formerly occupied by Montholon's family, which, with the help of the books and shelves lately received from England, was converted into a tolerable library.

As the damage done by the fire in the saloon was long in repairing, we were obliged to continue at table in our new dining-room until the Emperor withdrew. This circumstance, however, gave additional interest to the conversation.

The Emperor was very communicative to-day. The conversation turned on dreams, presentiments, and foresights, which the English call

Digitized by Google

second sight. We employed every common-place topic, ordinarily connected with these objects, and came at last to speak of sorcerers and ghosts. The Emperor concluded with observing; "All "these quackeries, and as many others, such as "those of Cagliostro, Mesmer, Gall, and Lavater, "&c. &c., are destroyed by this sole and simple "argument; *All that may exist, but it does not "exist.*

"Man is fond of the marvellous; it has for him "irresistible fascinations; he is ever ready to "abandon that, which is near at hand, to run after "that, which is fabricated for him. He volun- "tarily lends himself to his own delusions. The "truth is, that every thing about us is a wonder. "There is nothing which can be properly called "a phenomenon. Every thing in nature is a phe- "nomenon. My existence is a phenomenon. The "wood that is put in the fire-place and warms "me, is a phenomenon; that candle there, which "gives me light, is a phenomenon. All the first "causes, my understanding, my faculties, are "phenomena; for they all exist and we cannot "define them. I take leave of you here," said he, "and lo! I am at Paris, entering my box "at the opera. I bow to the audience; I "hear the acclamations; I see the performers; "I listen to the music. But if I can bound over "the distance from Saint Helena, why should I "not bound over the distance of centuries? Why

Digitized by Google

" should I not see the future as well as the past?
" Why should the one be more extraordinary,
" more wonderful than the other? The only rea-
" son is, that it does not exist. This is the argu-
" ment which will always annihilate, without the
" possibility of reply, all visionary wonders. All
" these quacks deal in very ingenious specula-
" tions; their reasoning may be just and seduc-
" tive; but their conclusions are false, because
" they are unsupported by facts.

" *Mesmer* and *Mesmerism* have never recovered
" from the blow dealt at them by Bailly's report
" in the name of the Academy of Sciences. Mes-
" mer produced effects upon a person by mag-
" netizing him to his face, yet the same person,
" magnetized behind, without his knowing it,
" experienced no effect whatever. It was there-
" fore, on his part, an error of the imagination, a
" debility of the senses; it was the act of the
" somnabule, who, at night runs along the roof
" without danger, because he is not afraid; but
" who would break his neck in the day, because
" his senses would confound him.

" I once attacked the quack Puységur, on his
" somnabulism, at one of my public audiences.
" He wished to assume a very lofty tone;
" brought him down to his proper level with only
" these words. If your doctrine is so instructive,
" let it tell us something new! Mankind will, no
" doubt, make a very considerable progress in

Digitized by Google

" the next 200 years, let it specify any single " improvement, which is to take place within that " period! Let it tell me what I shall do within " the following week! Let it ascertain the num- " bers of the lottery, which will be drawn to- " morrow! &c. &c.

" I behaved in the same manner to Gall, and " contributed very much to the discredit of his " theory. Corvisart was his principal follower. " He, and all who resemble him, had a great at- " tachment to materialism, which was calculated " to strengthen their theory and influence. But " nature is not so barren. Were she so clumsy " as to make herself known by external forms, " we should go to work more promptly and ac- " quire a greater degree of knowledge. Her " secrets are more subtle, more delicate, more " evanescent, and have hitherto escaped the most " minute researches. We find a great genius in " a little hunch back, and a man, with a fine " commanding person, turns out to be a stupid " fellow. A big head with a large brain is some- " times destitute of a single idea, while a small " brain is found to possess a vast understanding. " And observe the imbecility of *Gall*. He attri- " butes to certain protuberances, propensities " and crimes, which are not inherent in nature, " which arise solely from society and the com- " pact of mankind. What becomes of the pro- " tuberance, denoting thievery, where there is no

Digitized by Google

" property to steal;—of that indicating drunken-
" ness, where there are no fermented liquors, and
" of that characterising ambition, where there is
" no social establishment?

" The same remarks apply to that egregious
" charlatan, *Lavater*, with his physical and moral
" relations. Our credulity lies in the defect of our
" nature. It is inherent in us to wish for the
" acquisition of positive ideas, when we ought,
" on the contrary, to be carefully on our guard
" against them. We scarcely look at a man's
" features, before we undertake to ascertain his
" character. We should be wise enough to repel
" the idea and to neutralize those deceitful appear-
" ances. I was robbed by a person who had
" grey eyes, and from that moment am I never to
" look at grey eyes without the idea of the fear of
" being robbed? It was a weapon, that wounded
" me, and of that I am apprehensive wherever I
" see it, but was it the grey eyes that robbed
" me? Reason and experience, and I have been
" enabled to derive great benefit from both, prove,
" that all those external signs are so many lies;
" that we cannot be too strictly on our guard
" against them, and that the only true way of
" appreciating and gaining a thorough knowledge
" of mankind is by trying and associating with
" them. After all, we meet with countenances
" so hideous, it must be allowed," (and as an instance he described one; it was that of the

Digitized by Google

governor), "that the most powerful understanding "is confounded, and condemns them in spite of "itself."

Singular Accommodation of Contrarieties, &c. &c.

23d.—The Emperor called upon me about three o'clock. He wished to take a walk. He had a gloomy look, and had suffered much since yesterday. He was seriously affected by the intense heat during his ride in the calash. He had observed a new door which was making without, and which would have altered the whole interior of the topographical cabinet, and of Madame Montholon's former apartment. He had not been consulted on the occasion, and was sensibly affected at it. He sent instantly for the person who had given the directions, and the bad reasons he assigned served only to vex him still more. We were desirous of taking a walk, but it seemed decided that every thing was to irritate and put him in ill humour that evening. He saw some English officers on his way, and turned aside from them almost in anger, observing, that shortly it would be impossible for him to put his foot out of doors. A few paces off he was joined by the Doctor, who came to tell him, unseasonably enough, of some arrangements that were making for him, the Emperor, and to ask his opinion on the subject. It was one of the topics, which, per-

Digitized by Google

hope, hurt his feelings most. He made no answer, his ordinary resource against disappointment, but this time he kept silent with a fretfulness he could not conceal. He came up with the carriage, and got in; but on our way we met with some more English officers, and then he suddenly ordered the coachman to drive off, at a gallop, in another direction.

The new opening, however, which had been made in the house without his knowledge, and which he found so inconvenient, still sat heavy on his heart. He was about to lighten the load by a lively playfulness with the wife of the person who had ordered it, and who happened to be in the calash. "Ah," said he, "are you there? "You are in my power; you shall pay the pe "nalty. The husband is the guilty person; it is "the wife that shall answer for him." But instead of accommodating herself to the sense in which the words were uttered, which she might have done without the least inconvenience, and with the certainty of a satisfactory result, she persisted in making lame excuses for her husband, and repeating reasons, which served but to revive his dissatisfaction. Finally, to fill up the chapter of cross purposes, one of us, on discovering the tents of the camp, informed him that the evolutions and manœuvres of the preceding day were in celebration of one of the great victories gained by the English in Spain, and that the regiment which

Digitized by Google

executed them, had been very nearly destroyed in battle. "A regiment, Sir, is never destroyed by "the enemy; it is immortalized," was his only answer. It is true, that it was delivered very dryly.

For myself, I meditated in silence on this accumulation of contrarieties, which struck with redoubled blows in so short a time. It was a precious moment for an observer. I estimated the torments they were calculated to produce, and I remarked, with admiration, the few he suffered to escape. I said to myself, this is the *intractable man*, this the *tyrant!* It might have been said, that he knew what was passing in my mind, for, when we left the calash, and were a few paces before the others, he said to me in a low tone, "If you like to study mankind, learn how far "patience can go, and all that one can put up "with," &c. &c.

On his return, he called for tea; I had never seen him take any. Madame de Montholon was, for the first time, in possession of her new saloon. He wished to see it, and observed that she would be much better accommodated than us all. He called for fire, and played at chess with several of us successively. He gradually resumed his natural state, and ate a little at dinner, which completely restored him. He indulged in conversation, and again reverted to his early years, which always possessed fresh charms for him. He spoke a great deal of his early acquaintances, and

Digitized by Google

of the difficulties some of them had in obtaining admission to him after his elevation, and observed, " that if the threshold of his palace was impas-
" sable, it was in spite of himself. What then," said he, " must be the situation of other sovereigns
" in that respect?" &c. &c.

We continued the conversation until eleven, without noticing the lateness of the hour.

Madame de B. . . . .—Details, &c.—Anecdotes respecting the Emigrants.

24th.—To-day the Emperor tried the billiard-table which had been just laid down, and went out, but the weather being very damp, he returned almost immediately.

He conversed with me in his apartment, before dinner, on the emigrants, and the name of Madame de B . . . ., who had been *dame d'atours* to Madame, and was very conspicuous in the commencement of our affairs, was mentioned. The Emperor observed, " But is not this Madame
" de B . . . . a very dangerous woman?"—
" Certainly not," I replied; " she is, on the con-
" trary, one of the best women in the world, with
" a great deal of wit, and an excellent judgment."
" If that is the case," said the Emperor, " she
" must have much cause to complain of me. This
" is the painful consequence of false representa-
" tions; she was pointed out as a very dangerous

Digitized by Google

" character."—" Yes, Sire, you made her very
" unhappy. Madame de B . . . . placed all
" her happiness in the charms of society, and
" you banished her from Paris. I met with her
" in one of my missions, confined within her pro-
" vince, and pining away with vexation, yet she
" expressed no resentment against your Ma-
" jesty, and spoke of you with great moderation."
" Well, then! why did you not come to me, and
" set me right?"—" Ah, Sire, your character was
" then so little known to us, compared with what
" I know it to be at present, that I should not
" have dared to take it upon myself. But I will
" mention an anecdote of Madame de B . . . .
" when at London, during the high tide of our
" emigration, which will make you better ac-
" quainted with her than any thing I could say.
" At the time when you were declared Consul, a
" person, just arrived from Paris, was invited to
" a small party at her house. He engrossed the
" attention of the company, in consequence of all
" the particulars he had to communicate respect-
" ing a place, which interested us so very mate-
" rially. He was asked several questions re-
" specting the Consul. He can not, said he,
" live long, he is so *yellow as to inspire delight*.
" These were his words. He grew more ani-
" mated by degrees, and gave as a toast—the
" death of the First Consul! Oh, horrible! was
" the instantaneous exclamation of Madame

Digitized by Google

" de B . . . . What, drink to the death of a " human being! For shame! I will give a much " better one; the King's health!"

" Well," said the Emperor, " I repeat, that she " was very ill used by me, in consequence of the " representations, which were made to me. She " had been described to me as a person fond of " political intrigues, and remarkable for the " bitterness of her sarcasms. And this puts me " in mind of an expression which is perhaps " wrongly attributed to her, but which struck me, " however, solely on account of its wit. I was " assured, that a distinguished personage, who " was very much attached to her, was seized " with a fit of jealousy, for which she clearly " proved she had given no cause. He persisted, " however, and observed, that she ought to know " that the wife of Cæsar should be free from sus- " picion. Madame de B . . . . replied, that the " remark contained two important mistakes; for " it was known to all the world that she was not " his wife, and that he was not Cæsar."

After dinner, the Emperor read to us parts of the comedies of the Dissipateur and the Glorieux, but he was so little pleased with them, that he left off; they did not possess a sufficient degree of interest. He suffered severely in his right side. It was the effect of the dampness with which he had been affected during his morning walk, and

Digitized by Google

we were not without apprehensions of its being a symptom of the common malady in these scorching climates.

On my return home, I found a letter from England, with a parcel, containing some articles for my toilet. The Griffin ship of war had just arrived from England.

The Emperor receives Letters from his Family.—Conversation with the Admiral.—The Commissioners of the Allied Powers.

25th.—About nine o'clock, I received from the Grand Marshal three letters for the Emperor. They were from Madame Mère, the Princess Pauline, and Prince Lucien. The latter was enclosed in one, addressed to me from Rome, by Prince Lucien, dated the 6th of March. I also received two from my agent in London.

The Emperor passed the whole of the morning in reading the papers from the 25th of April to the 13th of May. They contained accounts of the death of the Empress of Austria, of the prorogation of the French Chambers, of Cambrone's acquittal, and the sentence passed upon General Bertrand, &c. &c. He made many remarks upon all these subjects.

About three, Admiral Malcolm requested to be presented to the Emperor. He brought him a series of the Journal des Debats to the 13th of

Digitized by Google

May. The Emperor desired me to introduce him, and he conversed with him nearly three hours. He gave great pleasure to the Emperor, who treated him, from the first moment, with a great deal of freedom and good nature, as if he had been an old acquaintance. The Admiral was entirely of his opinion with respect to a great number of subjects. He admitted, that it was extremely difficult to escape from Saint Helena, and he could see no inconvenience in allowing him to be at large in the island. He considered it absurd, that Plantation-house had not been given up to the Emperor, and felt, but only since his arrival, he confessed, that the title of general might be offensive. It struck him, that Lady Loudon's conduct had been ridiculous here, and would be laughed at in London. He thought, that the governor had good intentions, but did not know how to act. Ministers had, in his opinion, been embarassed with respect to the Emperor, but entertained no hatred against him; they did not know how to dispose of him. Had he remained in England, he would have been, and was still a terror to the Continent; he would have been too dangerous and efficient an instrument in the hands of Opposition, &c. &c. He was apprehensive, however, that all these circumstances put together would detain us here a long time; and he expressed his confidence, that it was the intention of Ministers, with the exception of the necessary

Digitized by Google

precautions to prevent his escape, that Napoleon should be treated with every possible indulgence at Saint Helena, &c. &c. He delivered himself upon all these points, in so satisfactory a manner, that the Emperor discussed the business with him, with as little warmth, as if it was perfectly indifferent to him.

At one moment, the Emperor produced a sensible effect upon him; it was, when, alluding to the commissioners, he pointed out the impossibility of receiving them. "After all, Sir," said he, "you and I are men. I appeal to you, Is "it possible, that the Emperor of Austria, whose "daughter I married, who implored that union "on his knees, who retains my wife and my son, "should send me his commissioner, without a "line for myself, without the smallest scrap of "a bulletin with respect to my son's health? "Can I receive him with consistency? Can I "have any thing to communicate to him? I may "say the same thing of the commissioner sent "by Alexander, who gloried in calling himself "my friend, with whom, indeed, I carried on "political wars, but had no personal quarrel. "It is a fine thing to be a sovereign, but we are "not on that account the less entitled to be "treated as men; I lay claim to no other cha-"racter at present! Can they all be destitute of "feeling? Be assured, Sir, that when I object "to the title of General, I am not offended. I,

Digitized by Google

"decline it merely, because it would be an ac-
"knowledgment, that I have not been Emperor;
"and, in this respect, I advocate the honour of
"others more than my own. I advocate the
"honour of those with whom, I have been, in
"that rank, connected by treaties, by family and
"political alliances. The only one of these
"commissioners, whom I might, perhaps, re-
"ceive, would be that of Louis XVIII., who
"owes me nothing. That commissioner was a
"long time my subject, he acts merely in con-
"formity to circumstances, independent of his
"option; and I should accordingly receive him
"to-morrow, were I not apprehensive of the mis-
"representations, that would take place, and of
"the false colouring, that would be given to the
"circumstance," &c. &c.

After dinner, the Emperor again alluded to the time of his consulate, to the numerous conspiracies which had been formed against him, to the celebrated persons of that period, &c. I have already noticed these topics at considerable length. The conversation lasted until one o'clock in the morning, a very extraordinary hour for us.

The Emperor's Court — Expenses, savings, hunting and shooting establishment, mews, pages, service of honour, &c.

26th—28th. Our usual mode of living,—an airing in the carriage in the middle of the day; conversation at night.

Digitized by Google

On the 27th the Emperor received for a moment, a colonel, a relation of the family of Walsh Serrent, who was on his return from the Cape in the Haycomb, and was to sail next day for Europe. He had been governor of Bourbon, and entertained us with many agreeable particulars respecting that island.

After dinner, the conversation turned on the old and new court, with their arrangements, expenses, etiquette, &c. &c. I have already mentioned most of these points in another place, and many of them were repeated on the present occasion. I pass over what would seem but a literal repetition.

The Emperor's court was, in every relation, much more magnificent than any thing seen up to that period, and yet, said he, the expense was infinitely less. That vast difference was caused by the suppression of abuses, and by the introduction of order and regularity into the accounts. His hunting and shooting establishment, with the exception of some useless and ridiculous particulars, he observed, as that of falconry and some others, was as splendid, as numerous, and as striking, as that of Louis XVI., and the annual disbursement, he assured us, was but 400,000 franks, while the King's amounted to seven millions. His table was regulated according to the same system. Duroc had, by his regularity and strictness, done wonders in that respect. Under

Digitized by Google

the kings, the palaces did not continue furnished, and the same articles were transferred from one palace to another; the people belonging to the court had no furniture allowed them, and every one was obliged to look out for himself. Under him, on the contrary, there was not a person in attendance, who did not find himself provided as comfortably, or even more so, with every thing that was necessary or suitable in the apartment assigned to him, than in his own house.

The Emperor's mews cost three millions, the expense of the horses was averaged at 3,000 francs a horse yearly. A page cost from 6 to 8,000 francs. That establishment, he observed, was perhaps the most expensive belonging to the palace, and accordingly the education of the pages and the care taken of them, were the subject of just encomium. The first families of the empire were solicitous to place their children on it, and the inducements were irresistible.

With respect to the etiquette of the court, the Emperor said, he was the first who had separated the *service of honour* (an expression invented under him) from that which was absolutely necessary. He had dismissed every thing that was laborious and substantial, and substituted what was nominal and ornamental only. "A king," he said, "is not to be found in nature, he is the "mere creature of civilization. There are no "naked kings; they must all be dressed," &c.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor remarked, that it was impossible for any one to be better informed of the nature and relation of all these matters than himself; because they had been all regulated by him, according to the precedents of past times, from which he had lopped off whatever was ridiculous, and preserved every thing that seemed suitable, &c.

The conversation lasted until after eleven o'clock. It had been kept up with tolerable spirit; and the Emperor again observed on leaving us, that, after all, we must be a good-natured kind of people to be able to lead so contented a life at Saint Helena.

Fresh Instance of the Governor's Malignity, &c.—Desperate Project of Santini, the Corsican.

29th.—The weather had been bad for some days; the Emperor took advantage of a fine moment to examine a tent, which the admiral had, in a very handsome manner, ordered to be raised for his accommodation by his ship's crew, having heard him complain, in the course of conversation, of the want of shade and of the impossibility of enjoying himself in the air out of his apartment. The Emperor conversed with the officer and men who were putting the last hand to the work, and ordered a napoleon to be given to each of the seamen.

Digitized by Google

We learnt to-day, that the last vessel had brought a book on the state of public affairs for the Emperor, written, as it was said, by a member of parliament. It had been sent by the author himself, and the following words were inscribed in letters of gold on the outside,—*To Napoleon the Great.* This circumstance induced the Governor to retain the work, a rigour, on his part, which formed a singular contrast with his eagerness to supply us with libels, that spoke so disrespectfully of the Emperor.

During dinner the Emperor, turning, with a stern look, to one of the servants in waiting, exclaimed, to our utter consternation; "So "then, assassin, you resolved to kill the Gover- "nor!—Wretch!—If such a thought ever again "enters your head, you will have to do with "me; you will see how I shall behave to you." And then addressing himself to us, he said, "Gentlemen, it is Santini, there, who deter- "mined to kill the Governor. That rascal was "about to involve us in a sad embarassment. I "found it necessary to exert all my authority, "all my indignation to restrain him."

With the view of explaining this extraordinary transaction, it is necessary for me to observe, that Santini, who was formerly usher of the Emperor's cabinet, and whose extreme devotion had prompted him to follow his master and serve him, no matter, he said, in what capacity, was a Cor-

Digitized by Google

sican of deep feeling and a warm imagination. Enraged at the Governor's bad usage, no longer able to bear with patience the affronts he saw heaped upon the Emperor, exasperated at the decline of his health, and affected himself with a distracting melancholy, he had, for some time, done no work in the house, and under pretence of procuring some game for the Emperor's table, his employment seemed to be that of shooting in the neighbourhood. In a moment of confidence, he told his countryman Cypriani, that he had formed the project, by the means of his double barrelled piece, of killing the Governor, and then putting an end to himself. And all, said he, to rid the world of a monster.

Cypriani, who knew his countryman's character, was shocked at his determination, and communicated it to several other servants. They all united in entreating him to lay aside his design, but their efforts, instead of mitigating, seemed but to inflame his irritation. They resolved then to discover the project to the Emperor, who had him instantly brought before him: "And it was "only," he told me some time afterwards, "by "*imperial*, by *pontifical* authority, that I finally "succeeded in making the scoundrel desist alto- "gether from his project. Observe for a moment "the fatal consequences he was about to pro- "duce. I should have also passed for the mur- "derer, the assassin of the Governor, and in reality

Digitized by Google

" it would have been very difficult to destroy " such an impression in the mind of a great num- " ber of people."

The Emperor read to us La Mort de Pompée, which was stated in the journals to be the subject of general interest at Paris, on account of its political allusions. And this gave rise to the remark, that government had been obliged to forbid the representation of Richard, and that, certainly on the fifth and sixth of October, Louis XVI. little thought of its ever being prohibited for its allusions to another. " The fact is, " that times are wonderfully changed," said the Emperor.

30th.—The Emperor, after a few turns in the garden, went to General Gourgaud's apartment, where he was a long time employed, with his compasses and crayon, in ascertaining the dimensions of the coast of Syria, and the plan of Saint Jean d'Acre, which the general was to execute. In marking some points about Saint Jean d'Acre, he said ;—" I passed many unpleasant moments " there."

In the evening we had Le Mariage de Figaro, which entertained and interested us much more than we had been led to expect. " It was," observed the Emperor, in shutting the book, " the " revolution already put into action."

Digitized by Google

La Harpe's Mélanie.—Nuns.—Convents.—Monks of La Trappe.—The French Clergy.

31.—The weather was horrible, and the Emperor found great difficulty in going to Madame de Montholon's saloon. He amused himself for some time in reading the Thousand and One Nights, and afterwards perceiving a volume of the Moniteur, on which M. de Montholon was then employed, and which lay open in the part relative to the negociations for a maritime armistice in 1800, his whole attention was absorbed by them for upwards of an hour.

After dinner the Emperor read first La Mère Coupable, in which we felt interested and next, the Mélanie of La Harpe, which he thought wretchedly conceived and very badly executed. "It was," he said, "a turgid declamation, in "perfect conformity with the taste of the times, "founded in fashionable calumnies and absurd "falsehoods. When La Harpe wrote that piece, "a father certainly had not the power of forcing "his daughter to take the veil; the laws would "never have allowed it. This play, which was "performed at the beginning of the revolution, "was solely indebted for its success to the momentary caprice of public opinion. Now, that "the inducement is over, it would be a wretched "performance! La Harpe's characters are all

Digitized by Google

" unnatural. He should not have attacked de-
" fective institutions with defective weapons."

The Emperor said, that La Harpe had so completely failed in his object with regard to his own impressions, that all his feelings were in favour of the father, while he was shocked at the daughter's conduct. He had never seen the performance, without being tempted to start from his seat and call out to the daughter; " You have " but to say, No, and we will all take your part; " you will find a protector in every citizen."

He observed, that when he was on service with his regiment, he had often witnessed the ceremony of taking the veil. " It was a ceremony " very much attended by the officers, and which " raised our indignation, particularly, when the " victims were handsome. We ran in crowds to " it, and our attention was alive to the slightest " incident. Had they but said, *No*, we should " have carried them off sword in hand. It is " consequently false, that violence was employed: " the only means used were the acts of seduc- " tion. Those, upon whom they were practised, " were kept, not unlike recruits. They were " exposed to the blandishments and exhortations " of the nuns, the abbess, the spiritual director, " and the bishop, to the examination of the civil " officer, and finally to public view. Thus every " thing seemed to concur in prevailing upon them " to make the sacrifice."

Digitized by Google

The Emperor declared that he was an enemy to convents in general, as useless, and productive of degrading inactivity. He allowed, however, in another point of view, that certain reasons might be pleaded in their favour. The best *mezzo termine*, and he had adopted it, was, in his opinion, that of tolerating them, of obliging the members to become useful, and of recognizing annual vows alone.

The Emperor complained, that he had not been allowed time enough to complete his institutions. It had been his intention to enlarge the establishments of Saint Denis and Ecouen, for the purpose of giving an asylum to the widows of soldiers, or women advanced in years, &c. &c. "And then," he added, "it must also be allowed, "that there were characters and imaginations of "all kinds; that compulsion ought not to be used "with regard to persons of an eccentric turn, "provided their oddities were harmless, and that "an empire, like France, might and had a right "to have houses for madmen, called *trappistes*. "With respect to the latter," he observed, "that "if any one ever thought of inflicting upon others "the discipline which they practised, it would be "justly considered a most abominable tyranny, "and that it might, notwithstanding, constitute "the delight of him who voluntarily exercised "it on himself. . . . . This is man, these "his fantastical pursuits, or his folly! . . . He

Digitized by Google

" had tolerated the monks of Mount Cenis, but " these, at least," he added, " were useful, very " useful, and might be even called heroical."

The Emperor expressed himself in his council of state in the following words, when the organization of the university was about to take place: " It is my opinion, that the monks would be far " the best body for communicating instruction, " were it possible to keep them under proper " control, and to shake off their dependence " upon a foreign master. I am disposed to be " favourable to them. I should, perhaps, have " had the power to reinstate them in their " establishments, but they have made the thing " impossible. The moment I do any thing for " the clergy, they give me cause to repent it. I " do not complain of the old established clergy, " for with them I am sufficiently satisfied; but " the young priests are brought up in a gloomy " fanatical doctrine; there is nothing Gallican in " the young clergy.

" I have nothing to say against the ancient, " the old bishops. They have shewn themselves " grateful for what I did for religion; they have " realized my expectations.

" Cardinal de Boisgelin was a man of sense, a " virtuous character, who had faithfully adopted " me.

" The Archbishop of Tours, Barral, a man of " great acquirements, and who was of essential

Digitized by Google

" service to us in our differences with the Pope, " was always very much attached to me.

" The worthy cardinal du Belloy, and the vir- " tuous Bishop Roquelaure, had a sincere affec- " tion for me.

" I made no difficulty whatever in placing " Bishop Beausset among the dignitaries of the " university, and I am convinced, that he was " one of those, who, in that capacity, most sin- " cerely conducted themselves in conformity " with my views.

" All these ancient bishops possessed my con- " fidence, and none of them deceived me. It is " not a little singular, that those I had the great- " est cause to complain of, were precisely those " whom I had chosen myself; so very true is it, " that the holy unction, in approximating us to " Heaven, does not deliver us from the infirmi- " ties of the earth, from its irregularities, its ob- " scenities, its turpitudes," &c. &c.

The conversation next turned upon the want of priests in France, on the obligation of employing them at the age of 16, and the difficulty, even the impossibility of finding any at 21, &c. &c.

It was the Emperor's wish that they should be ordained at a more advanced age. The answer of the bishops and the Pope himself was, " It is very " well: your reasons are very just; but if you wait " for that period, you will find none to ordain, " and yet you admit that you are in want of them."

Digitized by Google

"I have, no doubt," observed the Emperor, "that, after me, other principles will be adopted. "A conscription of priests and nuns will, perhaps, be seen in France, as a military conscription was seen in my time. My barracks will, "perhaps, be turned into convents and seminaries. Thus the world runs on. Poor people! In spite of all your knowledge, all your "wisdom, you continue like simple individuals, "the slaves of fashionable caprice."

It was nearly one o'clock in the morning before the Emperor retired. It was, he said, a real victory over tediousness, and a great relief for the want of sleep.

Marie Antoinette.—The Manners of Versailles.—Anecdote.—Beverley.—Diderot's Père de Famille.

AUGUST 1.—The weather was dreadful. About three o'clock, the Grand Marshal came to look for me; but as I had at that moment ventured out, I was not to be found. It was on account of some English, whom he had to present to the Emperor.

The Emperor sent for me at five; he was in a bad humour, and not a little so, he said, on my account. The visit of the English, the bad weather, the want of the saloon and an interpreter, had all combined to vex him.

He was reading the Veillées du Château, which, he observed, were tiresome, and he left them for the tales of Margaret, Queen of Navarre.

Digitized by Google

He afterwards adverted to Versailles; the court, the Queen, Madame Campan, and the King, were the principal subjects of his remarks, and he said many things, some of which I have already noticed. He concluded with observing, that Louis XVI. would have been a perfect pattern in private life, but that he had been a wretched King; and that the Queen would no doubt have been, at all times, the ornament of every circle, but that her levity, her inconsistencies, and want of capacity, had not a little contributed to promote and accelerate the catastrophe. She had, he remarked, deranged the manners of Versailles; its ancient gravity and strict etiquette were transformed into the free and easy prettinesses and absolute tittle-tattle of a private party. No man of sense and importance could avoid the jests of the young courtiers, whose natural disposition for raillery was sharpened by the applauses of a young and beautiful sovereign.

One of the most characteristic anecdotes of that day was told. A gallant and worthy German general arrived at Paris, with a special recommendation to the Queen, on the part of the Emperor Joseph, her brother. The Queen thought she could not do him a greater favour, than that of inviting him to one of her private parties. He found himself, it may be easily imagined, a little out of his element in such company, but it was every one's wish to treat him with marked respect, and he was obliged to take a leading part in the

Digitized by Google

conversation. He was unfortunate in the selection of his topics, and in his manner of introducing them. He talked a great deal about *his white mare, and his grey mare*, upon which he set the highest value. The subject gave rise to a number of arch inquiries on the part of the young courtiers, respecting a thousand frivolous points; which he had the good nature to answer, as if they were matters of importance. In conclusion; one of them asked which of the two he preferred: "Really," answered the general with peculiar significance, "I must confess, that, if I were in the "day of battle on my white mare, I do not be- "lieve I should dismount to get on my grey one." At length he made his bow, and the bursts of laughter, that followed, may be easily conceived. The conversation took another turn after his departure; the attractions of white and brown beauties were long and ingeniously canvassed, and the Queen having asked one of the party which he preferred, he instantly assumed a grave air, and imitating the solemn tone of the Austrian, answered, "Really, Madame, I must confess, that "if I were in the day of battle on . . . . . ." "Enough," observed the Queen, "spare us the "remainder."

After dinner he read Beverley and the Père de Famille to us. The latter, in particular, excited his animadversion. To us it seemed a paltry production. What most amused the Emperor, as he

Digitized by Google

said, was that it belonged to Diderot, that Coryphœus of the philosophers, and the Encyclopedia. All it contained was, he said, false and ridiculous. The Emperor entered into a long examination of the details, and concluded with saying, "Why reason with a madman in the height of a "raging fever? It is remedies, and a decisive "mode of treatment, of which he stands in need. "Who does not know, that the only safeguard "against love is flight? When Mentor wishes to "secure Telemachus, he plunges him into the "sea. When Ulysses endeavours to preserve "himself from the Syrens, he gets himself tied "fast, after having stopped the ears of his com-"panions with wax," &c. &c.

Historical Sketch of the Emigration to Coblentz.—Anecdotes, &c.

2d.—Uninterrupted bad weather, with heavy rains. The Emperor was not well; he felt his nerves very much irritated.

He sent for me to breakfast with him. During the whole of breakfast, and a long time afterwards, the conversation again turned on the emigration. I have already remarked, that he often brought me back to the subject. His enquiries to day were directed to the particulars of what had passed at Coblentz, to our situation, our disposition, our organization, our views, and our resources, and at the end of all my answers, he con-

Digitized by Google

cluded, observing; " you have already several " times acquainted me with a considerable part " of those things, and yet I do not retain them, " because you communicate them without regu- " larity. Reduce them to a consistent historical " summary. How could you be better employed " in this place? And then, my dear Las Cases, " you will have a piece ready at hand for your " journal." It was Dido's demand of Æneas, and I too might have exclaimed, *Infandum, regina, jubes.* . . . . . I executed, however, the sketch as completely as my memory and judgment enabled me, for the subject began to grow stale, and I was, at that time, very young. I give it as I read it, a short time afterwards, to Napoleon.

" Sire, after the famous events, which over- " threw the Bastile, and set all France in agita- " tion, most of our princes, who found themselves " implicated in the consequences, fled from the " country with the sole view, at that period, of " securing their personal safety. They were soon " after joined by persons of considerable rank, " and by a number of young men; the former, " induced by the relations which they had with " them, and the latter by a persuasion, that the " measure of itself indicated, in some degree, a " striking, generous, and decided devotedness. " When a certain number were collected, the " idea suggested itself of converting to a political

Digitized by Google

" end; that, which until then, had been produced " by zeal and chance alone. It was thought, that " if, with the assistance of these junctions, a kind " of small power could be created, it might be " enabled to react, with advantage, on the inte- " rior, become a lever there to insurrection, make " an impression on the public mind, and restrain " popular commotion; while it would be, with- " out, a title or pretext for applying to foreign " powers, and claiming their attention. This was " the origin of the emigration; and it is confi- " dently stated, that this grand idea was con- " ceived by M. de Calonne, as he passed through " Switzerland, in the suite of one of our princes, " who was on his way from Turin to Germany.

" The first meeting was held at Worms, under " the Prince de Condé. The most celebrated " was that at Coblentz, under the King's two " brothers, one of whom came from Italy, where " he had at first found an asylum in the court of " the King of Sardinia, his father-in-law, and the " other arrived by the way of Brussels, after " escaping the arrests, which had made a captive " of Louis XVI. at Varennes.

" I was one of the first who assembled at " Worms. The number about the prince was " scarcely fifty when I arrived. In the entire " effervescence of youth and with the first in- " spiration of what was noble, I hastened to " Worms with the most innocent simplicity of

Digitized by Google

" heart. My reading and my prayer each morn-
" ing consisted of a chapter of Bayard. I ex-
" pected, on reaching Worms, to be, at the very
" least, seized and embraced by so many brothers
" in arms; but to my great surprise, (and it was
" my first lesson on mankind), instead of this af-
" fectionate reception, I and a companion were,
" all at once, examined and observed, for the
" purpose of having it ascertained, that we were
" not spies. We were afterwards carefully sounded
" with regard to our interest, our views, and the
" pretensions by which we might have been
" actuated, and finally great pains were taken
" to prove to us, and to make the prince perceive,
" (and this plan was renewed on every fresh ar-
" rival), that our numbers increased greatly, and
" exceeded, no doubt, already, the places and
" favours he had to confer. My companion was
" so shocked, that he proposed to me to return
" instantly to Paris.

" We, who composed the assemblage, in order
" to make ourselves useful or to acquire impor-
" tance, undertook, three or four of us by turns,
" to form a kind of regular guard about the
" Prince's person night and day; for we dreamt
" already but of conspiracies and assassination,
" so very powerful and redoubtable did we think
" ourselves, and when relieved on this kind of
" voluntary guard, we had the honour of being
" admitted to the Prince's table. Three genera-

Digitized by Google

"tions of Condé constituted the glory of the "family, a singular circumstance, which was re- "newed with a more striking effect in the army "of Condé, in which the grandfather fought in "the centre, while the son and grandson com- "manded the right and left, where they were, I "believe, both wounded, and on the same day.

"The Princess of Monaco had followed the "Prince of Condé; he married her afterwards, "but she then governed and did the honours "of his establishment. We had the opportunity "of hearing at that table, some of the guests "assert and re-assert to the Prince, that we "were already more than enough to enter France; "that his name and a white handkerchief were "sufficient; that the star of Condé was about to "shine forth once more; that the occasion was sin- "gularly happy, and that it was necessary to seize "upon it; and I would not pledge myself, that "adulation was not pushed so far as to suggest "very interested personal views to the Prince.

"Worms, from the nature of its meeting, and "the character of its chief, always evinced more "regularity, more austerity of discipline than "Coblentz, where there was a display of more "agitation, luxury, and pleasure. Worms was "accordingly called the *camp*, and Coblentz the "*town* or the *court*.

"The importance of the leader was in propor- "tion to the force under his command, and of "this the Prince of Condé was so sensible, that

Digitized by Google

" he never saw any one leave him without re-
" gret, and remembered it a long time. I was
" not, on that account, the less eager to go to
" Coblentz, the moment it acquired a certain
" degree of splendour. I had relations and friends
" there, and it was, besides, more attractive by
" greater magnificence, activity, and grandeur.
" Coblentz became in a short time a focus of foreign
" and domestic intrigues. Two distinct parties
" might be observed there; MM. d'Avaray, de
" Jaucourt, and some others, were the confiden-
" tial friends, the advisers or the ministers of
" Monsieur, now Louis XVIII. The Bishop of
" Arras, the Count de Vaudreuil, and others, were
" those of Monseigneur, the Count d'Artois; and
" it was confidently stated, that, even then, these
" princes manifested distinctly enough the same
" political differences which, it is pretended,
" have since characterized them. M. de Breteuil,
" resident at Brussels, and charged, according
" to his own declaration, with unlimited powers
" by Louis XVI., had formed a third party, and
" added to the complication of our affairs.

" M. de Calonne was relied on for our financial
" department, and the old Marshal de Broglie
" and the Marshal de Castries were at the head of
" our military establishment. The brave and able
" M. de Bouilly, who had left France after the
" affair of Varennes, found it impossible to re-

Digitized by Google

" main with us, and followed King Gustavus III.
" to Sweden.

" The emigration had, however, assumed a
" grand character, thanks to the care employed
" for its propagation. Agents had traversed the
" provinces, circulars had been distributed in the
" mansions and country-seats, summoning every
" gentleman to join the princes, and act in co-
" operation with them for the security of the altar
" and the throne, the revenge of their honour,
" and the recovery of their rights. An absolute
" crusade had been preached, and with so much
" more effect, as it made an impression on minds
" disposed to attend to it. Among the whole of
" the nobility and privileged classes there was
" not a single person, who did not feel himself
" cut to the quick by the decrees of the assembly.
" All, from him who filled the highest rank to
" the lowest country squire, had been deprived
" of what they held most dear; for the former
" had lost his title and his vassals, and the latter
" had seen his turret and his pigeon-house in-
" sulted, and his hares shot. Accordingly, the
" movement to begin the journey was immediate
" and universal; it could not be abandoned under
" the penalty of dishonour, and the women were
" directed to send spindles to those who hesitated,
" or were too tardy. Whether then from passion,
" pusillanimity, or a point of honour, the emi-

Digitized by Google

"gration became a real infection; multitudes "rushed furiously beyond the frontiers; and what "contributed not a little to increase the evil, was "the means employed by the leaders of the revo- "lution to promote it in secret, while they affected "to oppose it in public. They declaimed, in "vague terms, against it from the tribune, it is "true, but they took great care that all the pas- "sages should be left open. Did the zeal of the "emigrants slacken? The declaimers became "more violent, and it was decided that the bar- "riers should be strictly guarded. Then those "who had been left behind were reduced to "despair, because they had not taken advantage "of the favourable moment. But, accidentally, "or from inattention, the barriers were again "opened, and they were passed with eagerness "by those who were determined not to expose "themselves to another disappointment. It was "by this dextrous management that the assembly "assisted its enemies in plunging themselves into "the abyss.

"The able men of the faction had, from the "beginning, conceived that such a measure "would deliver them from the heterogeneous "parties that checked their progress, and that "the property of all these voluntary exiles would "secure to them incalculable resources. The "officers thought they did wonders in stealing "away from their regiments, while the leaders

Digitized by Google

" of the revolution, on their part, excited the " soldiers to revolt, in order to force them to it. " They got rid by these means, of enemies who " were highly dangerous, and obtained, on the " contrary, in the non-commissioned officers, " zealous co-operators, who became heroes in the " national cause; it was they who furnished great " captains, and who beat all the veteran troops " of foreign powers.

" The consequence was, that Coblentz collected " all that was illustrious belonging to the Court in " France, and all that was opulent and distin- " guished belonging to the provinces. We were " thousands, consisting of every branch, uniform, " and rank of the army; we peopled the town " and overran the palace. Our daily assemblages " about the persons of the princes, seemed like " so many splendid festivals. The Court was " most brilliant, and our princes were so effec- " tually its sovereigns that the poor Elector was " eclipsed and lost in the midst of us, which in- " duced a person to observe to him, very plea- " santly, one day, whether from perfect simpli- " city or keen raillery, that, among all those " who thronged his palace, he was the only " stranger.

" During the grand solemnities, we occasionally " had public galas; and the respectable inhabit- " ants were permitted to take a view of the tables. " We then exulted at witnessing the admiration

Digitized by Google

" expressed by the people of the country for the " pleasing countenance and chivalrous appearance " of Monseigneur the Count d'Artois, and we were " proud of the homage paid by them to the ac- " quirements and talents of Monsieur. It was " worth while to see with what arrogance we " paraded with us, as it were, the whole dig- " nity, the lustre of our monarchy, and, above all, " the superiority of our sovereign and the ele- " vation of our princes. *His Majesty the King*, " was the expression which we pompously used " in the German circles to designate the King of " France; for that was, or ought to be, in our opi- " nion, his title in point of pre-eminence with " respect to all Europe. The Abbé Maury, whom " we had at first received with acclamation, but " who, by the by, lost much of our esteem in a " very short time, had discovered, he assured us, " that such was his right and his prerogative. " Shall I give another instance of overweening " pride and conceit?

" At a later period, during our greatest disas- " ters, and when our cause was completely ruined, " an Austrian officer, of superior rank, charged " with despatches for the Court of London, invited " to dinner several of our officers, with whom he " had formerly been connected on the Continent. " After dinner, and very near the time when every " truth comes out, the company began to talk poli- " tics, and he happened to say that, on his departure

Digitized by Google

" from Vienna, one of the principal subjects of con-
" versation was the marriage of Madame Royale
" (now Duchess d'Angouleme) with the Archduke
" Charles, who at that moment enjoyed great
" celebrity. 'But it is impossible!' observed one
" of his French guests. 'And why?' 'Because
" it is not a suitable marriage for Madame.'—
" 'How!' exclaimed the Austrian, seriously of-
" fended, and almost breathless, 'His Royal High-
" ness Monseigneur, the Archduke Charles! not
" a suitable marriage for your Princess?' 'Oh!
" no, Sir, it would be but a garrison marriage
" for her!'

" Besides, these lofty pretensions were instilled
" into us with our education; they belonged to
" us as national sentiments, and our princes were
" not exempt from them. With us the King's
" brothers disdained the title of Royal Highness,
" they had the pretension of addressing all the
" sovereigns by the title of brother; the rest of
" the system was carried on in a proportionate
" way, and there was accordingly but one feeling
" in Europe, against our Versailles manners, and
" the presumption of our princes.

" Gustavus III. said, at Aix-la-Chapelle—
" 'Your Court of Versailles was not accessible; it
" indulged too much in haughtiness and ridicule.
" When I was there, there was scarcely any
" attention paid to me, and, when I left it, I
" brought away the titles of *booby* and *blockhead*.'

Digitized by Google

" The Duchess of Cumberland, who was mar-
" ried to the King of England's brother, had to
" complain, at the same time and in the same city,
" that the Princess de Lamballe did not grant her
" the honours of the folding doors.

" The old Duke of Gloucester complained, on
" his own account, at a later period in London, of
" one of our princes of the blood, and added,
" that the Prince of Wales laughed heartily, be-
" cause he, the Prince of Wales, addressing the
" same Prince by the title of Monseigneur, the
" latter studiously endeavoured to model his lan-
" guage so as not to return the compliment.

" At Coblentz, however, when our circum-
" stances were altered, our princes condescended
" to change their manners in that respect, and to
" let themselves down to the level of the foreign
" princes. They were then with the Elector of
" Treves, a Prince of Saxony, their mother's
" brother, whom, by way of parenthesis, we were
" at that time eating up, and who was afterwards
" deprived of his possessions on our account.
" They condescended to call him their *uncle*, and
" he was allowed to call them his *nephews*. It is
" confidently stated that he said to them one day,
" 'It is to your misfortunes that I am indebted for
" such affectionate expressions; at Versailles you
" would have treated me as plain M. l'Abbé, and
" it is not certain that you would have received
" my visits every day.' It was added, that he

Digitized by Google

"spoke the truth, and that they had given me-
"lancholy proofs of it to his brother, the Count
"de Luzace, who was present.

"The princes generally passed their evenings
"in the company of their intimate friends. One
"of them was, most of the time, at the house of
"Madame de Polastron, to whom he paid at-
"tentions that were justified by her constancy
"and her behaviour. Frequent attempts were
"made to destroy the intimacy, but in vain, for
"Madame de Polastron was above all the cabals
"employed for the purpose; and, in addition to
"her amiable manners and excellent conduct,
"was completely disinterested, and carefully
"avoided all interference in political affairs. She
"saw but very little company. I was indebted
"to a female relative for the pleasure of being
"admitted to it; but, as it was necessary to with-
"draw before the prince's arrival, I never had the
"honour of seeing him there.

"Monsieur passed his evenings at Madame de
"Balby's, dame d'atours to Madame. Madame
"de Balby, who was lively, witty, a warm friend
"and a determined enemy, attracted all the most
"distinguished characters. It was an honour to
"be admitted to her house, which was the centre
"of taste and fashion. Monsieur sometimes re-
"mained there until a late hour; and when, after
"the crowd had slipped away and the circle was
"contracted, he happened to be communicative,

Digitized by Google

" it must be confessed that he was as superior to
" us by the charms of his conversation as by his
" rank and dignity.

" So much for our manner of living and our
" outward appearance at Coblentz; this was the
" fair side of our situation; but we were less
" happy in a political point of view—that was the
" degrading side."

" Good!" said the Emperor, " I accordingly
" begin to find your drawing-room details too
" long. This is, however, excusable in you.
" The subject is a pleasing one to you. You were
" then young; but go on."

" Sire, the whole of our number was but a
" noble and brilliant mob, and presented the
" image of complete confusion. It was anarchy
" striving without, to establish, it was said, order
" within—a real democracy struggling for the re-
" establishment of its aristocracy. We presented,
" on a small scale, and merely with a few shades
" of difference, a copy of every thing that
" was passing in France. We had among us
" zealous adherents to our ancient forms, and
" ardent admirers of novelty; we had our con-
" stitutionalists, our intolerants, and our mode-
" rates. We had our empirics, who sincerely
" regretted that they had not made themselves
" masters of the King's person, for the purpose of
" acting with violence in his name, or who frankly
" avowed that they entertained the design of

Digitized by Google

"declaring his incapability. Finally, we had also "our jacobins, who wished, on their return, to "kill, to burn, to destroy every thing, &c. &c.

"No direct authority was exercised over the "multitude by our princes.—They were our so- "vereigns, it was true, but we were very unruly "subjects, and very easily irritated. We mur- "mured on every occasion, and it was particu- "larly against those who joined us last that our "common fury was directed. It was, we de- "clared, so much glory and good fortune of "which they deprived our exploits and our "hopes. Those who were once admitted con- "sidered every subsequent arrival too late. It "was maintained, that all merit on that score was "at an end. If all were continued to be received "in the same way, the whole of France would "soon be on our side, and there would no longer "be any person to punish, &c. &c.

"Denunciations of every kind, and from every "quarter, were then showered down upon those "who joined us. A *Prince de Saint-Maurice*, son "of the Prince de Montbarey, found it impossible "to resist the storm, although he had the formal "support of every distinguished character, and "that of the prince himself, who deigned to "employ supplication in his favour, and said, "'Alas! gentlemen, who is there that has not "faults to reproach himself with in the revolu- "tion? I have been guilty of several, and by

Digitized by Google

" your oblivion of them, you have given me the " right of interceding for others.' This did not " spare M. de Saint-Maurice the necessity of mak- " ing his escape as soon as possible. His crime " was that of having belonged to the society of the " friends of the negroes, and of having been vio- " lently attacked in the midst of us by a gentle- " man of Franche Comté, who denounced M. de " Saint-Maurice for having caused his mansions " to be burnt. It was, however, discovered, a few " days afterwards, that the brawling assailant had " no mansion, and was neither from Franche Comté, " nor a gentleman: he was a mere adventurer.

" *M. de Cazalès*, who had filled France and " Europe with the celebrity of his eloquence and " courage in the national assembly, had, notwith- " standing, lost the popular favour at Coblentz. " When he arrived at Paris, a report was spread " among us, that the princes would not see him, " or would give him an ungracious reception. " We collected eighty natives of Languedoc to " be, in opposition to his own wishes, a kind of " escort to him. M. de Cazalès was the honour " of our province; we conducted him to the " princes, by whom he was well received.

" A deputy of the third estate who had highly " distinguished himself in the constituent assem- " bly by his attachment to royalty, was among " us. One of our princes, addressing him one " day in the crowd, said, ' But, Sir, explain to

Digitized by Google

"me then.—You are so worthy a man, how could "you, at the time, take the oath of the *jeu de* "*paume?*' The deputy, struck dumb by the "attack, at first stammered out, that he had been "taken unawares .... that he did not foresee "the fatal consequences ....: But promptly "recovering himself, he replied with vivacity: 'I "shall, however, observe to Monseigneur, that "it was not that which led to the ruin of the "French monarchy, but in fact the union of "the nobility, which joined us in consequence "of the very persuasive letter written by Mon-"seigneur.'—'Stop there,' exclaimed the prince, "touching him gently on the stomach, 'be cool, "my dear Sir; I did not intend to vex you by "that question.'

"Something like a system of regularity, whe-"ther good or bad was, however, adopted in the "course of time. We were classed by corps "and by provinces; we had cantonments as-"signed to us, and were supplied with arms. "The king's body-guards were again formed, "clothed, equipped, and paid, and soon became "a superb corps in appearance and discipline. "The coalition of Auvergne and the marine corps, "part on foot and part on horseback, attracted "peculiar notice by its discipline, knowledge, "and union. Our resignation and self-denial "could not be too much admired. Each officer "was henceforth but a private soldier, subject to

Digitized by Google

"exercises and fatigues, very contrary to his "former manner of life, and exposed to the "greatest privations, for there was no pay, and "many of that number had shortly no resource "to depend on, but the contributions of their "more fortunate comrades. We deserved a bet-"ter fate, or to speak more correctly, we were "worthy of a better enterprize. All the officers "belonging to the same regiments had been col-"lected together in separate bodies, in order that "they might be ready to take the command of "their soldiers, who would not fail to join them, "as we thought, on their first seeing them. Such "was our delusion! It was from a similar motive, "that the gentlemen were classed according to "their respective provinces, no doubt being en-"tertained of their efficient influence over the "mass of the population. Our weakness con-"sisted in the conviction that we continued to "be desired, respected, and adored.

"All these bodies were publicly exercised and "manœuvred, and the diplomatic remonstrances "which were made on the subject were an-"swered with a confident assurance, that no "such thing existed, or that it certainly should "be prevented. We had generals nominated, "a staff formed, and every thing, which dis-"tinguishes head quarters, even to the office "of grand provost, arranged. Our princes "were gradually surrounded with all that con-

Digitized by Google

" stitutes a real government. They had minis-
" ters for the affairs of the moment, and even
" for France, when we should return, so certain
" and near at hand did that time appear.

" M. de Lavilleurnois, who was afterwards so
" much talked of, with respect to the share he had
" in a royalist conspiracy, and who died at Sinna-
" mary, in consequence of the events of Fructidor,
" was intrusted with the administration of the
" police. He set off at an early period to perform
" its duties clandestinely at Paris. He had con-
" ceived a sincere affection for me, and was deter-
" mined to make me his son-in-law. He made use
" of the most urgent arguments to induce me to
" follow him; but I refused; I disliked the nature
" of his office. Otherwise, what different com-
" binations in my destiny!

" We had also direct relations with almost every
" court. The princes had envoys at them, and
" received theirs at Coblentz. Monseigneur, the
" Count d'Artois, visited, I think, Vienna, but I
" can state with certainty that he was at Pilnitz.
" The nobility, in a body, addressed a letter to
" Catherine, from whom we received M. de
" Romansoff as ambassador. That Empress saw,
" with pleasure, the storm that was rising in
" the south of Europe; she cheerfully augmented
" a conflagration, which might prove very favour-
" able to her views, without putting her to any
" expense, and she accordingly shewed herself

Digitized by Google

"zealous in her sentiments, and ardent in her "promises. She did not despair, in that crisis, "of making a dupe of Gustavus III., whose con- "tiguous activity was troublesome to her; she "had prevailed upon him, it is said, to undertake "the crusade, by flattering him with the rank "of generalissimo. I do not know if this "prince, who certainly was a very superior cha- "racter for his time, and possessed a great share "of understanding and talent, suffered himself to "be deluded by her. It is, however, undeniable, "that he displayed great attachment to our cause, "and announced his wish to take the field in "person. When he left Aix la Chapelle to ar- "range his ultimate measures for that purpose in "Sweden, I heard him say, on taking leave of "the Princess de Lamballe, 'You will see me "again shortly, but I am, notwithstanding, "obliged, on my own account, to adhere to cer- "tain proceedings, to certain measures of caution; "for the part I have to play is of a very delicate "nature. Know, that I who am desirous of re- "turning to fight at the head of your aristocrats "in France, am, at home, the first democrat of "the country.'

"We also received envoys from Louis XVI., "who presented public messages in reprobation "of our conduct, and were admitted to confiden- "tial conferences, on subjects, perhaps, essen- "tially different. At least we acted as if that

Digitized by Google

" had been the case; openly declaring that he " was a captive, and that we ought to take no " notice of any of his orders; that we were bound " to take every thing he was compelled to say in " a contrary sense, and that, when he exhorted " us to peace, he was, in reality, calling upon us " to go to war. It is accordingly my opinion, " that we were very fatal to the tranquillity of the " unfortunate monarch, and that we had our " special share in the pardon, which he be- " queathed by his will in favour of his friends, " who, by an indiscreet zeal, as he observes, did " him so much injury.

" Our emigration, however, was prolonged in " spite of all the promises which were made to " us, and of all the hopes with which our fancy " was flattered. With what illusions, what idle " tales, what absurdities was our impatience " mocked! whether those who invented them " anticipated our disappointment, or were them- selves deceived. It was pleasantly calculated " that, according to our letters and gazettes, we " had, in less than eighteen months, raised nearly " two millions of men, who were on their march, " although we ourselves had seen none of them. " But those initiated in the mystery, assured us, " in special confidence that these troops marched " only by night, for the purpose of more effectually " surprising the democrats, or that they passed " in the day-time only by platoons and without

Digitized by Google

"uniform; or told us some other story of a "similar kind. On the other hand, we shewed "each other a heap of letters from all countries "and the best sources, written in an enigmatical "style, and which were thought to be intel- "ligible to us alone. One was acquainted that "50,000 Bohemian crystals had been just sent "off for his country; another was informed of an "approaching consignment of 10,000 pieces of "Saxon porcelain; and a third received intelli- "gence, that 25,000 bales of cocoa would be ad- "dressed to him, with other fooleries of the same "kind.

"How was it possible, I now enquire, that "men of understanding, for there certainly were "a great many among the number, that ancient "ministers, who had governed us, and others, "who were destined to succeed them, should be "gulled by such wretched stuff, or that the plain "good sense, which we possessed as a multitude, "did not make us laugh in their faces? But no; "we were not the less convinced, that we were "near the accomplishment of our hopes; that the "moment was at hand, that it would infallibly "happen; that we had only to show ourselves; "that we were eagerly expected, and that all "would fall prostrate at our feet."

Here the Emperor, who had often interrupted me with laughter and raillery, said, in a very serious tone, "How very faithful is the picture you have

Digitized by Google

" drawn? I recognise a crowd of your friends in
" it: Truly, my dear Las Cases, and I say it
" without meaning any offence to you, vapour-
" ing, credulity, inconsistency, stupidity itself,
" might be said, in spite of all their wit, to
" be their special lot. When I occasionally
" wished to be amused, and divested myself of
" all reserve, for the purpose of giving them full
" scope, and encouraging their confidence in me,
" I have heard, in the Tuileries, under the Con-
" sulate and the Empire, things no less ridicu-
" lous than those which you now notice. None
" of them ever entertained a doubt of any thing.
" The love of the French for their kings was cen-
" tered, they assured me, in my person. I could
" henceforth do what I pleased; I had a right to
" use my power; I should never meet with any
" other obstacle but a handful of incorrigible per-
" sons who were the detestation of all. That
" counter-revolution so much dreaded, observed
" another, was but child's play to me; I had
" effected it with the utmost ease. And (will
" this be believed?) 'the only thing wanting to
" it,' said he, in an insinuating tone, 'is the sub-
" stitution of the ancient white colour, for those
" which have done us so much injury in all
" countries.' The ideot! That was the only
" blot, which he could find in our escutcheon.
" I laughed our of sheer pity, although I felt some
" difficulty in restraining my feelings, but for his

Digitized by Google

" part, his sincerity was unquestionable; he was " fully persuaded, that he spoke as I thought; " and still more so, that the generality thought " as he did.* But go on."

" The appearance of the Duke of Brunswick at

* It is certainly an inherent weakness in our nature to deceive ourselves with respect to the sentiments that are entertained of us by others. At Coblentz, where we threw away so much money, where so many amiable and brilliant young men, more to be dreaded, no doubt, from an excess than a want of education, filled every house, and visited every family, it was natural to believe that we should be beloved, and accordingly we thought ourselves adored. Well! at the time of my exile at the Cape of Good Hope, I was placed by a singular chance under the guard of an inhabitant of Coblentz, who had witnessed the brilliant moments of our emigration. I felt great pleasure in renewing the subject with him. We could not have any secrets on that head to conceal from one another; twenty-five years had elapsed. Well, then, " you were not absolutely hated," said he, " but our real affection was reserved for your adver- " saries, for their cause was ours. Liberty had slipped in " among us through you. There in the midst of you, even un- " der your eyes, we had formed clubs, and God knows how often " we laughed in them at your expense, &c. &c." And it happened to him more than once, he assured me, when mingled with the crowd, which resounded with acclamations as we passed, to shout with a considerable number of his comrades, " Long live the French princes, and may they drink a little in " the Rhine! You spoke of the reception we gave you," said he, " it was that which we gave to Custine which you should have " seen! There you would have had an opportunity of appre- " ciating our real sentiments. We ran with enthusiasm to meet " him; we crowned his soldiers; a great number of us enlisted " in his army, and several of them became generals. As for " me, I missed the opportunity of making my fortune."

Digitized by Google

" Coblentz, and the arrival of the King of Prussia
" at the head of his troops, were great subjects
" of joy and expectation for the whole of the emi-
" gration. Heaven opens at length before us!
" was our exclamation, and we are about to re-
" turn to the land of promise. It was, however,
" the opinion of persons of judgment and expe-
" rience from the beginning, that our struggle
" would have the same result as all those that
" resembled it in history, and that we should be
" but instruments and pretexts for foreigners, who
" only pursued their private interest, and enter-
" tained no feeling for us.

" M. de Cazales, who had, in a short time,
" been much improved, expressed himself to
" that effect with much energy. We beheld,
" with delight, the Prussians, as they filed off
" through the streets of Coblentz, on their march
" to our frontiers. 'Foolish boys,' he exclaimed,
" you admire, with enthusiasm, those troops and
" all their train. You rejoice at their march; you
" ought rather to shudder at it. For my own
" part, I should wish to see these soldiers, to the
" last man of them, plunged in the Rhine. Un-
" happy are they who incite foreigners to in-
" vade their country! O my friends, the French
" nobility will not survive this atrocity! They
" will have the affliction of expiring far from the
" places of their birth. I am more guilty than any
" other, for I see it, and yet I act like all the rest;

Digitized by Google

"but my only excuse is, that I cannot prevent "the catastrophe. I repeat, unhappy they who "call in foreigners, and trust in them against their "country."

"How wise and oracular these last words! "Facts would have speedily convinced us of "their truth, had we been less infatuated, or had "the multitude been capable of reasoning and "acting with propriety; but we were destined "to enrich history with one of those lessons, "that are most entitled to the meditation of "mankind. We might be estimated at 20 or "25,000 men under arms; and certainly, such "a force filled with ardour and devotion, fighting "for its own interests, maintaining an under-"standing with the sympathetic elements of the "interior, acting against a nation, shaken to its "foundation, and convulsed by the agitation of "new rights, not yet established, and but imper-"fectly understood, might be capable of striking "decisive blows. But it was not upon our "strength, our success, our activity, that the "foreigners relied for the attainment of their "views. Accordingly, under the pretence of "employing that influence and of directing its "operation, as they said, against several points "at once, they annihilated us by parcelling out our "numbers, and by making, as it were, prisoners of "us in the middle of their different corps. In this "way, 6,000 of us, under the Prince of Condé,

Digitized by Google

" were marched against Alsace; 4,000 under the
" Duke de Bourbon were to act in Flanders, and
" from 12 to 15,000 continued in the centre under
" command of the King's two brothers, to co-
" operate in the invasion of Champagne.

" It had been the plan and wish of our princes,
" that Monsieur, as heir to the crown and the
" natural representative of Louis XVI., con-
" sidering his captivity, should proclaim himself
" regent of the kingdom, the moment he set foot
" on the French territory; that he should march
" with his emigrants at the head of the expe-
" dition, and that the allies, in his rear, should
" be considered only as our auxiliaries. But the
" allies treated the plan with derision, and con-
" fined us to a station at their tail, under the
" orders and at the will and pleasure of the
" generalissimo, Brunswick, who caused us to
" be preceded by the most absurd of manifestoes;
" from the ridicule and odium of which, how-
" ever, he at least preserved us.

" It is but just, however, to acknowledge, that
" this treatment had not escaped the foresight of
" some experienced and better advised heads
" among us. They had accordingly suggested,
" it was said, in the council of the princes, that
" we should throw ourselves, before the arrival
" of the allies, on some point of France and
" maintain a civil war there by ourselves. Others
" more desperate, or more ardent, were of opi-

Digitized by Google

"nion, that we should nobly seize upon the "states of the Elector of Treves, our bene- "factor; occupy the town and fortress of "Coblentz, and establish there a central point "of rallying, or of support, independent of the "Germanic body; and when we exclaimed "against such perfidy and ingratitude, their "answer was;—'Desperate evils called for des- "perate remedies.' It is impossible to say, what "might have been the result of such reso- "lutions, which were, however, more consistent "with the bold spirit of enterprize that cha- "racterizes the present times, than with the "state of manners as they then existed. They "were, therefore, unattended to, and besides the "opportunity had slipped by, we were too "closely involved in the midst of foreigners; we "were already in their power, and our destiny "was to be fulfilled! . . .

"The multitude of us was far from foresee- "ing the calamities, that were to attend us. "We began our march in high spirits. There "was not one of us, who did not expect to be, "within fifteen days from that moment, at "home, triumphant in the midst of his sub- "missive, humiliated and increased vassals. Our "confidence would not have endured a single ob- "servation or doubt upon that head. Of this "I am about to give an instance, which though "personal with respect to myself, and very

Digitized by Google

"trifling in itself, will not be the less characte-
"ristic with respect to us all. We were marching
"through the city of Treves; one of my grand
"uncles had, during the war of the succession,
"been the governor for Louis XIV. while we re-
"tained possession of it. I went to see his tomb,
"which is in a chapel, belonging to the Carthu-
"sians of that town. The ardour of my youth
"and the emotion of the moment, determined
"me to erect a small monument to his memory
"with a superb inscription, suitable to the cir-
"cumstances. I entertained no doubt of exe-
"cuting my wish. The good friars were of a
"different way of thinking; the prior wished me
"to arrange the matter with the abbé, a kind
"of bishop, and of German bishop. His reserve
"and coldness, in spite of his numerous coats of
"arms, prepossessed me very much against him,
"when I communicated my chivalrous project;
"but when, after some circumlocution, he de-
"clared, that under the present circumstances, . . .
"prudence . . . discretion . . . if the French
"were to enter the place. . . . At these last
"words, my indignation was extreme; it was
"such, that I did not wait to utter a single
"word in reply. I instantly hurried away,
"with a mingled laugh of contempt and anger,
"convinced that I had left the most horrible
"jacobin in existence behind me; and nothing,
"but my natural generosity and respect for

Digitized by Google

" my own character, could have prevented me " calling in my comrades, who would have cer- " tainly pulled down the chapel. But alas! " the abbot saw farther than I did! Three " weeks had not elapsed, before the republicans " were in Treves, the poor abbé put to flight, " and the ashes of my good uncle profaned by " the infidels. . . .

" But we had scarcely engaged in full oper- " ations; we had hardly set foot on French " ground; before it became no difficult matter, " except in cases of stupidity and blindness, to " comprehend, that it actually might be just " possible, that we had been the dupes of our " own folly. We found ourselves in the midst " of the Prussians, who fettered all our move- " ments; we could not take a step in advance, " to the right or left, without their permission, " and they never granted it. Our subsistence, " all our resources, depended solely upon their " will; we had the shame of presenting our- " selves as slaves on the soil, where we aspired " to reign.

" As to our countrymen, instead of receiv- " ing us as their deliverers, as we had been " convinced they would, they only gave us proofs " of dislike and aversion. With the exception " of a few country gentlemen or others who " joined us, the whole mass of the population " fled at our approach; we were treated as ene-

Digitized by Google

"mies, with the look of reproach and the stern "silence of reprobation. They seemed to say to "us, 'Do you not shudder then at thus staining "your country's soil? Are you not Frenchmen "by birth? Do your hearts then make no appeal "to you in favour of your native land? You say "you are wronged; but what wrong, what in- "jury ever gave to a son the right or the feeling "to tear open the bosom of a mother?: . . We "are told, that in ancient times a fiery patrician, "Coriolanus, was infamous enough to fight "against his country, but he had at least the "merit of uniting elevated sentiments with his "furious passion; he came forward with a vic- "torious arm; he imposed his own conditions; "*he* was not dragged along at the tail of bar- "barous foreigners; he commanded them, and "he also suffered himself to be moved to com- "passion. Can you be unsusceptible of that "tenderness, and do you not tremble at our "maledictions, which will be perpetuated on "you by our children? And, even in that case, "whatever may be your success, it will not equal "your sorrow! You pretend to come for the "purpose of governing, and you will have brought "your masters with you.'

"We were quartered in town at Verdun and "at Estain. Some of my comrades and myself "were lodged in a handsome house, but all the "furniture and all the proprietors had disap-

Digitized by Google

" peared, with the exception of two very pretty " young ladies, who put us in possession of it. " This last circumstance seemed a favourable " omen, we took the opportunity of remarking " it to them, and were desirous of ingratiating " ourselves by our politeness and attentions. " ' Gentlemen,' said one of the two amazons in " rather a sharp tone, ' we have remained, be- " cause we have felt we had the courage to tell " you face to face, that our lovers are in arms " against you, and that they have our prayers " at least as much as our hearts.' This was in- " telligible language, we wished for no more of " it, and even shifted our quarters to another " house.

" Be it as it may, we were at length in France, " and in the rear of that Prussian army, which " pushed forward its brilliant successes, leaving " us three or four marches behind. And whether " their object was to turn us into ridicule, be- " cause we had assured them, that all the towns " would throw open their gates on our appear- " ance, or to free themselves from our importu- " nities, they charged us with the siege of Thion- " ville. We made our approaches, and by a fan- " tastical singularity, the marine corps found " itself precisely opposed to the national volun- " teers of Brest. When they recognised each " other, it is impossible to describe the volley of

Digitized by Google

"invectives and insults that was instantly ex-
"changed.

"Thionville is, however, as it is known, one of
"the strongest places, and we found the reduc-
"tion of it impossible by our limited means,
"for we were in want of every thing; and it
"absolutely required an important negocia-
"tion to obtain two 24-pounders from the
"Austrians at Luxembourg. After a great
"deal of solicitation and hesitation, the two
"pieces were at length brought in triumph, and
"it was with that formidable train, that we sum-
"moned the place, and fired at night, in pure
"waste of powder, some hundreds of cannon
"shot. On my return from emigration, having
"fallen by chance into company with General de
"Wimphen who commanded the fortress, he
"asked me, 'what could have been our intention,
"or the meaning of the jest we had thus attempted
"to play off.' 'It was done, I believe,' said I,
"because reliance was placed upon you.' 'But
"even had that been the case,' said he, 'you
"still ought to have furnished me with an ex-
"cuse for surrendering; you could not expect,
"that I should solicit you to attack me.' 'Every
"thing was on a proportionate scale, the slightest
"sally spread confusion through all our forces, the
"most trifling circumstance was an event with us;
"the cause was obvious; we were unacquainted

Digitized by Google

" with every thing, and accordingly, putting " courage aside, I do not scruple to believe, that " a hundred picked men of the imperial guard " would have routed the whole of our army. " Happily, our adversaries were as ignorant as " ourselves, all were pigmies then, although in a " very short time giants were found every where.

" We remained very discontented with all this, " under our tents and on our bad straw; but *à* " *la Française*, we found relief in our gaiety; our " ill humour evaporated in puns and jests. All " our principal officers had nicknames, there was " not one, to our commander in chief, the " venerable Marshal de Broglie, who escaped " us, and this puts me in mind of a circumstance, " which gave rise to a nickname for one of his " lieutenants, of which he never got rid." (Should any of my comrades in the field ever read this, it may even now excite a laugh.)

" At the moment of a sally, which, as usual, " made us very uneasy, every one pressed for- " ward. We had two small pieces of cannon, " which we had bought, and which, for want of " horses, were drawn by the officers of artillery " themselves;" " Well!" observed the Emperor, " I might myself have been attached to these " very pieces, and yet what different combina- " tions in our destinies and in those of the world! " For it is incontestable that I have given an im-

Digitized by Google

" pulse and direction to it, emanating solely from " myself. But go on."

" Sire, our two small pieces were in progress " along the highway, when the general officer of " the day arrived at full gallop, and stopped with " indignation at the sight of our little cannon, as " they were drawn towards the fortress, with the " breech in advance.—' How,' exclaimed he, ' are " these really gentlemen, who draw their cannon " in this manner against the enemy? And, if he " were actually to present himself, how could " you contrive to fire upon him?' He persisted " in his blunder, refusing to comprehend what " the officers of artillery strove by every pos- " sible means to explain; that such was the man- " ner of acting every where, and that unless he " had some new invention to communicate, there " was no other mode to be adopted. From that " moment we dubbed him by a nickname, by " which he soon became universally known.

" But all this burlesque was soon exchanged " for what was serious in the extreme; the scene " shifted, as it were, by magic, and our misfor- " tunes burst upon us in an instant. Whether " from treachery, weakness, political interest, or " sickness in his army, from the real superiority " of force, or the mere dexterity of the French " general, the King of Prussia entered into secret " negociation with him, suddenly faced about,

Digitized by Google

" and marching to the frontier, evacuated the
" French territory. A most dreadful storm now
" burst over our heads; words are inadequate
" to express the scandalous treatment we expe-
" rienced, as well as the just indignation, which
" could not fail to animate every generous heart
" against our allies, the Prussians. Our princes
" degraded, disavowed, insulted by them; our
" equipages, our most necessary effects, even
" our linen, plundered; our persons ill-used: and
" thus we were basely driven and thrust beyond
" the frontiers by our friends, our allies!!!

" For my part, sinking under the fatigue of
" too long marches in the mud, and under tor-
" rents of rain; bending under a musquet and
" a load of accoutrements, hurtful only to my-
" self, I took advantage of my privelege as a
" volunteer, to leave the ranks, and effect my re-
" treat as well as I could. I proceeded, as
" occasion served; I never sought the common
" halting place; I took refuge in the nearest
" farm-yard, and whether it was my own peculiar
" good fortune, or because the peasants were in
" reality kind, and not exasperated against us, I
" passed the frontier without any unlucky acci-
" dent. It was not until some time afterwards,
" that I was enabled to form a correct estimate
" of the whole extent of the danger to which I
" had exposed myself, when I read in the papers,
" that from fifteen to eighteen of us, stragglers

Digitized by Google

"like myself, and some of whom stood near me "in the ranks, had been seized, dragged to Paris, "and executed in public, in a kind of auto-da-fé, "and as it were, by way of expiation.

"As soon as we were out of France, we "received notice to disband, but the intimation "was superfluous, for that measure was rendered "absolutely indispensable by our wants, and the "deprivation of every necessary article. We "dispersed ourselves, trusting our way to chance, "with despair and rage for our companions. "We travelled as fugitives, the greater part of "the time on foot, and some almost naked, over "the scenes of our past splendour and luxury; "happy when the doors were not shut in our "faces; when we did not receive a brutal repulse! "For one instant, we were officially driven from "every quarter; we were prohibited from re- "siding in, or from entering all the neigh- "bouring states; we were compelled to take "refuge in distant countries, and to exhibit, "throughout Europe, the spectacle of our mise- "ries, which ought to have been a grand moral "and political lesson to the people, to the great, "and to Kings."

"The exploits of the French exacted, however, "from foreigners, a cruel expiation of the in- "dignities with which they overwhelmed us; "whilst, on our part, we experienced a kind "of consolation in seeing the honour of the

Digitized by Google

"emigration take refuge in the army of Condé,
"which displayed itself to public view, and in-
"scribed itself in history, as a model of loyalty,
"valour, and constancy.

"Such, Sire, is that too celebrated era, that
"fatal determination, which, with respect to a
"great number, can be considered only as the
"delusion of youth and inexperience. None,
"however, but themselves, possess the right of
"reproaching them with the error. The senti-
"ments, by which they were actuated, were so
"pure, so natural, so generous, that they might
"even, were it necessary, derive honour from
"them; and these dispositions, I must say, be-
"longed to the mass of which we consisted, and
"more particularly to that crowd of country
"gentlemen, who, sacrificing all and expecting
"nothing, without fortune as well as without
"hope, displayed a devotion truly heroic, be-
"cause its only aim was the performance of
"duties, which they held to be sacred. In
"other respects, our defect lay in our political
"education, which did not teach us to distin-
"guish our duties, and made us dedicate to the
"prince alone what belonged to the country at
"large. Accordingly, in future times, when
"hostile passions shall be extinct, when no traces
"shall be left of jarring interests or of party
"infatuation and fury, what was doubtful with us,
"will be positive and clear to others; what was

Digitized by Google

" excusable or even allowable in us, who were " situated between an ancient order of things, that " was on the point of terminating, and a new one " that was about to commence, will be considered " highly culpable in those in possession of esta- " blished doctrines. Among them, the following " will be held as articles of faith:—1st. That the " greatest of all crimes is the introduction of a " foreign power into the heart of one's country. " 2dly. That the sovereignty cannot be erratic, " but that it is inseparable from the territory, " and remains attached to the mass of citizens. " 3dly. That the country cannot be transported " abroad; but that it is immutable and entire on " the settled soil, which has given us birth, and " which contains the bones of our ancestors. " Such are the grand maxims, and many others " besides, which will remain the offspring of our " emigration. Such the great truths, which will " be collected from our calamities!"

" Very well!" exclaimed the Emperor, " very " well! This is what is called being free from " prejudices! These are real philosophical views! " And it will be said of you, that you were " enabled to convert to your advantage the les- " sons of time and adversity."

" Sire, during our stay on board of the Nor- " thumberland, and the leisure hours of our " passage, the English alluded more than once " to this delicate topic. Misled by the war,

Digitized by Google

" which they had carried on with fury against " us, as well as by the maxims, with which the " interest of the moment filled their journals, " even in opposition to their national doctrines, " they conversed about the merits of the emigra- " tion, and the virtues they had witnessed; and " condemned the nation for having resisted it. " But when the arguments became too compli- " cated, or we were desirous of putting a sudden " stop to them, we gained our point with a single " word. We merely said to them:—' Go back " to the period of your own revolution; imagine " James II. threatening you from the opposite " shore, and under French banners; although " surrounded by faithful subjects, what would " you have done? And if Louis XIV. had brought " him back to London at the head of 50,000 " French, who should have afterwards main- " tained garrisons in your country, what would " have been your feelings?'—' Ah!.... But.... " Ah!.....' they exclaimed, endeavouring to " find out some difference, but not being able to " discover it, they laughed, and were silent." " And, in fact," said the Emperor, " there was " not a word to be said in reply." He then occupied himself, with his accustomed rapidity and talent, in taking a review of the different objects I had noticed, and stopped to reflect on the absurdity, the inconsistency, the great

Digitized by Google

mistake of our emigration, and the real injuries it had done to France, to the King, and to ourselves. "You have established, and consecrated "in political France," he observed, "a separa- "tion similar to that which the Catholics and "Protestants introduced into religious Europe; "and to what calamities has it not given rise? "I had succeeded in destroying its results, but "are they not on the point of being revived?" He next developed the means he had taken to annihilate that plague, the precautions he had been forced to adopt, and the effects which he had in view. How every thing that fell from his tongue was changed in its appearance;—how every thing seemed magnified in my eyes in proportion as he discussed the subject! "And "what," he remarked, "a peculiar singularity "in my situation, was, that in the whole of those "transactions I held the helm myself constantly "in the midst of rocks. Every one, judging "according to his own standard, attributed to "passion, to simple prejudice, or to littleness, "what in me, however, was but the consequence "of profound views, of grand conceptions, and "the most elevated state maxims. It might "have been said, that I reigned only over pig- "mies with respect to intellectual talent. I was "comprehended by none. The national party "felt only jealousy and resentment at what they

Digitized by Google

"saw me do in favour of the emigrants, and the "latter, on their part, were persuaded that I "sought only to gain fresh lustre by their assist-"ance. Poor people!...

"I obtained, however, my object, in spite of "reciprocal infatuation and prejudice, and I had "the satisfaction of leaving every thing quiet in "port, when I lanched out to sea in pursuit of "my grand enterprises."

N. B.—Having mentioned, since my return to Europe, these expressions of Napoleon, to a great officer of the crown, who had often the honour of conversing with him in private (Le Comte de S....), he related to me, in his turn, a conversation precisely on the same subject. Its coincidence with what has been just read, is so very striking as to induce me to insert it here. The Emperor said to him one day: "What, think you, is my reason "for endeavouring to have about me the great "names of the ancient monarchy?"—"Perhaps, "Sire, for the splendor of your throne, and for "the purpose of keeping up certain appearances "in the eyes of Europe."—"Ah! That is just "like you, with your pride and your prejudices "of rank! Well then! learn, that my victories "and my power are much better recommend-"ations for me in Europe than all your great "names, and that my apparent predilection for "them does me a great deal of injury, and "renders me very unpopular at home. You

Digitized by Google

" attribute to narrow views what relates to those " of a very extensive scope. I am engaged in " renovating a society, a nation, and the elements " I am obliged to employ are altogether re- " pugnant in their nature. The nobility and the " emigrants are but a point on the mass, and " that mass is hostile to them, and continues " very much exasperated against them; it hardly " forgives me for having recalled them. For my " own part, I considered it as a duty; but if I " suffer them to continue as a body, they may " one day be serviceable to foreign powers, " prove injurious to us, and subject themselves " to great dangers. My object then, is to dis- " solve their union, and to render them inde- " pendent of each other. If I place some of " them about my person, in the different branches " of administration, and in the army, it is for the " purpose of consolidating them with the mass, " and of managing so as to reduce all classes " into a whole; for I am mortal, and if I should " happen to leave you before that fusion was " accomplished, you would soon see what dis- " asters would arise from these heterogeneous " parts, and the dreadful perils of which certain " persons might become the victims! Thus, then, " Sir, my views are all connected with humanity " and elevated political considerations, and, in no " respect, with vain and silly prejudices."

When I observed to the person who related

Digitized by Google

this anecdote, how little we were acquainted at the Tuileries with Napoleon's real character, and the grand and excellent qualities of his soul and heart, he answered, that, for his own part, he had been personally more fortunate, and that he would give me a proof of it, which he selected out of ten: "The Emperor shewed himself, one "day, in his privy council, very much incensed "against General La F....., whom he attacked "with great severity, and whose opinions and "principles, he said, were capable of effecting "the complete dissolution of a state; becoming "animated by degrees, he, at length, put him-"self into a real passion. I was present as a "member of the council; I had been recently "admitted, and was little fashioned to the "Emperor's manners, and although stopped by "the two members placed next to me, I under-"took to speak in defence of the accused, "asserting, that he had been calumniated with "the Sovereign, and that he lived quietly on "his estate, with personal opinions which were "productive of no ill effect whatever. The "Emperor, still in a passion, resumed the charge "for the purpose of pressing it with vehemence; "but at the end of five or six words, he stopped "short, and addressing himself to me, said: "'But he is your friend, Sir, and you are "right.... I had forgotten it..... Let us speak "of something else.' 'And why,' I asked, 'did

Digitized by Google

"you not make us acquainted with all this at "the time?'—By a fatality which would seem "to belong to Napoleon's atmosphere, whether "from prejudice or otherwise, the impression on "our minds was, that it could only be told to "his intimate friends; for whoever had said "much about it, would only have passed for a "clumsy romancer of a courtier, who told not "what he believed to be true, but what he con-"ceived best suited to obtain favour and re-"wards."

Since I have mentioned this great officer of the crown, who is no less distinguished by the graces of his mind and the amenity of his manners, than by his exalted character, I shall notice one of his answers to Napoleon, remarkable for its ingenious and delicate flattery. The Emperor, at one of his levees, having been obliged to wait some time for his appearance, attacked him on his arrival, openly, in the presence of all. It happened to be precisely at the time, when five or six kings (and among others, those of Bavaria, Saxony, and Wurtemberg,) were at Paris. "Sire," replied the guilty courtier, "I have, no doubt, a million of excuses to make "to your Majesty, but at this time, one is not "at perfect liberty to go through the streets as "one pleases. I just now had the misfortune "to get into a *crowd of kings*, from which I "found it impossible to extricate myself sooner.

Digitized by Google

"This, Sire, was the cause of my delay." Every one smiled, and the Emperor contented himself with saying, in a very softened tone of voice: "Whatever, Sir, may be the cause, take "proper precautions for the future, and above "all, never make me wait again."

Napoleon's Sentimental Journey.—Public Spirit of the Time.—Events of the 10th of August.

3d.—The weather is somewhat improved; the Emperor attempted to take a walk in the garden. General Bingham and the Colonel of the 53d requested to see the Emperor, who kept them rather long. The appearance of the Governor put us all to flight. General Bingham disappeared, and, for our part, we went to the wood, for the purpose of keeping away from the spot.

The Emperor, during his walk, conversed a great deal about a journey which he took to Burgundy in the beginning of the revolution. This he calls his *Sentimental Journey* to Nuitz. He supped there with his comrade *Gassendi*, at that time captain in the same regiment, and who was advantageously married to the daughter of a physician of the place. The young traveller soon remarked the difference of political opinion between the father and son-in-law; the gentleman, Gassendi, was, of course, an

Digitized by Google

aristocrat, and the physician a flaming patriot. The latter found in the strange guest a powerful auxiliary, and was so delighted with him, that the following day at dawn he paid him a visit of acknowledgment and sympathy. The appearance of a young officer of artillery, with good logical reasoning and a ready tongue, was, observed the Emperor, a precious and rare accession to the place. It was easy for the traveller to perceive, that he made an impression in his favour. It was Sunday, and hats were taken off to him from the bottom of the street. His triumph, however, was not without a check. He went to sup at the house of a Madame Maret or Muret, where another of his comrades, V. . . . . ., seemed to be comfortably established. Here the aristocracy of the canton were accustomed to meet, although the mistress was but the wife of a wine merchant, but she had great property and the most polished manners; she was, said the Emperor, the duchess of the place. All the gentlefolks of the vicinity were to be found there. The young officer was caught, as he remarked, in a real wasp-hole, and it was necessary for him to fight his way out again. The contest was unequal. In the very heat of the action, the mayor was announced. "I believed him to be an assistance "sent to me by Heaven in the critical moment, "but he was the worst of all my opponents. I "see this villainous fellow now before me in his

Digitized by Google

" fine Sunday clothes, fat and bloated, in a large " crimson coat; he was a miserable animal. I " was happily preserved by the generosity of the " mistress of the house, perhaps by a secret sym- " pathy of opinion. She unceasingly parried " with her wit the blows which were dealt at " me; and was a protecting shield on which the " enemy's weapons struck in vain. She guard- " ed me from every kind of wound, and I have " always retained a pleasing recollection of the " services I received from her in that species " of skirmish.

" The same diversity of opinions," said the Emperor, " was then to be met with in every " part of France. In the saloons, in the streets, " on the highways, in the taverns, every one " was ready to take part in the contest, and no- " thing was easier than for a person to form an " erroneous estimate of the influence of parties " and opinion, according to the local situation in " which he was placed. Thus a patriot might " easily be deceived, when in the saloons, or " among an assembly of officers, where the ma- " jority was decidedly against him; but the in- " stant he was in the street, or among the sol- " diers, he found himself in the midst of the en- " tire nation. The sentiments of the day suc- " ceeded even in making proselytes among the " officers themselves, particularly after the cele- " brated oath *to the Nation, the Law, and the King.*

Digitized by Google

"Until that time," continued the Emperor, "had "I received an order to point my cannon against "the people, I have no doubt, that custom, pre- "judice, education, and the name of the King, "would have induced me to obey; but the "national oath once taken, this would have "ceased, and I should have acknowledged the "nation only. My natural propensities thence- "forth harmonized with my duties, and hap- "pily accorded with all the metaphysics of the "assembly. The patriotic officers, however, "it must be allowed, constituted but the smaller "number; but with the soldiers, as a lever, they "led the regiment and imposed the law. The "comrades of the opposite party, and the prin- "cipals themselves, had recourse to us in every "moment of the crisis. I remember, for instance, "having rescued from the fury of the populace a "brother officer, whose crime consisted in singing "from the windows of our dining saloon the cele- "brated romance of *O Richard! O mon Roi!* I "had little notion then, that that air would one "day be also proscribed in the same manner on "my account. Just so, on the 10th of August, "when I saw the palace of the Tuileries carried "by force and the person of the King seized "upon, I was certainly very far from thinking "that I should replace him, and that that palace "would be my place of residence."

In dwelling upon the events of the 10th of

Digitized by Google

August, he said; "I was, during that horrible "epoch, at Paris, in lodgings in the Rue du Mail, "Place des Victoires. On hearing the sound of "the tocsin, and the news which were circulated "of the assault upon the Tuileries, I ran to the "Carousel, to the house of *Fauvelet*, the brother "of Bourienne, who kept a furniture warehouse. "He had been my comrade at the military school "of Brienne. It was from that house, which, "by the by, I was never afterwards able to "find in consequence of the great alterations "effected there, that I saw all the particulars "of the attack. Before I reached the Carou- "sel, I had been met by a group of hideous look- "ing men, carrying a head at the end of a pike. "Seeing me tolerably well dressed, with the ap- "pearance of a gentleman, they called upon me to "shout *Vive la Nation!* which, as it may be easily "believed, I did without hesitation.

"The palace was attacked by the vilest rabble. "The King had unquestionably for his defence as "many troops as the convention afterwards had "on the 13th Vendemiaire, and the enemies of "the latter were much more disciplined and "formidable. The greater part of the national "guard shewed themselves favourable to the "King; this justice is due to them."

Here the grand marshal observed, "that he ac- "tually belonged to one of the battalions that "evinced the most determined devotion. He

Digitized by Google

" was several times on the point of being massa-
" cred as he returned alone to his residence." We remarked, on our part, that in general the national guard of Paris had constantly displayed the virtues of its class; the love of order, devotedness to authority, the dread of plunder, and the detestation of anarchy; and that also was the Emperor's opinion.

" The palace being forced, and the King receiv-
" ed within the bosom of the assembly," continued he, " I ventured to penetrate into the garden.
" Never since has any of my fields of battle given
" me the idea of so many dead bodies, as I was
" impressed with by the heaps of the Swiss;
" whether the smallness of the place seemed to
" increase the number, or that it was the result of
" the first impression I experienced of that na-
" ture. I saw well dressed women commit the
" grossest indecencies on the dead bodies of the
" Swiss. I went through all the coffee-houses
" in the neighbourhood of the assembly; the irri-
" tation was every where extreme; fury was in
" every heart and shewed itself in every coun-
" tenance, although the persons thus inflamed
" were far from belonging to the class of the po-
" pulace; and all these places must necessarily
" have been frequented daily by the same visitors,
" for although I had nothing particular in my
" dress, or perhaps it was because my face was
" more calm, it was easy for me to perceive, that

Digitized by Google

" I excited many hostile and distrustful looks, as " some one unknown or suspected."

Masked balls.—Madame de Mégrigny.—Piedmont and the Piedmontese.—Canals of France.—Dreams on Paris.—Versailles.—Fontainebleau, &c.

4th.—The weather was much improved. The Emperor ordered his calash, and walked very far until it took him up.

The conversation turned upon masked balls, of which the Emperor was peculiarly fond and frequently called for them. He was then always sure of a certain rendezvous which never failed to take place. He was, he said, regularly accosted every year, by the same mask, who reminded him of old intimacies, and ardently entreated to be received and admitted at court. The mask was a most amiable, kind, and beautiful woman, to whom many persons were certainly much indebted. The Emperor, who continued to love her, always answered;—" I do " not deny, that you are charming, but reflect a " little upon your situation; be your own judge " and decide. You have two or three husbands, " and children by several of your lovers. It " would have been thought a happiness to have " shared in the first fault; the second would " have caused pain, but still it might be par- " doned; but the sequel—and then, and then! . . . " Be the Emperor and judge; what would you

Digitized by Google

" do in my place, I who am bound to revive and " maintain a certain decorum." The beautiful suitor either did not reply, or said;—" at least " do not deprive me of hope;" " and deferred her " claims of happiness to the following year. And " each of us," said the Emperor, " was punctual " at the new rendezvous."

The Emperor took great pleasure in getting himself insulted at these balls. He laughed heartily at Cambacérès, one day at being told by a Madame de St. D . . . ., " that there were " people at the ball who ought to be turned out, " and that they certainly could not have got ad- " mittance without stolen tickets."

Another time, he forced the tender and timid Madame de Mégrigny to rise and retire in anger, and with tears in her eyes, complaining that the freedom, allowed at a masked ball, had, in her instance, been sadly abused. The Emperor had just put her in mind of a very remarkable favour, which he had formerly granted to her, and added, that every one thought she had paid for it by the exercise of the lord's right. " But there " was," said the Emperor, " nobody but myself " who could say so, without insulting her; be- " cause, although such was the report, I was " certain of its falsehood." The following is an account of the circumstance.

When the Emperor was on his way to be crowned at Milan, he slept at Troyes. The au-

Digitized by Google

thorities were presented to him; and with them was a young lady, on the point of being married, with a petition, intreating his protection and assistance. As the Emperor was, besides, desirous of doing something, which might produce a good effect, and prove agreeable to the country; the circumstance appeared favourable, and he took advantage of it with all imaginable grace. The young lady (Madame de Mégrigny) belonged to the first families of this province, but which had been completely ruined by the emigration. She had scarcely returned to the miserable abode of her parents, when a page arrived with the Emperor's decree, which put them in possession of 30,000 francs rent or more. The effect of such a proceeding may be well imagined. However, as the young lady was very charming and perfectly handsome, it was decided, that her fascinations had some share in his gallantry, although he left the town a few hours afterwards, and never thought more of the thing; but the general opinion was not a jot altered on that account. It is well known, how stories are formed; and as she married one of his equerries, and had consequently come to court, all this had been so well mingled together, that when she was appointed sub-governess to the King of Rome, the choice shocked for a moment, the austere Madame de Montesquieu, who suspected, said the Emperor, that it was but a mere arrangement.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor said, that he renewed at Turin, in the person of Madame de Lascaris, the gracious gallantry exercised at Troyes; and that in both instances he had reason to be gratified with the fruits of his liberality. The two families gave every possible proof of attachment and gratitude.

We inquired what might have been the sentiments of Piedmont with regard to himself. He had, he said, a particular affection for that province. M. de Saint-Marsan, on whose fidelity he relied to the end, had assured him at the period of our reverses, that the country would shew itself one of his best provinces.

"In fact," continued the Emperor, "the Piedmontese do not like to be a small state; their king was a real feudal lord, whom it was necessary to pay court to, or to dread. He had more power and authority than I, who, as Emperor of the French, was but a supreme magistrate, bound to see the laws executed, and incompetent to dispense with them. Had I it in my power to prevent the arrest of a courtier for debt? Could I have put a stop to the regular action of the laws, no matter upon whom they operated?" &c. &c.

During the conversation at dinner, the Emperor inquired whether the quantity of river water which flowed into the Mediterranean and the Black Sea, had been calculated. This led

Digitized by Google

him to express a wish, that a calculation of the fluvial water of our Europe should be made, and that the proportion contributed by each torrent and water-fall, should be ascertained. He regretted much, that he had not presented that series of scientific questions. That was, he observed, his grand system, did any useful, curious or interesting question suggest itself to him; "I "proposed, at my levees, or in my familiar com- "munications, analogous questions to my mem- "bers of the institute, with orders to resolve "them. The solution became the subject of "public inquiry; it was analyzed, contested, "adopted and rejected; and there is nothing "which cannot be accomplished in this way. "It is the grand lever of improvement for a "great nation, that posseses a great deal of in- "telligence, and a great deal of knowledge."

The Emperor also observed on this subject, that geography had never been so successfully cultivated as at present, and that his expeditions had contributed somewhat to its improvement. He afterwards noticed the canals, which he had caused to be made in France, and particularly mentioned that from Strasburg to Lyons, in which, he hoped sufficient progress had been made, to induce others to complete it. He thought, that out of thirty millions, twenty-four must have been already expended.

"Communications are now established in the

Digitized by Google

"interior from Bordeaux to Lyons and Paris. "I had constructed a great number of canals, "and projected a great many more." One of us having observed, that a proposal for the construction of a very useful canal had been submitted to the Emperor; but that measures had been taken to deceive him, for the purpose of preventing his acceptance of the offer. "Without doubt," said the Emperor, "the plan must have appeared "advantageous only on paper; but I suppose it "would have been necessary to advance money, "which was drawn from me with difficulty."— "No, Sire, the refusal was but the effect of an "intrigue. Your majesty was deceived." "It was "impossible with respect to such a subject. You "speak without sufficient information." "But I "am confident of it. I was acquainted with "the plan, the offers and the subscribers; my "relations had put down their names for con- "siderable sums. The intended object was "the union of the Meuse with the Marne. The "extent of the canal would have been less than "seven leagues." "But you do not tell us all, it "was, perhaps, required, that I should grant "away immense national forests in the environs, "which I should not have agreed to." "No, Sire, "the whole was an intrigue of your board of "bridges and roads." "But even then, it was ne- "cessary for them to allege some reasons, some "appearance of public interest. What reasons

Digitized by Google

"did they assign?" "Sire, that the profits would "have been too considerable." "But in that "case the plan ought to have been submitted to "me in person, and I would have carried it into "execution. I repeat, that you are not justified "by the facts; you are speaking now to a man "upon the very subject, which constantly en- "gaged his attention. The board of bridges and "roads were, on their part, never happier than "when they were employed. There never was "an individual, who proposed the construction "of a bridge, that was not taken at his word. If "he asked for a toll for twenty-five years, I was "disposed to grant him one for thirty. If "it cost me nothing, it was a matter of indiffer- "ence whether it would prove useful. It was "always a capital with which I enriched the soil. "Instead of rejecting proposals for canals, I "eagerly courted them. But, my dear Sir, there "are no two things that resemble each other so "little as the conversation of a saloon, and the "consideration of an administrative council. The "projector is always right in a saloon; his pro- "jects would be magnificent and infallible, if he "were listened to, and if he can, by some little "contrivance, but connect the refusal, under "which he suffers, with some bottles of wine, "with some intrigue carried on by a wife or a "mistress, the romance is complete, and that is "what you probably heard. But an administra- "tive council is not to be managed so, because it

Digitized by Google

" comes to no decision but on facts and accurate " measurement. What is the canal you men- " tioned? I cannot be unacquainted with it."— " Sire, from the Meuse to the Marne, a distance " of seven leagues only." "Very well! my dear " Sir, it is from the Meuse to the Aisne you mean " to say, and it would have been less than seven " leagues. I shall soon recollect all about it; " there is, however, but one little difficulty to " overcome, and that is, that at this very instant " it is doubtful whether the project be practic- " able. There, as in other places, Hippocrates " says *yes*, and Galen says *no*. Tarbé maintained, " that it was impossible, and denied, that there " was a sufficiency of water at the points of se- " paration. I repeat, that you are speaking to " him, who, of all others is the most attentive to " these objects, more especially in the environs " of Paris. It was the subject of my perpetual " dreams, to render Paris the real capital of " Europe. I sometimes wished it, for instance, to " become a city with a population of two, three, " or four millions, in a word, something fabulous, " colossal, unexampled until our days, and with " public establishments suitable to its popula- " tion."

Some one having then observed, that if Heaven had allowed the Emperor to reign sixty years, as it had Louis XIV., he would have left many grand monuments. " Had Heaven but granted " me twenty years, and a little more leisure," re-

Digitized by Google

sumed the Emperor with vivacity, "ancient Paris "would have been sought for in vain; not a trace "of it would have been left, and I should have "changed the face of France. Archimedes pro- "mised every thing, provided he was supplied "with a resting place for his lever; I should have "done as much, wherever I could have found a "point of support for my energy, my perse- "verance, and my budgets; a world might be "created with budgets. I should have displayed "the difference between a constitutional Em- "peror and a King of France. The Kings of "France have never possessed any administrative "or municipal institution. They have merely "shown themselves great lords who ruined their "men of business.

"The nation itself has nothing in its character, "but what is transitory and perishable. Every "thing is done for the gratification of the moment "and of caprice, nothing for duration. . . . . "That is our motto, and it is exemplified by our "manners in France. Every one passes his life "in doing and undoing; nothing is ever left be- "hind. Is it not unbecoming, that Paris should "not possess even a French theatre, or an opera "house, in any respect worthy of its high claims?

"I have often set myself against the feasts "which the city of Paris wished to give me. "They consisted of dinners, balls, artificial fire- "works, at an expense of 4, 6, and 800,000 francs;

Digitized by Google

"the preparations for which obstructed the "public for several days, and which afterwards "cost as much to take away as they had in their "construction. I proved, that with these idle "expenses, they might have erected lasting and "magnificent monuments. . . . .

"One must have gone through as much as I "have, in order to be acquainted with all the "difficulty of doing good. If the business re- "lated to chimneys, partitions, and furniture for "some individuals in the imperial palaces, the "work was quick and effectual; but if it was "necessary to lengthen the garden of the Tuileries, "to render some quarters wholesome, to clean "some sewers, and to accomplish a task bene- "ficial to the public, in which some particular "person had no direct interest, I found it re- "quisite to exert all the energy of my character, "to write six, ten letters a day, and to get into "a downright passion. It was in this way, that "I laid out as much as 30 millions in sewers, for "which no body will ever thank me. I pulled "down a property of 17 millions in houses in "front of the Tuileries, for the purpose of form- "ing the Carousel, and throwing open the Louvre. "What I did is immense; what I had resolved to "do, and what I projected, were still much more "so."

A person then remarked, that the Emperor's labours had not been limited either to Paris or to

Digitized by Google

France, but that almost every town in Italy supplied instances of his creative powers. Every where one travelled, at the foot as well as on the top of the Alps, on the sands of Holland, on the banks of the Rhine, Napoleon, always Napoleon was to be seen.

In consequence of this remark, he observed, that he had determined on draining the Pontine marshes; "Cæsar," he said, "was about to undertake it, when he perished." And returning to France, "The kings, he said, had too many "country houses and useless objects. Any impartial historian will be justified in blaming "Louis XIV. for his excessive and idle expenditure at Versailles, involved as he was in wars, "taxes, and calamities. He exhausted himself "for the purpose of forming after all but a "bastard town." The Emperor then analyzed the advantages of an administrative town, that is to say, calculated for the union of the different branches of administration, and they seemed to him truly problematical.

I have here great cause to regret, that I did not note down the series of those reasons, they were so numerous, so ingenious! At present, I am precluded by the fidelity, which is due to my narrative, from attempting to throw them into any kind of order. This is, however, a regret, which I have unfortunately but too frequent occasions to renew. If numerous breaks are perceived in

Digitized by Google

the Emperor's reasoning, and more particularly in the connection of his explanations; it is because, at Saint Helena, I took my notes in a hasty manner, and trusted to my memory for the proper understanding and arrangement of them at a seasonable time, or also because I contented myself with abbreviations and hieroglyphic signs. I also knew, that I was at the source, but now I find, that the meaning has escaped my memory, or that I can no longer trace it in my own signs. This must be my excuse for many omissions.

The Emperor did not conceal his opinion, that the capital was not, at times, a fit residence for the sovereigns; but in another point of view, Versailles was not suitable to the great, the ministers and the courtiers. Louis XIV. therefore committed a fault, if he undertook to build Versailles solely for the residence of the kings, when Saint Germain was, in every respect, ready for the purpose; nature seemed to have made it expressly for the real residence of the kings of France. Napoleon himself had committed faults in that respect. He ought, for instance, to have given up Compiegne, and he regretted having celebrated his marriage there instead of selecting Fontainebleau. "That," said he, in repeating the word Fontainebleau, "is the real abode of kings, the "house for centuries; it is not, perhaps, strictly "speaking, an architectural palace; but it is, "unquestionably, well calculated and perfectly

Digitized by Google

"suitable. It was certainly the most com-
"modious and the most happily situated in
"Europe for the sovereign," &c.

He then took a review of the capitals he had visited, of the palaces he had seen, and claimed a decided superiority in our favour. Fontainebleau, he further added, was also, at the same time, the most suitable political and military situation. The Emperor reproached himself with the sums he had expended on Versailles, but yet it was, he said, necessary to prevent it from falling into ruins. The destruction of a considerable part of that palace was a subject of consideration, during the revolution; it was proposed to take away the middle, and thus to separate the two sides. "It would have been of
"essential service to me," he observed; "for
"nothing is so expensive or so truly useless as
"this multitude of palaces; and if, notwithstand-
"ing, I undertook that of the King of Rome, it
"was because I had views peculiar to myself;
"and besides, in reality, I never thought of doing
"more than preparing the ground. There I
"should have stopped.*

* All the world knows, or ought to have known (if, by a fatality, altogether peculiar to Napoleon, the greater part of his most commendable actions had not been, at the time, stifled under the weight of malignity and libels), the history of that miserable hut, wedged in within the circumference of the palace of the King of Rome; the proprietor of which demanded suc-

Digitized by Google

"My errors, in disbursements of this kind, "could not, after all, be very great. They were, "thanks to my budgets, observed and neces- "sarily corrected every year, and could never "exceed a small part of the expense occasioned "by the original fault."

The Emperor assured us, that he experienced every possible difficulty in making his system of budgets intelligible, and in carrying it into execu- "tion. Whenever a plan to the amount of thirty "millions, which suited me, was proposed; "granted, was my answer, but to be wound up "in twenty years, that is to say, at 1500,000 "francs a-year. So far, all went on very smoothly; "but what am I to get, I added, for my first year? "For if my expenditure is to be divided into "parts, it is, however, my determination to have "the result, the work entire and complete. In "this manner, I wished at first for a recess, an "apartment, no matter what, but something per- "fect for my 1500,000 francs. The architects "seemed resolved not to comprehend my mean-

---

cessively ten, twenty, fifty, and one hundred times its real value. When he reached that ridiculous price, the Emperor, from whom directions in that respect, were taken, suddenly commanded a stop to be put to all further bargains, exclaiming, that that wretched stall in the midst of all the magnificence of the palace of the King of Rome, should be, after all, the *Vine of Naboth*, the most decisive testimony of his justice, the noblest trophy of his reign.

Digitized by Google

" ing; it narrowed their expansive views and " their grand effects. They would, at once, have " willingly erected a whole façade, which must " have remained for a long time useless, and " thus involved me in immense disbursements, " which, if interrupted, would have swallowed " up every thing.

" It was in that manner, which was peculiar " to myself, and in spite of so many political " and military obstacles, that I executed so " many undertakings. I had added forty millions " to the Crown effects, of which four millions, " at least, consisted of silver plate. How many " palaces have I not repaired? Perhaps, too " many; I return to that subject. Thanks to " my mode of acting, I was enabled to inhabit " Fontainebleau, within one year after the repairs " were begun, and it cost me no more than " 5 or 600,000 francs. If I have since expended " six millions on it, that was merely the result " of six years. It would have cost me much " more in the course of time. My principal " object was to make the expense light and " imperceptible, and to give durability to the " work.

" During my visits to Fontainebleau," said the Emperor, " from 12 to 1500 persons were in- " vited and lodged, with every convenience, " upwards of 3,000 might be entertained at din- " ner, and this cost the Sovereign very little, in

Digitized by Google

"consequence of the admirable order and re-
"gularity established by Duroc. More than
"twenty or five-and-twenty princes, dignitaries,
"or ministers were obliged to keep their house-
"holds there.

"I disapproved of the building of Versailles;
"but in my notions respecting Paris, and they
"were occasionally gigantic, I thought of making
"it useful and of converting it, in the course of
"time, into a kind of fauxbourg, an adjacent site,
"a point of view from the grand capital; and
"for the purpose of more effectually appro-
"priating it to that end, I had conceived a plan,
"of which I had a description sketched out.

"It was my intention to expel from its beau-
"tiful thickets those nymphs, the productions
"of a wretched taste, and those ornaments *à la*
"*Turcaret*, and to replace them by panoramas,
"in masonry, of all the capitals, into which we
"had entered victorious, and of all the cele-
"brated battles, which had rendered our arms
"illustrious. It would have been a collection
"of so many eternal monuments of our triumphs
"and our national glory, placed at the gate of
"the capital of Europe, which necessarily could
"not fail of being visited by the rest of the
"world." Here he suddenly left off, and began reading le Distrait, but he almost instantly laid it aside, whether from the agitation of his own thoughts, or from a nervous cough, with which

Digitized by Google

he had, for a short time, been often affected after dinner. He certainly gets considerably worse, and his health is altogether declining.

Plan of a History of Europe.—Selim III.—Forces of a Turkish Sultan.—The Mamelukes.—On the Regency.

5th.—The Emperor did not go out until after five o'clock. He was in pain, and had taken a bath, where he remained too long, in consequence of the arrival of Sir H. Lowe, as he would not leave it, until the Governor disappeared.

The Emperor had read, while in the bath, two volumes of the Ottoman History. He had conceived the idea, and regretted that he had been unable to execute it, of having all the histories of Europe, since Louis XIV., composed on the very documents, belonging to our foreign affairs, which contained the official reports of all the ambassadors.

"My reign," he observed, "would have been "a perfect epoch for that object. The supe- "riority of France, its independence, and re- "generation, enabled the actual government to "make such a publication, without inconve- "nience. It would have resembled the publica- "tion of ancient history. Nothing could have "been more valuable."

He next adverted to Sultan Selim III., to whom, he said, he once wrote: "Sultan, come

Digitized by Google

"forth from thy seraglio; place thyself at the "head of thy troops, and renew the glorious "days of thy monarchy."

"Selim, the Louis XVI. of the Turks," said the Emperor, "who was very much attached "and very favourable to us, contented himself "with answering, that the advice was excellent "for the first princes of his dynasty; but that "the manners of those times were very different; "and that such a conduct would, at present, "be unseasonable, and altogether unproduc- "tive."

The Emperor added, however, that nobody knew how to calculate, with certainty, the energy of the sudden burst, which might be produced by a Sultan of Constantinople, who was capable of placing himself at the head of his people, of infusing new spirits into them, and of exciting that fanatical multitude to action. At a later period, he observed, that, for his own part, if he had been able to unite the Mamelukes with his French, he should have considered himself the master of the world. "With that chosen "handful, and the rabble," he added, with a smile, "recruited on the spot, to be expended "in the hour of need, I know nothing that "could have resisted me. Algiers trembled "at it.

"'But should your Sultan,' said one day, the "Dey of Algiers to the French Consul, 'ever take

Digitized by Google

"it into his head to pay us a visit, what safety "could we hope for? For he has defeated the "Mamelukes.' The Mamelukes," observed the Emperor, "were, in fact, objects of veneration "and terror throughout the east; they were "looked upon as invincible until our time."

The Emperor, while waiting for dinner in the midst of us, opened a book, which lay at his side on the couch; it was the Regency. He stigmatized it as one of the most abominable eras of our annals; and was vexed, that it had been described with the levity of the age, and not with the severity of history. It had been strewed with the flowers of fashionable life, and set off with the colouring of the graces, instead of having been treated with exact justice. The Regency, he observed, had been, in reality, the reign of the depravity of the heart, of the libertinism of the mind, and of the most radical immorality of every species. It was such, he said, that he believed in all the horrors and abominations with which the manners of the regent were reproached in the bosom of his own family; while he did not give credit to the stories told of Louis XV., who, although plunged in the foulest and most frightful debauchery, did not, however, leave any grounds to justify his belief in such shocking and monstrous indulgencies; and he vindicated him very satisfactorily from certain imputations, which would have seriously affected

Digitized by Google

the person of one of his (Napoleon's) former aides-de-camp. He considered the epoch of the regent to have been the overthrow of every kind of property, the destruction of public morals. Nothing had been held sacred either in manners or in principles. The regent was personally overwhelmed with infamy. In the affair of the legitimated princes, he had been guilty of the lowest baseness, and of great abuse of authority. The king alone could sanction such a decision, and he, the regent, had felt pleasure in gratuitously dishonouring himself in the person of his wife, the natural daughter of Louis XIV., whom he had found it his interest, however, to marry, while that king was on the throne, &c. &c.

6th.—As we wished to try the tent, which was just finished, the table was laid there, and we invited the English officers, who had superintended the work, to breakfast with us.

The Emperor sent for me to his apartment; he dressed himself, and when he went out, I accompanied him to the bottom of the wood, where we walked for some time. He entered into the consideration of some important objects . . . . . &c. &c.*

* I have already felt it necessary to observe, that in preparing my journal at Longwood, circumspection and prudence often required me to give a mysterious turn of expression to my thoughts. At present, in consequence of the length of time that has elapsed, since I made my notes, and of the different

Digitized by Google

The Emperor returned to the calash for the purpose of ordering it to be in readiness, and we resumed our walk, until it took us up. On our return, the Emperor visited the tent, and said a few words, expressive of his satisfaction to the officer and seamen, who were employed in putting the last hand to it.

Campaigns of Italy, &c.—Epoch of 1815, *&c.—Gustavus III.—Gustavus IV.—Bernadotte.—Paul I.*

7th.—After breakfasting in the tent, the Emperor took a fancy to review some chapters of the Campaigns of Italy; he sent for my son, whose foot was at length much better, and whose eyes were in an improved state. He finished the chapters of Pavia and Leghorn. He afterwards walked towards the bottom of the wood, having ordered the carriage to follow. On the way, the Emperor said, that he considered the campaigns of Italy and Egypt as completely finished, and in a fit state to be given to the public, and it would, no doubt, he remarked, be a very agreeable present to the French and Italians; it was the record of their glory and their rights, &c. He did not

situations in which I have been placed, I find many things which I am no longer able to explain to my satisfaction. For instance, there were in this place initials and other characters, of the true meaning of which, I cannot, notwithstanding every possible effort, form the slightest idea.

Digitized by Google

think, however, that he ought to put his name to it, and he repeated, that the different epochs of his memoirs would consecrate those of his faithful companions, &c.

On the arrival of the calash, the conversation, continuing on the same subject, he was earnestly pressed to finish 1815; and its importance, interest, and results, were warmly canvassed. "Very "well!" said he, with a smile, "I must give my- "self up to it entirely, it is a pleasure to be en- "couraged; but it is also requisite to go to work "with a proper temper. We are surfeited here "with disgust and trickery; we seem to be "envied the air we breathe."

He returned to his apartment, and I followed him, when a conversation peculiarly interesting and remarkable took place. It related to Gustavus III., to Sweden, to Russia, to Gustavus IV., to Bernadotte, to Paul I., &c. &c.

I have said, that, at Aix-la-Chapelle, Gustavus III. lived among us as a simple individual under the name of le Comte de Haga. He constituted the charm of society, by the vivacity of his wit and the interest he imparted to his recitals. I had heard from his own mouth *his famous revolution* of 1772, and I was in the happiest situation to obtain a thorough knowledge of that epoch of the history of Sweden. I was, at the same time, very well acquainted with a Baron de Sprengporten, who, after having displayed great zeal for

Digitized by Google

Gustavus, had the misfortune to go to Russia, and return at the head of foreigners to fight against his country. The consequence was, that sentence of death had been passed upon him in Sweden. He was also at Aix-la-Chapelle at the moment, and had banished himself from it, out of courtesy, he said, on the arrival of Gustavus. He had not, however, removed farther off than half a league, so that all I heard the King say in the evening, was controverted, modified, or confirmed for me the next morning at breakfast by the Baron. He had enjoyed a very considerable share of that Prince's confidence, and he communicated the most numerous and minute particulars, as positive facts, respecting the romance of the birth of Gustavus IV., who had been represented as altogether unconnected by blood with Gustavus III., according to his full knowledge and his own desire.

The Emperor observed, that this same Sprengporten had been actually sent to him as envoy by Paul, at the time of his consulate. With respect to Gustavus IV., he said, that that Prince had on his appearance in the world, announced himself as a hero, and had terminated his career merely as a madman, and that he had distinguished himself in his early days by some very remarkable traits. While, yet under age, he was seen to insult Catharine by the refusal of her grand-daughter, at the moment even, when that

Digitized by Google

great Empress, seated on her throne, and surrounded by her court, waited only for him to celebrate the marriage ceremony.

At a later period, he had insulted Alexander, in no less marked a manner, by refusing, after Paul's catastrophe, one of the new Emperor's officers entrance into his territory, and by answering to the official complaints addressed to him on this subject, that Alexander ought not to be displeased, that he, Gustavus, who still wept for the assassination of his father, should shut the entrance of his states against one of those, accused by the public voice of having immolated his (Alexander's).

"On my accession to the sovereignty," said the Emperor, "he declared himself my great antago-
"nist; it might have been supposed, that nothing
"short of renewing the exploits of the great Gus-
"tavus Adolphus would have satisfied him. He
"ran over the whole of Germany, for the purpose
"of stirring up enemies against me. At the time
"of the catastrophe of the Duke d'Enghein, he
"swore he would exact vengeance in person; and
"at a later period, he insolently sent back the
"black eagle to the King of Prussia, because the
"latter had accepted my legion of honour,
"&c. &c.

"His fatal moment at length arrived; a con-
"spiracy, of no common kind, tore him from the
"throne and transported him out of his states.

Digitized by Google

"The unanimity evinced against him is, no doubt, "a proof of the wrongs he had committed. I am "ready to admit, that he was inexcusable and "even mad, but it is, notwithstanding, extra-"ordinary and unexampled, that, in that crisis, "a single sword was not drawn in his defence, "whether from affection, from gratitude, from "virtuous feeling, or even from mere simplicity, "if it must be so; and truly, it is a circumstance, "which does little honour to the atmosphere of "Kings."

This prince tossed about and deceived by the English, who wished to make him their instrument, and repulsed by his relatives, seemed determined to renounce the world; and as if he had felt his existence disgraced by his contempt of mankind and his disgust at things, he voluntarily lost himself altogether in the crowd.

The Emperor said, that, after the battle of Leipsic, he had been informed on the part of Gustavus, that he had no doubt been his enemy a long time; but that, for a long time, he (Napoleon) was of all others the sovereign of whom he had the least to complain, and that, for a long time also, his only sentiments with regard to him, were those of admiration and sympathy; that his actual misfortunes permitted him to express his feelings without restraint; that he offered to be his aide-de-camp, and requested an asylum in France. "I was affected," observed the Emperor;

Digitized by Google

"but I soon reflected, that if I received him, my "dignity would be pledged to make exertions in "his favour. Besides, I no longer ruled the "world, and then common minds would not fail "to discover in the interest I took for him, an "impotent hatred against Bernadotte; finally, "Gustavus had been dethroned by the voice of "the people, and it was the voice of the people "by which I had been elevated. In taking up "his cause, I should have been guilty of incon-"sistency in my own conduct, and have acted "upon discordant principles. In short, I dread-"ed, lest I should render affairs more compli-"cated than they were, and silenced my feelings "of generosity. I caused him to be answered, "that I appreciated what he offered me, and that "I was sensible of it, but that the political in-"terest of France did not allow me to indulge in "my private feelings, and that it even imposed "upon me the painful task of refusing, for the "moment, the asylum which he asked. That he "would, however, greatly deceive himself, if he "supposed me to entertain any other sentiments "than those of extreme good will and sincere "wishes for his happiness, &c. &c.

"Some time after the expulsion of Gustavus, "while the succession to the crown was vacant, "the Swedes, desirous of recommending them-"selves to me and securing the protection of "France, asked me to give them a King. My

Digitized by Google

" attention was, for an instant, turned to the vice-
" roy; but it would have been necessary for him
" to change his religion, which I deemed beneath
" my dignity and that of all those who belonged
" to me. Besides, I did not think the political
" result sufficiently important to excuse an ac-
" tion, so contrary to our manners. I attached,
" however, too much value to the idea of seeing
" the throne of Sweden in possession of a French-
" man. It was, in my situation, a puerile senti-
" ment. The real King, according to my politi-
" cal system and the true interests of France, was
" the King of Denmark, because I should then
" have governed Sweden by the influence of my
" simple contact with the Danish provinces.
" *Bernadotte* was elected, and he was indebted
" for his elevation to his wife, the sister-in-law of
" my brother Joseph, who then reigned at Madrid.

" Bernadotte, affecting great dependance on
" me, came to ask for my approbation, protesting,
" with too visible an anxiety, that he would not
" accept the crown, unless it was agreeable to
" me.

" I, the elected monarch of the people, had to
" answer, that I could not set myself against the
" elections of other people. It was what I told
" Bernadotte, whose whole attitude betrayed the
" anxiety, excited by the expectation of my
" answer. I added, that he had only to take ad-
" vantage of the good will of which he had been

Digitized by Google

"the object; that I wished to be considered as "having had no weight in his election, but that "it had my approbation and my best wishes. I "felt, however, shall I say it, a secret instinct, "which made the thing disagreeable and painful. "Bernadotte was, in fact, the serpent, which I "nourished in my bosom; he had scarcely left "us, when he clung to the system of our enemies; "and we were obliged to watch and dread him. "At a later period, he was one of the great ac- "tive causes of our calamities; it was he who "gave to our enemies the key of our political "system and communicated the tactics of our "armies; it was he, who pointed out to them the "way to the sacred soil! In vain, would he excuse "himself by saying, that in accepting the crown "of Sweden, he was thenceforth bound to be a "Swede only; pitiful excuse, valid only with "those of the populace and the vulgar that are "ambitious. In taking a wife, one does not re- "nounce his mother, still less is he bound to "transfix her bosom and tear out her entrails. "It is said, that he afterwards repented, that is "to say, when it was no longer time, and when "the mischief was done. The fact is, that in "finding himself once more among us, he per- "ceived, that opinion exacted justice of him; he "felt himself struck with death. Then, the film "fell from his eyes; for it is not known to what "dreams his presumption and his vanity might

Digitized by Google

" have incited him in his blindness," &c. &c. And at the end of this and many other things besides, I presumed to observe to him, as a very fantastical and extraordinary matter of chance, that the soldier Bernadotte, elevated to a crown, for which protestanism was a necessary qualification, was actually born a protestant, and that his son, destined, on that account, to reign over the Scandinavians, presented himself in the midst of them precisely with the national name of *Oscar*.

" My dear Las Cases," replied the Emperor, " it " is because that chance, so often cited, of which " the ancients made a deity, which astonishes us " every day and strikes us every instant, does not, " after all, appear so singular, so capricious, so " extraordinary, but in consequence of our ig- " norance of the secret and altogether natural " causes, by which it is produced, and yet this " single combination is sufficient to create the " marvellous and give birth to mysteries. Here, " for instance, with respect to the first point, that " of having been born of a protestant, let not the " honour of that circumstance be assigned to " chance; blot that out. With regard to the se- " cond, the name of Oscar; it was I, who was " his godfather, and when I gave him the name, I " was raving mad with Ossian; it presented itself " of course very naturally. You now see how " simple that is which so greatly astonished you," &c. &c.

Digitized by Google

At the end of this conversation, the Emperor returned to Paul; he talked of the passionate fits brought upon him by the perfidy of the English ministry. He had been promised Malta, the moment it was taken possession of, and accordingly, he was in great haste to get himself nominated grand-master. Malta reduced, the English ministers denied that they had promised it to him. It is confidently stated, that on the reading of this shameful falsehood, Paul felt so indignant, that seizing the dispatch, in full council, he ran his sword through it, and ordered it to be sent back in that condition, by way of answer. "If it be a "folly," said the Emperor, "it must be allowed, "that it is the folly of a noble soul; it is the in- "dignation of virtue, which was incapable, until "then, of suspecting such baseness."

At the same time, the English ministers, treating with us for the exchange of prisoners, refused to include, on the same scale, the Russian prisoners taken in Holland, who were in the actual service and fought for the sole cause of the English. "I had," said the Emperor, "hit upon the bent "of Paul's character. I seized time by the fore- "lock; I collected these Russians; I clothed "them and sent them back to him without any "expense. From that instant, that generous heart "was altogether devoted to me; and as I had no "interest in opposition to Russia, and should "never have spoken or acted but with justice,

Digitized by Google

"there was no doubt, but that I should have "been enabled, for the future, to dispose of the "Cabinet of St. Petersburgh. Our enemies were "sensible of the danger, and it has been thought "that this good will of Paul proved fatal to "him; it well might have been the case; for "there are Cabinets, with whom nothing is "sacred."

N. B.—It has been already mentioned, that the Emperor complained, that the Prince de Ponte-Corvo (Bernadotte) was scarcely in Sweden, before he had occasion to distrust and counteract his schemes. The following letter is a decisive proof of this assertion, and also contains an important exposition of the continental system.

"*Tuileries, August* 8, 1811.

"Monsieur, the Prince Royal of Sweden, your private correspondence has reached me; I have appreciated, as a proof of the sentiments of friendship you entertain for me, and as a testimony of the loyalty of your character, the communications which you make to me. There is no political reason, which prevents me from answering you.

"You appreciate, without doubt, the motives of my decree of the 21st of November, 1806. It prescribes no laws to Europe. It merely traces the steps, that are to be followed, to reach the

Digitized by Google

same end; the treaties, which I have signed, constitute the remainder. The right of blockade, which England has arrogated to herself, is as injurious to the commerce of Sweden and as hostile to the honour of her flag, as it is injurious to the commerce of the French Empire and to the dignity of its power. I will even assert, that the domineering pretensions of England are still more offensive with regard to Sweden; for your commerce is more maritime than continental; the real strength of the kingdom of Sweden consists as much in the existence of its navy, as in the existence of its army.

"The developement of the forces of France is altogether continental. I have been enabled to create, within my states, an internal trade, which diffuses subsistence and money from the extremities to the centre of the empire, by the impulse given to agricultural and manufacturing industry, and by the rigorous prohibition of foreign productions. This state of things is such, that it is impossible for me to decide, whether French commerce would have much to gain by peace with England.

"The maintenance, observance, or adoption of the decree of Berlin is, therefore, I am bold enough to say it, more in the interests of Sweden and of Europe, than in the particular interests of France.

"Such are the reasons, which my ostensible

Digitized by Google

policy may set up against the ostensible policy of England. The secret reasons that influence England are the following: She does not desire peace; she has rejected all the overtures which I have caused to be made to her; her commerce and her territory are enlarged by war; she is apprehensive of restitutions; she will not consolidate the new system by a treaty; she does not wish that France should be powerful. I wish for peace, I wish for it in its perfect state, because peace alone can give solidity to new interests, and states created by conquest. I think, that on this point, your Royal Highness ought not to differ in opinion from me.

"I have a great number of ships; I have no seamen; I cannot carry on the contest with England for the purpose of compelling her to make peace; nothing but the continental system can prove successful. In this respect, I experience no obstacle on the part of Russia and Prussia; their commerce can only be a gainer by the prohibitive system.

"Your cabinet is composed of enlightened men. There is dignity and patriotism in the Swedish nation. The influence of your Royal Highness in the Government is generally approved: you will experience few impediments in withdrawing your people from a mercantile submission to a foreign nation. *Do not suffer yourself to be caught by the too tempting baits which*

Digitized by Google

England may hold out to you. The future will prove to you, that, whatever may be the revolutions, which time must produce, the Sovereigns of Europe will establish prohibitive laws, which will leave them masters in their own dominions.

"The third article of the treaty of the 21st of February, 1802, corrects the incomplete stipulations of the treaty of Fredericsham. It must be rigorously observed in every point, which relates to colonial commodities. You tell me, that you cannot do without these commodities, and that from the want of their introduction, the revenue of your customs is diminished. I will give you twenty millions of colonial productions, which I have at Hamburgh; you will give me twenty millions of iron. You will have no specie to export from Sweden. Give up these productions to merchants; they will pay the import duties; you will get rid of your iron; this will answer my purpose. I am in want of iron at Antwerp, and I know not what to do with the English commodities.

"Be faithful to the treaty of the 24th of February: drive the English smugglers from the roads of *Gottenburg;* drive them from the coasts, where they carry on an open trade: I give you my word, that I will, on my part, scrupulously observe the conditions of that treaty. I shall oppose the attempts of your neighbours, to appropriate to themselves your continental posses-

Digitized by Google

tions. If you fail in your engagements, I shall consider myself released from mine.

"It is my wish to be always on an amicable understanding with your Royal Highness; I shall hear with pleasure your communication of this answer to his Swedish Majesty, whose good intentions I have constantly appreciated.

"My minister for foreign affairs will return an official answer to the last note, which the Comte d'Essen has submitted for my perusal.

"This letter having no other end, &c. &c.

"NAPOLEON."

Napoleon's Patrimonial Vine, &c.—His Nurse, &c.—His Paternal Roof.—Tears of Josephine during Wurmser's Skirmishes in the Environs of Mantua.

8th.—I went to the Emperor's apartment about eleven o'clock. He was dressing himself, and looking over, with his valet, some samples of perfumery and scents, received from England. He enquired about them all, did not know one of them, and laughed heartily at his gross ignorance, as he called it. He wished to breakfast in the tent; and we all assembled there.

He complained of the bad quality of the wine; and called upon his maître-d'hôtel, Cipriani, who is a Corsican, to prove, that they had much better in their country. He said, he had received, as part of his patrimony, the first vine in

Digitized by Google

the island, in size and productiveness. It was called *l'Esposata*, and he felt it his duty, he said, not to mention it but with gratitude. It was to that vine, that he was indebted, in his youth, for his visits to Paris; it was that which supplied the expenses of his vacations. We asked him, what was to become of it. He told us, that he had long ago disposed of it, in favour of his nurse, to whom, he was convinced, he had given about one hundred and twenty thousand francs in lands and houses in the island. He had even resolved to give her his patrimonial house; but finding it too much above her situation, he had made a present of it to the Romalino family, his nearest relatives by his mother's side, on condition, that they should transfer their habitation to his nurse.*

---

* The patrimonial house of Napoleon, his cradle, at present actually in the possession of M. Romalino, member of the Chamber of Deputies, has remained, as it may be thought, an object of eager curiosity and great veneration to travellers and military men. †

I am assured by eye-witnesses, that, on the arrival of every regiment in Corsica, it becomes the object of a spectacle, constantly renewed. The soldiers instantly run to it in crowds, and obtain admission with a certain degree of authority. It might be said, that they believe themselvs entitled to it as a right. Once admitted, every one conducts himself according to the warmth of his feeling; one raises his hands to heaven, as

---

† Having obtained a view of this house, we have placed it, for the gratification of our readers' curiosity, at the head of the Third Part.

Note of the English Editor.

Digitized by Google

In a word, he had, he said, made a great lady of her. She had come to Paris at the time of the coronation, and had an audience of the Pope for upwards of an hour and a half. "Poor "Pope," exclaimed the Emperor, "he must "have had a good deal of spare time! She "was, however, extremely devout. Her hus- "band was a coasting trader of the island. She "gave great pleasure at the Tuileries, and en- "chanted the family by the vivacity of her "language and her gestures. The empress "Josephine made her a present of some dia- "monds."

After breakfast, the Emperor, faithful to his resolution of yesterday, proceeded with his work. He finished the chapter of Castiglione, and then went to the wood, with the intention of waiting for the calash. In continuance of the conversation, which had been brought on by the chapter, he related, that Josephine had left Brescia with him, and had thus commenced the campaign against Wurmser. Arrived at Verona, she had witnessed the first shots that were fired. When she returned to Castel-Nuovo, and saw the wounded as they passed, she was desirous of being at Brescia; but she found herself stopped

---

he looks about him, another falls on his knees, a third kisses the floor, and a fourth bursts into tears. There are some who seem to be seized by a fit of insanity. Something similar is said of the tomb of the great Frederic. Such is the influence of heroes,

Digitized by Google

by the enemy, who was already at Ponte-Marco. In the anxiety and agitation of the moment, she was seized with fear, and wept a great deal, on quitting her husband, who exclaimed, when embracing her, and with a kind of inspiration, "Wurmser shall pay dearly for those tears which "he causes thee!" She was obliged to pass in her carriage very close to the fortifications of Mantua. She was fired upon from the place, and one of her suite was even wounded! She traversed the Po, Bologna, Ferrara, and stopped at Lucca, attended by dread and the unfavourable reports, which were usually spread around our patriotic armies; but she was internally supported by her extreme confidence in her husband's good fortune.

Such was, however, already the opinion of Italy, observed the Emperor, and the sentiments impressed by the French General, that in spite of the crisis of the moment, and of all the false reports which accompanied him, his wife was received at Lucca by the Senate, and treated by it with the same respect as a very great princess. It came to compliment her, and presented her with the oils of honour. It had reason to applaud itself for that conduct. A short time afterwards, the couriers announced the prodigious achievements of her husband, and the annihilation of Wurmser.

The Emperor returned to the saloon for the

Digitized by Google

first time since the fire. It is gradually furnished with articles sent expressly from London, which make it a little more tolerable. After dinner, the Emperor began with reading Turcaret, with which, he said, notwithstanding all its wit, he felt himself disgusted, in consequence of its vulgarity; but it bore, he remarked, the impression of Le Sage. He then took up l'Avocat Patelin, and was much amused with its genuine comic force.

9th.—The Emperor breakfasted in the tent, and revised the chapter of the Brenta. At three o'clock, he took an airing in the calash. The Governor called during our ride. It was understood, that he wished to speak to the Emperor on the celebration of the Prince Regent's birthday, which is to take place next Monday, the 12th inst., and to give him notice of the salutes and vollies, that are to be fired on the occasion at the camp, situated so closely to us. It is said, on the other hand, that he has given directions for supplying the Emperor's table only, and that each of us is to be put upon a particular allowance, as he finds the expense very much beyond his credit. We shall see, however.

Catherine II.—Imperial Guards.—Paul I. &c.—Projects on India, &c.

10th.—The Emperor was indisposed and took a bath. At three he walked out and called for the carriage. He had just read the history of

Digitized by Google

Catherine. "She was," he said, "a commanding "woman; she was worthy of having a beard upon "her chin. The catastrophes of Peter and that "of Paul, were seraglio revolutions, the work of "janissaries. These palace-soldiers are terrible, "and dangerous in proportion as the Sovereign "is absolute. My imperial guard might also "have become fatal, under any one but my-"self."

The Emperor said, that he and Paul had been on the best terms together. At the time of his murder, in which the public spared neither his relations nor his allies, he had concerted a plan with him, at that very moment, for an expedition to India, and he would have certainly prevailed upon him to carry it into execution. Paul wrote to him very often, and at great length. His first communication was curious and original. "Citizen First Consul," (he had written to him with his own hand,) "I do not discuss the merits "of the rights of man; but when a nation places "at its head a man of distinguished merit and "worthy of esteem, it has a government, and "France has, henceforth, one in my eyes," &c. &c.

On our return, we found the Admiral and his lady; the Emperor took them into the calash and made another tour. He afterwards walked, for some time, with Lady Malcolm, to whom he behaved in a most gracious manner.

After dinner, the Emperor turned over the

Digitized by Google

leaves of two volumes of the Théâtre Français, without being able to find any thing capable of fixing his attention.

The Emperor Bishop, &c.—Had never suffered in his Stomach.

11th.—After our breakfast in the tent and a few turns in the garden, the Emperor read, for the last time, the chapter of Arcole.

During our ride in the calash, somebody observed that it was Sunday. "We should have "mass," said the Emperor, "if we were in a "Christian country, if we had a priest; and that "would have engaged us for an instant during "the day. I have been always fond of the "sound of the bells in the country. We should," he added in a gay tone, "resolve upon choosing a "priest among us;—the curate of Saint-Helena." —But how ordain him, it was said, without a bishop?—"And am I not one," replied the Emperor, "have I not been anointed with the same "oil, consecrated in the same manner? Were "not Clovis and his successors anointed, at the "time, with the formula of *Rex Christique sacer-* "*dos?* Were they not, in fact, real bishops? Was "not the subsequent suppression of that formula "caused by the jealousy and policy of the "bishops and popes?" &c. &c.

I did not eat at dinner, the Emperor wished to know the cause. I had a severe pain in my

Digitized by Google

stomach, a complaint to which I said I was very subject. "I am more fortunate than you," he observed. "I have not, during my life, felt "any pain in my head or *in my stomach.*" The Emperor often repeated what he had said, and he has pronounced these same words perhaps ten, twenty, or thirty times, in the midst of us at different moments.*

Campaign of 1809, &c. &c.

12th.—The Emperor passed the morning in his bath, reading the Journals des Debats of March and April, received yesterday by way of the Cape. The Emperor was very much occupied with them; they produced a great degree of agitation in his system.

* I commonly pass over all details of this kind, on account of their minuteness, unless an occasion for their utility presents itself, and unfortunately I have not time to look for, or to give rise to, such occasions. The trifling circumstance, however, which I relate here, acquires but too great a value by the nature of the death and the protracted and terrible agonies of the immortal victim, who expired under the triple tortures of body, mind, and heart. He would have had much less to endure from the hands of cannibals! .... And these sufferings and these torments were coldly reserved for him by a barbarous administration, which, by that proceeding, has stained the annals of a people so justly renowned for the elevation of their sentiments and their sympathy with misfortune! .... But a sad and painful celebrity will attach to the names of the executioners of Napoleon. The indignation of the generous hearts of every age and of every country strikes them for ever with eternal reprobation!

Digitized by Google

In general, since the Emperor had received books, and particularly the Moniteurs, he continued much more at home; he scarcely went abroad; he no longer used a horse, nor even the calash; he hardly took the air for a few moments in the garden; he was not the better for it, his features and his health underwent a visible alteration.

I found him to-day reading Les Croisades de Michaud which he left to run over Les Memoires de Bezenval. He stopped at the duel between the Comte d'Artois and the Duc de Bourbon. He found the details curious, but they seemed to be very remote from us. "It is difficult," he observed, "to see times so close to each other and "manners so different."

In the course of this day's conversations, the Emperor happened to repeat, what I have mentioned elsewhere, that his finest manœuvre had been at Eckmuhl, without, however, specifying it any further. *

* Here M. De Las Cases, availing himself of Napoleon's striking allusions to the battle of Eckmuhl, introduces a review of the celebrated campaign of 1809, compiled from an unpublished work by an officer of high rank in the imperial guard. In consequence, however, of its length and its want of immediate connection with the main objects of the Journal, we are induced to pass it over.

English Editor.

Digitized by Google

On the War with Russia.—Fatalities, &c.—M. de Talleyrand, &c.—The Corinna of Madame de Staël.— M. Necker, &c.

13th.—At an early hour in the morning, I accompanied the Emperor very far into the wood; he conversed for upwards of an hour, on the situation of France, and then reverted to the persons who had betrayed him, and the numerous fatalities which had hurried him along; to the perfidious security caused by his marriage with Austria; to the infatuation of the Turks who made peace precisely when they ought to have made war; to that of Bernadotte, who was actuated by his self-love and his resentment, rather than by his real grandeur and stability; to a season rigorous beyond measure, and even to the superiority of talent, evinced by M. de Narbonne, who, discovering the designs of Austria, compelled her to take active measures. Finally, he reverted to the successes of Lutzen and Bautzen, which by bringing back the king of Saxony to Dresden, put him, Napoleon, in possession of the hostile signatures of Austria, and deprived her of all further subterfuge. "What an unhappy concur-"rence!" he exclaimed in a most expressive tone, "and yet," he continued, "the day after the "battle of Dresden, Francis had already sent a "person to treat. It was necessary, that Van-

Digitized by Google

" damme's disaster should happen at a given mo-
" ment, to second, as it were, the decree of
" fate."

M. de Talleyrand, to whose conduct the Emperor frequently alluded, for the purpose of discovering, he said, when he had really began to betray him, had strongly urged him to make peace, on his return from Leipsic. " I must," he observed, " do him that justice. He found fault
" with my speech to the senate, but warmly ap-
" proved of that, which I made to the legislative
" body. He uniformly maintained, that I de-
" ceived myself with respect to the energy of the
" nation; that it would not co-operate with
" mine, and that it was requisite for me to ar-
" range my affairs by every possible sacrifice.
" It appears, that he was then sincere. I never,
" from my own experience, found Talleyrand elo-
" quent or persuasive. He dwelt a great deal,
" and a long time on the same idea. Perhaps
" also, as our acquaintance was of old date, he
" behaved in a peculiar manner to me. He was,
" however, so skilful in his evasions and ram-
" blings, that after conversations which lasted
" several hours, he has gone away, frequently
" avoiding the explanations and objects I ex-
" pected to obtain from him on his coming in."

With regard to the affairs of the moment and to the contents of the last journals which described France in a constantly increasing agita-

Digitized by Google

tion, the result was, that the chances of the future seemed indefinite, multiplied, and inexhaustible for all Europe, and that there existed, at that instant, an incontrovertible fact, communicated to us from all quarters, that nobody in Europe considered himself in a permanent situation. Every one seemed to apprehend or to foresee new events, &c.

The Emperor kept me to breakfast with him in the tent. He afterwards sent for the Corinna of Madame de Staël, and read some chapters of it. He said he could not get through it. Madame de Staël had drawn so complete a likeness of herself, in her heroine, that she had succeeded in convincing him that it was herself; "I see her," said he, "I hear her, I feel her, I wish to avoid "her, and I threw away the book. I had a better "impression of this work on my memory, than "what I feel at present. Perhaps, it is because, "at the time, I read it with my thumb, as M. "l'Abbé de Pradt ingeniously says, and not with- "out some truth. I shall, however, persevere; "I am determined to see the end of it; I still "think, that it was not destitute of some inter- "est. Yet I cannot forgive Madame de Staël for "having undervalued the French in her romance. "The family of Madame de Staël is unquestion- "ably a very singular one! Her father, her mo- "ther and herself, all three on their knees, rega- "ling each other with reciprocal incense, for the

Digitized by Google

"better edification and mystification of the "public. Madame de Staël may, notwithstand- "ing, exult in surpassing her noble parents, "when she presumed to write, that her senti- "ments for her father were such, that she detect- "ed herself in being jealous of her mother.

"Madame de Staël," he continued, "was ardent "in her passions, vehement and extravagant in "her expressions. This is what was read by the "police, while she was under its superintendence. "'I am far from you;' (she was probably writing "to her husband,) 'come instantly;—I com- "mand;—I insist upon it; I am on my knees; "my daughter is beside me; I beseech you, "come;—if you hesitate, I shall kill her first, "and then myself;—You alone will be guilty of "our destruction,'" &c.—

She had, said the Emperor, combined all her efforts and all her means to make an impression on the general of the army of Italy; without any knowledge of him, she wrote to him, when far off; she tormented him when present. If she was to be believed, the union of genius with a little insignificant Creole, incapable of appre- ciating or comprehending him, was a monstrosity. Unfortunately, the general's only answer was an indifference, which women never forgive, and which, indeed, he remarked with a smile, is hardly to be forgiven.

On his arrival at Paris, he was followed with the same eagerness, but he maintained, on his

Digitized by Google

part, the same reserve, the same silence. Madame de Staël resolved, however, to extract some words from him and to struggle with the conqueror of Italy, attacked him face to face, at the grand entertainment, given by M. de Talleyrand, minister for foreign affairs, to the victorious general. She challenged him in the middle of a numerous circle, to tell her who was the greatest woman in the world, whether dead or living. "She, who has had most children," answered Napoleon, with great simplicity. Madame de Staël was, at first, a little disconcerted, and endeavoured to recover herself by observing, that it was reported that he was not very fond of women. "Pardon me, Madame," again replied Napoleon, "I am very fond of my wife."

The general of the army of Italy, said the Emperor, might, no doubt, have excited the enthusiasm of the Genevese Corinna to its highest pitch; but he dreaded her political perfidy and her proverbial intemperance; he was, perhaps, in the wrong. The heroine had, however, been too eager in her pursuit and too often discouraged, not to become a violent enemy. "She instigated the person, who was then under her influence, and he," observed the Emperor, "did not enter upon the business in a very honourable manner. On the appointment of the Tribunate, he employed the most pressing solicitations with the first Consul to be nominated a member. At eleven o'clock at night, he was on his

Digitized by Google

"knees; but at midnight, when the favour was "granted, he was already erect and almost in an "insulting attitude. The first meeting of the Tri- "bunes was a splendid occasion for his invectives "against me. At night, Madame de Staël's hotel "was illuminated. She crowned her Benjamin "in the middle of a brilliant assembly, and pro- "claimed him a second Mirabeau. This farce, "which was ridiculous enough, was followed "by more dangerous plans. At the time of the "concordat, against which Madame de Staël "was violently inflamed, she united at once "against me the aristocrats and the republicans; "you have, she exclaimed, but a single moment "left; to-morrow the tyrant will have forty "thousand priests at his disposal."

"Madame de Staël," said Napoleon, "having at "length tired out my patience, was sent into exile. "Her father had seriously offended me before, at "the time of the campaign of Marengo. I wished "to see him on my way, and he struck me merely "as a dull bloated college tutor. Shortly after- "wards, and with the hope, no doubt, of again "appearing, by my help, in public life, he pub- "lished a pamphlet, in which he proved, that "France could neither be a republic, nor a "monarchy. What it might be," remarked the Emperor, "was not sufficiently evident. "In that work, he called the First Consul, "*the necessary man*, &c. &c. Lebrun replied to

Digitized by Google

" him, in a letter of four pages, in his admirable " style, and with all his powers of sarcasm; he " asked him, whether he had not done sufficient " mischief to France, and whether his pretensions " to govern her again, were not exhausted by his " experiment of the constituent assembly.

" Madame de Staël, in her disgrace, carried " on hostilities with the one hand, and suppli- " cated with the other. She was informed, on " the part of the First Consul, that he left her " the universe for the theatre of her achieve- " ments; that he resigned the rest of the world " to her, and only reserved Paris for himself, " which he forbade her to approach. But Paris " was precisely the object of Madame de Staël's " wishes. No matter; the Consul was invariably " inflexible. Madame de Staël, however, oc- " casionally renewed her attempts. Under the " empire, she wished to be lady of the palace. " Yes or no might certainly be pronounced; but " by what means could Madame de Staël be kept " quiet in a palace?" &c. &c.

After dinner, the Emperor read the Horatii, and was frequently interrupted by our bursts of admiration. Never did Corneille appear grander, more noble, more nervous to us than on our rock.

Digitized by Google

Shooting Party at St. Helena, &c.—Eve of the 15th of August, &c.

14. The Emperor went out early. He sent for me before nine o'clock. His intention was to mount his horse, and endeavour to get a shot at some partridges, which we saw every time we were in the carriage; but which never let any one with a fowling piece come near them. The Emperor walked on for the purpose of placing himself in a convenient situation, but the partridges were no longer to be found. He was soon fatigued, and got on horseback, observing, that our shooting party was not exactly after the fashion of those of Rambouillet and Fontainebleau. We breakfasted, on our return, in the tent; the Emperor placed little Tristan, whom he saw crossing the meadow, at table, and was much amused with him during the whole of the repast.

After breakfast, the Emperor had the chapter of Rivoli read over again to him, and finished it. We had gone through three fourths of it, when the governor being announced, we made a precipitate retreat from the tent, and each of us took refuge in his den. The Emperor was less inclined than any other person to let himself be seen: his conversations with the governor are by far too disagreeable and painful to him. "I am de-" termined," he said, "to have no more to do with

Digitized by Google

" him. Harsh remarks escape me, which affect " my character and my dignity; nothing should " fall from my mouth but what is kind and com- " plimentary." He found himself fatigued with his exercise in the morning, and took a bath.

About five o'clock, he took a turn in the calash, the weather was delicious.

The Governor had expressed an earnest desire to see the Emperor; he wished, he said, to speak with him on business. It is suspected, that it was to tell him, that he had no more money, that he had exhausted all, and that he no longer knew how to act; a matter of perfect indifference to the Emperor, who would not have failed, once more, to entreat to be let alone.

The Emperor played at chess, before dinner, in the saloon; he had taken some punch. It was late when I arrived; he told me, on entering, to take my share of the punch; but it was observed, that there were no more glasses. " O " yes," said he, handing me his, " and he will " drink out of it, I am sure." He then added, " This is the English fashion; is it not? In our " country one seldom drinks after any one but " one's mistress."

It was remarked, during dinner, that it was the eve of the 15th of August; the Emperor then observed; " Many healths will be drank to- " morrow, in Europe, to St. Helena. There are " certainly some sentiments, some wishes, that

Digitized by Google

"will traverse the ocean." He had entertained the same thought in the morning, when on horseback, and had said the same things to me.

After dinner, Cinna;—Corneille seems divine.

The Emperor's Birth-Day.

15th.—This day, the 15th of August, was the Emperor's birth-day. We had determined to wait upon him, in a body, about eleven o'clock. He disappointed us by appearing gaily at our doors at nine. The weather was mild; he went to the garden, and we all assembled there in succession. The Grand Marshal, with his wife and children, joined us. The Emperor, surrounded by his faithful servants, breakfasted in the large and beautiful tent, which is a real and happy acquisition. The temperature was fine, and he himself cheerful and fond of conversation. He seemed, for some instants, to participate in our sentiments and wishes. He desired, he said, to pass the whole day in the midst of us. Accordingly, we continued together, and spent the time in conversation, in different pursuits, in walking, and in riding in the carriage.

Polytechnic School suppressed, &c.—Indecency of the English Journals.—Ice Machine.

16th.—My son and I went, at a very early hour, to the tent, where the Emperor continued employed on different chapters of the campaign

Digitized by Google

of Italy until two o'clock, when, the Governor being announced, he retired, muttering, "The "wretch, I believe, envies me the air I breathe."

During breakfast, he had called for the Journal des Débats, which contained the organization of the academies; he wished to see the names of the members, who had been expelled from the Institute. This led him to revert to the suppression of the Polytechnic school, which was said to be useless and dangerous. The English journal, which we had received, was not of that opinion. It maintained, that the suppression alone was more valuable to the enemies of France than a signal victory, and that nothing could more decidedly prove the real pacific sentiments and the extreme moderation of the dynasty, which then governed France, &c. &c. It also stated several other things.

Somebody remarked, upon this subject, that the English papers shewed a malevolence to the French Government, which extended to coarseness and indecency.

Lord or Lady Holland had, with a peculiar degree of attention, sent to Longwood, for the Emperor's use, a newly invented machine, adapted to the formation of ice. It was delivered to us to-day, through the intervention of Admiral Malcolm. The Emperor went out about five o'clock, and was desirous of witnessing the experiment; the Admiral was present, but the experiment proved very imperfect.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor, after some time, took a walk, accompanied by the Admiral, and the conversation turned upon a variety of subjects; it was maintained in the most affable and friendly manner on the part of the Emperor.

Religious Ideas of Napoleon.—Bishop of Nantez (de Voisin).—The Pope.—Liberties of the Gallican Church.—Anecdotes.—Concordat of Fontainebleau.

17th.—While the Emperor was at breakfast in the tent, two persons described the excesses which they had witnessed in the army, and which had not come to his knowledge. They noticed the numerous violations of his orders, the violent abuses of authority, and other outrages besides. The Emperor listened; but some were so shocking, that he could not, he said, give credit to them and observed; "Come, gentlemen, these "are libels."

The wind was very violent; it blew a tempest with occasional showers of rain. The wetness obliged the Emperor to go in again.

After dinner Zaire and the beautiful scenes of Œdipe were read, among which he particularly pointed out that of the discovery, which he pronounced the finest and the most finished of the drama.

In speaking of priests and religion, the conversation led the Emperor to say; "Man enter-"ing into life asks himself: From whence do I

Digitized by Google

" come? What am I? Whither am I to go?
" These are so many mysterious questions, which
" urge us on to religion. We eagerly embrace it;
" we are attracted by our natural propensity;
" but as we advance in knowledge our course is
" stopped. Instruction and history are the great
" enemies of religion, deformed by human imper-
" fection. Why, we ask ourselves, is the religion
" of Paris, neither that of London nor of Berlin?
" Why is that of Petersburgh different from that
" of Constantinople? Why is the latter different
" from that of Persia, of the Ganges and of China?
" Why is the religion of ancient times different
" from that of our days? Then reason is sadly
" staggered; it exclaims, O religions, religions!
" the children of man! .... We very properly
" believe in God, because every thing around us
" proclaims him, and the most enlightened minds
" have believed in him; not only Bossuet, whose
" profession it was, but also Newton and Leibnitz,
" who had nothing to do with it. But we know
" not what to think of the doctrine, that is taught
" us, and we find ourselves like the watch which
" goes, without knowing the watchmaker that
" made it. And observe a little the stupidity of
" those who educate us; they should keep away
" from us the idea of paganism and idolatry;
" because their absurdity excites the first exer-
" cise of our reason, and prepares us for a resist-
" ance to passive belief; and they bring us up,

Digitized by Google

" notwithstanding, in the midst of the Greeks " and Romans, with their myriads of divinities. " Such, for my own part, has literally been the " progress of my understanding. I felt the ne- " cessity of belief; I did believe, but my belief " was shocked and undecided, the moment I ac- " quired knowledge and began to reason; and " that happened to me, at so early an age as " thirteen. Perhaps, I shall again believe impli- " citly; God grant I may. I shall certainly " make no resistance, and I do not ask a greater " blessing; it must, in my mind, be a great and " real happiness.

" In violent agitations, however, and in the " casual suggestions of immorality itself, the ab- " sence of that religious faith has never, I assert, " influenced me in any respect, and I never " doubted the existence of God; for, if my reason " was inadequate to comprehend it, my mind was " not the less disposed to adopt it. My nerves " were in sympathy with that sentiment.

" When I seized on the helm of affairs, I had " already fixed ideas of all the primary elements " by which society is bound together; I had " weighed all the importance of religion; I was " convinced, and I determined to re-establish it. " But the resistance I had to overcome, in " restoring catholicism, would scarcely be cre- " dited. I should have been more willingly " followed, had I hoisted the standard of pro-

Digitized by Google

" testantism. This reluctance was carried so
" far, that in the Council of State, where I found
" great difficulty in getting the Concordat
" adopted, several yielded only in forming a plan
" to extricate themselves from it. 'Well!' they
" said to one another, 'let us turn protestants,
" and that will not affect us.' It is unquestion-
" able, that in the disorder to which I succeeded,
" that on the ruins where I was placed, I was
" at liberty to choose between catholicism and
" protestantism; and it may also be said, with
" truth, that the general disposition, at the
" moment, was quite in favour of the latter; but,
" besides my real adherence to the religion in
" which I was born, I had the most important
" motives to influence my decision. What should
" I have gained by proclaiming protestantism?
" I should have created two great parties, very
" nearly equal, in France, when I wished for the
" existence of none at all; I should have revived
" the fury of religious disputes, when their total
" annihilation was called for by the light of the
" century, and my own feelings. These two
" parties would, by their mutual distractions,
" have destroyed France, and rendered her the
" slave of Europe, when I had the ambition to
" make her the mistress of it. By the help of
" catholicism I attained, much more effectually,
" all the grand results I had in view. In the
" interior, at home, the smaller number was

Digitized by Google

"swallowed up by the greater, and I relied "upon my treating the former with such an "equality, that there would be shortly no motive "for marking the difference. Abroad, the Pope "was bound to me by catholicism; and with my "influence, and our forces in Italy, I did not "despair, sooner or later, by some means or "another, of obtaining for myself the direction "of that Pope, and from that time, what an "influence! What a lever of opinion on the rest "of the world!" &c. &c. And he concluded with saying: "Francis I. was really in a state "to adopt protestantism, at its birth, and "declare himself the head of it in Europe. "Charles V., his rival, was the zealous champion "of Rome, because he considered that measure "as an additional means to assist him in his "project of enslaving Europe. Was not that "circumstance alone sufficient to point out to "Francis the necessity of taking care of his "independence; but he abandoned the greater "to run after the lesser advantage. He perse-"vered in pursuing his imprudent designs on "Italy, and with the intention of paying court "to the Pope, he burnt protestants at Paris.

"Had Francis I. embraced Lutheranism, which "is favourable to royal supremacy, he would "have preserved France from the dreadful re-"ligious convulsions brought on, at later periods, "by the Calvinists, whose efforts, altogether re-

Digitized by Google

" publican, were on the point of subverting the " throne, and dissolving our noble monarchy. " Unfortunately, Francis I. was ignorant of all " that, for he could not allege his scruples for " an excuse; he who entered into an alliance " with the Turks, and brought them into the " midst of us. It was precisely because he was " incapable of extending his views so far. The " folly of the time! The extent of feudal intellect! " Francis I. was, after all, but a hero for tilts " and tournaments, and a gallant for the drawing- " room, one of those pigmy great men.

" The Bishop of Nantez (De Voisin), said the " Emperor, made me a real Catholic by the effi- " cacy of his arguments, by the excellence of " his morals and by his enlightened toleration. " Marie Louise, whose confessor he was, consulted " him once on the obligation of abstaining from " meat on Fridays.—' At what table do you dine,' " asked the Bishop?'—' At the Emperor's.' ' Do " you give all the orders there?'—' No.' ' You " cannot, then, make any alteration in it; would " he do it himself?'—' I am inclined to think " not.' ' Be obedient then, and do not provoke " a subject for scandal. Your first duty is to " obey, and make him respected; you will not " be in want of other means to amend your life, " and to suffer privations in the eyes of God.'

" He also behaved in the same way with re- " spect to a public communion, which some per-

Digitized by Google

" sons put into Marie Louise's head to celebrate " on Easter-day. She would not, however, con- " sent, without the advice of her prudent con- " fessor, who dissuaded her from it by similar " arguments. What a difference, said the Em- " peror, had she been worked upon by a fanatic! " What quarrels, what disagreements might he " not have caused between us! What mischief " might he not have done, in the circumstances " in which I was placed!

The Emperor remarked to us, " that the " bishop of Nantez had lived with Diderot, in " the midst of unbelievers, and had uniformly " conducted himself with consistency; he was " ready with an answer to every one; and above " all, he had the good sense to abandon every " thing that was not maintainable, and to strip " religion of every thing which he might not be " capable of defending.—He was asked, 'has not " an animal, which moves, combines, and thinks, " a soul?' 'Why not,' was his answer. 'But " whether does it go? For it is not equal to ours.' " 'What is that to you? It dwells, perhaps, in " limbo.' He used to retreat within the last in- " trenchments, even within the fortress itself, and " there he reserved excellent means for defending " himself. He argued better than the Pope whom " he often confounded. He was the firmest pillar, " among our bishops, of the Gallican liberties. " He was my oracle, my luminary; in religious

Digitized by Google

"matters, he possessed my unbounded confi-
"dence. For, in my quarrels with the Pope,
"it was my first care, whatever intriguers and
"marplots in cassocs may say, not to touch
"upon any dogmatic point: I was so steady in
"this conduct, that the instant this good and
"venerable bishop of Nantez said to me, 'take
"care, there you are grappling with a dogma,' I
"immediately turned off from the course I was
"taking, to return to it by other ways, without
"amusing myself by entering into dissertations
"with him, or by seeking even to comprehend
"his meaning, and as I had not let him into my
"secret, how amazed must he not have been at
"the circuits I made! How whimsical, obsti-
"nate, capricious, and incoherent, must I not have
"appeared to him! It was because I had an
"object in view, and he was unacquainted with
"it.

"The Popes could not forgive us our liberties
"of the Gallican church. The four famous pro-
"positions of Bossuet, in particular, provoked
"their resentment. It was, in their opinion, a
"real hostile manifesto, and they accordingly
"considered us at least as much out of the pale
"of the church as the protestants. They thought
"us as guilty as them, perhaps more so, and if
"they did not overwhelm us with their ostensive
"thunders, it was because they dreaded the con-
"sequences—our separation. The example of

Digitized by Google

"England was before them. They did not wish "to cut off their right arm with their own hand, "but they were constantly on the watch for a "favourable opportunity, they trusted to time "for it. They are, no doubt, on the point of "believing, that it has now actually happened. "They will, however, be again disappointed by "the light of the century and the manners of the "times.

"Some time before my coronation," said the Emperor, "the Pope wished to see me, and made "it a point to visit me himself. He had made "many concessions. He had come to Paris for "the purpose of crowning me, he consented not "to place the crown on my head, he dispensed "with the ceremony of the public communion, "he had, therefore, in his opinion, many compen-"sations to expect in return. He had accord-"ingly at first, dreamt of Romagna and the Le-"gations, and he began to suspect that he should "be obliged to give up all that. He then lower-"ed his pretensions to a very trifling favour, as "he called it, my signature to an ancient docu-"ment, a worn-out rag, which he held from Louis "XIV. 'Do me that favour, said he, in fact, it "signifies nothing.' 'Cheerfully, most holy fa-"ther, and the thing is done, if it be feasible.' "It was, however, a declaration, in which Louis "XIV. at the close of his life, seduced by Ma-"dame de Maintenon, or prevailed upon by his

Digitized by Google

" confessors, expressed his disapprobation of the " celebrated articles of 1682, the foundations of the " liberties of the Gallican church. The Emperor " shrewdly replied, that he had not, for his own " part, any personal objection, but that it was " requisite for him, as a matter of form, to speak " to the bishops about it; on which the Pope re- " peatedly observed, that such a communication " was, by no means necessary, and that the thing " did not deserve to make so much noise. 'I " shall never,' he remarked, 'shew the sig- " nature, it shall be kept as secret as that of " Louis XIV.' 'But if it signifies nothing,' said " Napoleon, 'what use is there for my signature? " And if any signification can be drawn from it, " I am bound by a sense of propriety to consult " my doctors.' "

With the view, however, of avoiding the imputation of a constant refusal of every request, the Emperor wished to seem rather inclined to grant the favour. " The Bishop of Nantez and " the other bishops, who were really French, " came to me in great haste. They were furious, " and watched me," said the Emperor, " as they " would have watched Louis XIV. on his death- " bed, to prevent him from turning protestant. " The Sulpicians were called in; they were " Jesuits *au petit pied*, they strove to find out my " intention, and were ready to do whatever I " wished." The Emperor concluded with ob-

Digitized by Google

serving;—"The Pope had dispensed with the "public communion in my favour, and it is by "his determination in that respect, that I form my "opinion of the sincerity of his religious belief. "He had held a congregation of cardinals for "the purpose of settling the ceremonial. The "greater number warmly insisted upon my taking "the communion in public, asserting the great "influence of the example on the people, and the "necessity of my holding it out. The Pope, on "the contrary, fearful lest I should fulfil that "duty as if I were going through one of the "articles of M. de Ségur's program, looked "upon it as a sacrilege, and was inflexible in "opposing it. 'Napoleon,' he observed, 'is not "perhaps a believer; the time will, no doubt, "come, in which his faith will be established, and "in the meantime, let us not burthen his con-"science or our own.'

"In his Christian charity, for he really is a "worthy, mild, and excellent man, he never once "despaired of seeing me a penitent at his tri-"bunal; he has often let his hopes and thoughts "on that subject escape him. We sometimes "conversed about it in a pleasant and friendly "manner. 'It will happen to you, sooner or "later,' said he, with an innocent tenderness of "expression; 'you will be converted by me or "by others, and you will then feel how great the "content, the satisfaction of your own heart,' &c.

Digitized by Google

"In the mean time, my influence over him was "such, that I drew from him, by the mere power "of my conversation, that famous concordat of "Fontainebleau, in which he renounced the tem- "poral sovereignty, an act, on account of which, "he has since shown that he dreaded the judg- "ment of posterity, or rather the reprobation of "his successors. He had no sooner signed than "he felt the stings of repentance. He was to "have dined the following day with me in public; "but at night, he was, or pretended to be ill. "The truth is, that immediately after I left him, "he again fell into the hands of his habitual "advisers, who drew a terrible picture of the "error he had committed. Had we been left by "ourselves, I might have done what I pleased "with him; I should have governed the religious "with the same facility that I did the political "world. He was, in truth, a lamb, a good man in "every respect, a man of real worth, whom I es- "teem and love greatly, and who, on his part, is, I "am convinced, not altogether destitute of interest "with regard to me. You will not see him make "any severe complaints against me, nor prefer, "in particular, any direct and personal accus- "ation against me, no more than the other sove- "reigns. There may, perhaps, be some vague "and vulgar declamations against ambition and "bad faith, but nothing positive and direct; be- "cause statesmen are well aware, that when the

Digitized by Google

" hour of libels is past, no one would be allowed to
" prefer a public accusation without corroborative
" proofs, and they have none of these to produce;
" such will be the province of history. On the
" other hand, there will be at most, but some
" wretched chroniclers, shallow enough to take
" the ravings of clubs, or intrigues, for authentic
" facts, or some writers of memoirs, who, de-
" ceived by the errors of the moment, will be
" dead, before they are enabled to correct their
" mistakes, &c. &c.

" When the real particulars of my disputes with
" the Pope shall be made public, the world will
" be surprised at the extent of my patience, for
" it is known, that I was not of a very enduring
" temper. When he left me, after my coronation,
" he felt a secret disgust at not having obtained
" the compensations he thought he had deserved.
" But, however grateful I might have been in other
" respects, I could not, after all, make a traffic of
" the interests of the empire by way of acquit-
" ting my own obligations, and, I was, be-
" sides, too proud to exhibit a seeming acknow-
" ledgment, that I had purchased his kindnesses.
" He had hardly set his foot on the soil of Italy,
" when the intriguers and mischief-makers, the
" enemies of France, took advantage of the dis-
" position he was in, to govern his conduct, and
" from that instant every thing was hostile on his
" part. He no longer was the gentle, the peace-

Digitized by Google

" able *Chiaramonti*, that worthy bishop of Imola;
" who had at so early a period shown himself
" worthy of the enlightened state of the century.
" His signature was thenceforth affixed to acts
" only which characterised the Gregories and
" Bonifaces more than him. Rome became the
" focus of all the plots hatched against us. I
" strove in vain, to bring him back by the force of
" reason, but I found it impossible to ascertain his
" sentiments. Our wrongs became so serious,
" and the insults offered to us were so ostensible,
" that I was imperiously called upon to act, in my
" turn. I, therefore, seized upon his fortresses,
" I took possession of some provinces, and I
" finished by occupying Rome itself, at the same
" time declaring and strictly observing that I held
" him sacred in his spiritual capacity, which was
" far from being satisfactory to him. A crisis;
" however, presented itself; it was believed, that
" fortune had abandoned me at Essling, and mea-
" sures were in immediate readiness for exciting
" the population of that great capital to insurrec-
" tion. The officer, who commanded there,
" thought that he could escape the danger only
" by getting rid of the Pope, whom he sent for-
" ward on his journey to France. That measure
" was carried into effect without my orders, and
" was even in direct opposition to my views. I
" despatched instant orders for stopping the Pope,
" wherever he might be met with, and he was kept

Digitized by Google

" at Savona, where he was treated with every " possible care and attention; for I wished to " make myself feared, but not to ill-treat him; to " bend him to my views, not to degrade him;— " I entertained very different projects! This re- " moval served only to inflame the spirit of re- " sentment and intrigue. Until then, the quarrel " had been but temporal; the Pope's advisers, in " the hope of re-establishing their affairs, involved " it in all the jumble of spirituality. I then found " it necessary to carry on the contest with him " on that head; I had my council of conscience, " my ecclesiastical councils, and I invested my " imperial courts with the power of deciding in " cases of appeal from abuses; for my soldiers " could be of no further use in all this; I felt it " necessary to fight the Pope with his own wea- " pons. To his men of erudition, to his sophists, " his civilians, and his scribes, it was incumbent " upon me to oppose mine.

" An English plot was laid to carry him off " from Savona; it was of service to me, I caused " him to be removed to Fontainebleau; but that " was to be the period of his sufferings, and the " regeneration of his splendor. All my grand " views were accomplished in disguise and mys- " tery;—I had brought things to such a point, as " to render the developement infallible, without " any exertion, and in a way altogether natural. " It was accordingly consecrated by the Pope in

Digitized by Google

" the famous concordat of Fontainebleau, in spite
" even of my disasters at Moscow. What then
" would have been the result, had I returned
" victorious and triumphant? I had consequently
" obtained the separation, which was so desirable,
" of the spiritual from the temporal, which is so
" injurious to his Holiness, and the commixture
" of which produces disorder in society in the
" name and by the hands of him, who ought
" himself to be the centre of harmony; and from
" that time, I intended to exalt the Pope beyond
" measure, to surround him with grandeur and
" honours. I should have succeeded in suppres-
" sing all his anxiety for the loss of his temporal
" power; I should have made an idol of him;
" he would have remained near my person. Paris
" would have become the capital of Christendom,
" and I should have governed the religious
" as well as the political world. It was an ad-
" ditional means of binding tighter all the fede-
" rative parts of the empire, and of preserving
" the tranquillity of every thing placed without
" it. I should have had my religious as well as
" my legislative sessions; my councils would
" have constituted the representation of Chris-
" tianity, and the Popes would have only been
" the presidents. I should have called together
" and dissolved those assemblies, approved and
" published their discussions as Constantine and
" Charlemagne had done; and if that supremacy

Digitized by Google

" had escaped the Emperors, it was, because they " had committed the fault of letting the spiritual " heads reside at a remote distance from them, " who took advantage of the weakness of the " princes, or of the critical events, to shake off " their dependence and enslave them in their " turn.

" But" resumed the Emperor, " to accomplish " that object, I had found it requisite to manœuvre " with a great deal of dexterity; above all, to " conceal my real way of thinking, to give a di- " rection, altogether different to general opinion, " and to feed the public with vulgar trifles for the " purpose of more effectually concealing the im- " portance and depth of my secret design. I ac- " cordingly experienced a kind of satisfaction in " finding myself accused of barbarity towards the " Pope, and of tyranny in religious matters. " Foreigners, in particular, promoted my wishes " in this respect by filling their wretched libels " with invectives against my pitiful ambition, " which, according to them, had driven me " to devour the miserable patrimony of Saint " Peter, &c. &c. But I was perfectly aware, " that public opinion would again declare itself " in my favour at home, and that no means could " exist abroad for disconcerting my plan. What " measures would not have been employed for " its prevention, had it been anticipated at a sea- " sonable period, for how vast its future ascend-

Digitized by Google

"ency over all the Catholic countries, and how "great its influence even upon those that are not "so, by the co-operation of the members of that "religion who are spread throughout these coun- "tries, &c. &c.

"The Emperor said, that this deliverance from "the Court of Rome, this legal union, the con- "troul of religion in the hands of the sovereign, "had been, for a long time, the constant object "of his meditations and his wishes. England, "Russia, the northern crowns, and part of Ger- "many, are, he said, in possession of it. Venice "and Naples had enjoyed it. No government "can be carried on without it; a nation is other- "wise, every instant, affected in its tranquillity, "its dignity, its independence. But the task," he added, "was very difficult; at every step I was "alive to the danger. I was induced to think, "that once engaged in it, I should be abandoned "by the nation. I more than once sounded and "strove to elicit public opinion, but in vain, and "I have been enabled to convince myself that I "never should have had the national co-opera- "tion." And this explains a sally, which I had witnessed.

The Emperor perceiving, at one of those grand Sunday audiences, which were very numerously attended, the Archbishop of Tours (de Barral) addressed him in a very elevated tone; "Well! "Your Grace, how do our affairs with the Pope

Digitized by Google

" go on ?—'Sire, the deputation of your bishops is " about to set out for Savona.' Very well! en- " deavour to make the Pope listen to reason; " prevail upon him to conduct himself with pru- " dence; otherwise, the consequences will be " unpleasant. Tell him plainly, that he is no " longer in the times of the Gregories, and that I " am not a Débonnaire. He has the example of " Henry the VIII., and without his wickedness. " I possess more strength and power than he had. " Let him know, that whatever part I may take, " I have 600,000 Frenchmen in arms, who, in " every contingency will march with me, for me, " and as myself. The peasantry and mechanics " look to me alone and repose unlimited confi- " dence in me. The prudent and enlightened " part of the intermediate class, those who take " care of their interest, and wish for tranquillity " will follow me; the only class favourable to " him will be the meddling and talkative, who, " will forget him at the end of ten days, to chat " upon some fresh subject."

And as the archbishop, who betrayed his embarassment by his countenance, was about to stammer out some words, the Emperor added in a very softened tone; " You are unacquainted " with all this; I participate in your doctrines; " I honour your piety; I respect your charac- " ter!"

The Emperor, I now understand him perfectly,

Digitized by Google

had, no doubt, merely thrown out those observations in order, that we might give effect to them in other places; but he deceived himself with respect to our dispositions, or at least to those of the palace. Some, the least reflecting part, were decided and loud in censuring his conduct on these occasions; others, with the best intentions, were extremely cautious not to let a word of it transpire, least it should prove injurious to him in the public opinion; for such was, in general, our misconception, our singular manner of understanding and explaining the Emperor's meaning, that although without any bad design, and solely through levity, incoherency, or for fashion's sake, instead of making him popular, we were, perhaps, the very persons, who did him most injury. I very well remember, that the morning, when that famous concordat of Fontainebleau unexpectedly appeared in the Moniteur, some persons confidentially assured each other in the saloons of Saint Cloud, that nothing was less authentic than that document, and that it was a base fabrication; others whispered, that it was, no doubt, genuine in the main points, but that it had been extracted from the Pope by the Emperor's anger and violence. And this was so well described, that I should not be surprized, were the happy dramatic episode of Napoleon, at Fontainebleau, *dragging the father of the faithful by his white hair*, not supplied by the imagination of

Digitized by Google

the poetical proser who wrote it, but caught up from the mouths of the courtiers and even of the Emperor's servants themselves; yet this is the way in which history is written!

Warm Conversation with the Governor, in the Admiral's Presence.

18th.—The weather was most dreadful during the whole of the night and day. About three o'clock, the Emperor took advantage of its clearing up a little and went out. He came to my apartment, and we called on General Gourgaud who was indisposed. We then visited Madame de Montholon, who followed us to the garden. The Emperor was in excellent spirits, which enlivened the conversation. He undertook to persuade Madame de Montholon to make a general confession, particularly insisting upon her setting out with her first sin. "Come," said he, "speak "out without apprehension, do not let our neigh- "bour constrain you; consider him merely as "your confessor; we shall forget it all in a quar- "ter of an hour afterwards," &c. &c.

And I really believe he would have succeeded in persuading her, when the governor unfortunately came to interrupt so pleasant a scene; he made his appearance, and the Emperor to avoid receiving him, hastily took shelter in the bottom of the wood. We were joined in a few instants by M. de Montholon, who acquainted the

Digitized by Google

Emperor, that the governor and the admiral earnestly requested the honour of speaking with him. He thought that some communication was to be made on their part and returned to the garden, where he received them.

We remained behind, with the governor's officers. The conversation soon became animated on the part of the Emperor, who, as he walked between the governor and the admiral, almost uniformly addressed himself to the latter, even when he spoke to the former. We continued at too great a distance to hear any thing distinctly; but I have since learnt, that he again repeated, and with, perhaps, more energy and warmth, all that he had said to him in the preceding conversations.

In consequence of the favourable explanations, which the Admiral, who acted the part of mediator, laboured to give of the Governor's intentions, the Emperor observed: "The faults of "M. Lowe proceed from his habits of life. He "has never had the command of any but foreign "deserters, of Piedmontese, Corsicans, and Sici-"lians, all renegadoes, and traitors to their "country; the dregs and scum of Europe. If "he had commanded Englishmen; if he were "one himself, he would shew respect to those "who have a right to be honoured." In another instance, the Emperor declared, that there was a moral courage, as necessary as courage on the

Digitized by Google

field of battle; that M. Lowe did not exercise it here with regard to us, in dreaming only of our escape, rather than in employing the only real, prudent, reasonable, and sensible means for preventing it. The Emperor also told him, that, although his body was in the hands of evil-minded men, his soul was as lofty and independent as when at the head of 400,000 men, or on the throne, when he disposed of kingdoms.

To the article respecting the reduction of our expenses, and the money which was asked of the Emperor, he answered; "All those details are "very painful to me; they are mean. You "might place me on the burning pile of Montezuma or Guatimozin without extracting from "me gold, which I do not possess. Besides, "who asks you for any thing? Who entreats "you to feed me? When you discontinue "your supply of provisions, those brave soldiers, "whom you see there," pointing, with his hand, to the camp of the 53d, "will take pity on me; "I shall go place myself at the grenadier's table, "and they will not, I am confident, drive away "the first, the oldest soldier of Europe."

The Emperor having reproached the Governor with having kept some books, which were addressed to him, he answered, that he had done so in consequence of their having been sent under the address of *Emperor*. "And who," replied the Emperor, with emotion, "gave you the right

Digitized by Google

" of disputing that title ? In a few years, your " Lord Castlereagh, your Lord Bathurst, and all " the others;—you, who speak to me,—will be " buried in the dust of oblivion, or if your names " be remembered, it will be only on account of " the indignity with which you have treated me, " while the Emperor Napoleon shall, doubtless, " continue for ever the subject, the ornament of " history, and the star of civilized nations. Your " libels are of no avail against me; you have " expended millions on them; what have they " produced? Truth pierces through the clouds, " it shines like the sun, and like it, is im- " perishable."

The Emperor admitted that he had, during this conversation, seriously and repeatedly offended Sir Hudson Lowe; and he also did him the justice to acknowledge, that Sir Hudson Lowe had not precisely shewn, in a single instance, any want of respect; he had contented himself with muttering, between his teeth, sentences which were not audible. He once said, that he had solicited his recal, and the Emperor observed, that that was the most agreeable word he could possibly have said. He also said, that we endeavoured to blacken his character in Europe, but that our conduct, in that respect, was a matter of indifference to him. The only failure, perhaps, said the Emperor, on the part of the Governor, and which was trifling, compared with the treatment he had

Digitized by Google

received, was the abrupt way in which he retired, while the Admiral withdrew slowly, and with numerous salutes. "The Admiral was "precisely then," observed the Emperor, in a gay tone of voice, "what the Marquis de Gallo "was at the time of my rupture of Passeriano," &c. &c. An allusion to one of the chapters of the campaign of Italy, which he had dictated to me.

The Emperor remarked, that, after all, he had to reproach himself with that scene. "I must "see this officer no more; he makes me fly into "a violent passion; it is beneath my dignity; "expressions escape me which would have been "unpardonable at the Tuileries; if they can at "all be excused here, it is because I am in his "hands, and subject to his power."

After dinner, the Emperor caused a letter to be read, in answer to the Governor, who had officially sent the treaty of the 2d of August, by which the allied Sovereigns stipulated for the imprisonment of Napoleon. Sir Hudson Lowe, by the same conveyance, asked to introduce the foreign commissioners to Longwood. The Emperor had, in the course of the day, dictated the letter to Monsieur de Montholon. It was his wish, that every one of us should propose his objections, and state his opinions. It seemed to us a master-piece of dignity, energy, and sound reasoning.

Digitized by Google

The Conversation with the Governor again noticed, &c.—Effect of the Libels against Napoleon.—Treaty of Fontainebleau.—The Work of General S——n.

19th.—The weather continued as dreadful as we had ever seen it. It has been, for several days, like one of our equinoctial storms in Europe. The Emperor exposed himself to it to come to my apartment about ten o'clock; in going out he struck one of his legs against a nail near the door; his stocking was torn halfway down the leg; happily, the skin was only scratched. He was obliged to return to change. "You owe "me a pair of stockings," he said, while his valet de chambre was putting on another pair; "a "polite man does not expose his visitors to such "dangers in his apartments. You are lodged "too much like a seaman; it is true, that is not "your fault. I thought myself careless about "these matters, but you actually surpass me."— "Sire," I answered, "my merit is not great, no "choice is left me. I am truly a hog in its mire, "I must confess; but as your Majesty says, it "is not altogether my fault."

We went into the garden, when it had cleared up for a moment. The Emperor reverted to the conversation which he had yesterday with the Governor, in the Admiral's presence, and again reproached himself with the violence of his expressions. "It would have been more worthy of

Digitized by Google

" me, more consistent and more dignified, to have " expressed all these things with perfect com- " posure; they would, besides, have been more " impressive." He recollected, in particular, a name which had escaped him against M. Lowe *(scribe d'etat-major)*, which must have shocked him, and the more so because it described the truth, and that, we know, is always offensive. " I have myself," said the Emperor, " experienced " that feeling in the island of Elba. When I ran " over the most infamous libels, they did not " affect me even in the slightest manner. When " I was told or read, that I had *strangled, poisoned,* " *ravished;* that I had massacred my sick; that " my carriage had been driven over my wounded; " I laughed out of commiseration. How often did " I not then say to Madame; ' Make haste, my " mother, come and see the *savage*, the *man-tiger,* " *the devourer of the human-race;* come and admire " the fruit of your womb!' But when their was " a slight approach to truth, the effect was no " longer the same, I felt the necessity of defending " myself; I accumulated reasons for my justifi- " cation, and even then, it never happened, that " I was left without some traces of a secret tor- " ment. My dear Las Cases, this is man!"

The Emperor passed from this subject to his protestation against the treaty of the 2d of August, which had been read to us after dinner. I presumed to ask him, whether, after noticing in

Digitized by Google

a conspicuous manner, the acknowledgment of his title of Emperor by the English, during their negociations at Paris and Chatillon, he had not forgotten that, which they must have made on the treaty of Fontainebleau, and which, it struck me was omitted. "It was," he quickly replied, "done on purpose; I have nothing to do with "that treaty; I disclaim it; I am far from boast- "ing of it, I am rather ashamed of it. It was dis- "cussed for me. I was betrayed by N . . . . ; "who brought it to me. If I had been then "willing to treat with common sense, I should "have obtained the kingdom of Italy, Tuscany, "or Corsica, &c. &c. all that I could have desired. "My decision was the result of a fault inherent "in my character, a caprice on my part, a real "constitutional excess. I was seized with a dis- "like and contempt of every thing around me, I "was affected with the same feeling for fortune, "which I took delight in out-facing. I cast "my eye on a spot of land, where I might be "uncomfortable and take advantage of the "mistakes that might be made. I fixed upon "the island of Elba. It was the act of a soul "of rock. I am, no doubt, my dear Las Cases, "of a very singular disposition, but we should "not be extraordinary, were we not of a peculiar "mould; I am a piece of rock, lanched into "space! You will not, perhaps, easily believe "me, but I do not regret my grandeur; you see

Digitized by Google

"me slightly affected by what I have lost." "And "why, Sire," I observed, "should I not believe "you? What have you to regret? . . . . The "life of man is but an atom in the duration of "history, but with regard to your majesty, the "one is already so full, that you scarcely ought "to take any interest but in the other; if your "body suffers here, your memory is enriched a "hundred-fold. Had it been your lot to end "your days in the bosom of uninterrupted pros-"perity, how many grand and striking circum-"stances would have passed away unknown! "You yourself, Sire, have assured me of this, "and I have remained impressed with the force "of that truth. Not a day, in fact, passes in "which those, who were your enemies, do not "repeat with us, who are your faithful servants, "that you are unquestionably greater here than "in the Tuileries. And even on this rock to which "you have been transplanted by violence and "perfidy, do you not still command? Your "jailors, your masters, are at your feet, your "soul captivates every one that comes near "you; you shew yourself what history repre-"sents Saint Louis, in the chains of the Saracens, "*the real master of his conquerors.* Your irre-"sistible ascendency accompanies you here. "We, who are all about you, Sire, entertain this "opinion of you; the Russian commissioner ex-"pressed the same sentiment, we are assured,

Digitized by Google

" the other day, and it is felt by those who " guard you. . . . What have you to regret?"

On our return the Emperor, in spite of the storm, ordered his breakfast in the tent, and kept me with him. The water did not penetrate; the only inconvenience was a considerable degree of moisture; but the squalls of wind and rain whirled round us, and vented themselves far before us, towards the bottom of the valley; the spectacle was not destitute of beauty.

The Emperor retired about two o'clock; he sent for me some time afterwards to his cabinet. " I have," said he, laying down the book, " just read General S——n; he is a madman, a " hair-brained fellow, he writes nonsense. He " is, however, after all, readable and amusing; he " cuts up, dissects, judges, and pronounces sen- " tence upon men and things. He does not " hesitate to give advice, in several instances, to " Wellington, and asserts, that he ought to have " made some campaigns under Kleber, &c. " Kleber was no doubt a great general, but the " notice taken of Soult is not precisely the best " part of the book; he is much better as an ex- " cellent director, as a good war minister."

" This S——n," he continued, " deserted from " the camp at Boulogne, with all my secrets, to " the English; that might have been attended " with serious consequences. S——n was a " general officer; his conduct was dreadful and

Digitized by Google

" unpardonable. But observe how a man in the " moment of revolution may be a bad character, " impudent, and shameless. I found him, on my " return from the island of Elba, he waited for " me with confidence, and wrote a long letter in " which he attempted to make me his dupe. The " English, he said, were miserable creatures; he " had been a long time among them; he was ac- " quainted with their means and resources, and " could be very useful to me. He knew that I " was too magnanimous, too great to remem- " ber the wrongs I had suffered from him, &c. I " ordered him to be arrested, and as he had been " already tried and condemned, I am at a loss to " know why he was not shot. Either there was " not time to carry his sentence into effect, or he " was forgotten. There can be no forbearance, " no indulgence for the general, who has the in- " famy to prostitute himself to a foreign power."

The grand marshal came in; the Emperor, after continuing the conversation for some time, took him away to play at chess. He suffered much from the badness of the weather.

After dinner he read Le Tartufe; but he was so fatigued, that he could not get through it. He laid down the book, and after paying a just tribute of eulogy to Moliere, he concluded in a manner which we little expected. " The whole of the " Tartufe" he remarked, is, " unquestionably, " finished with the hand of a master, it is one of the

Digitized by Google

" chefs d'œuvre of an inimitable writer. This piece " is, however, marked with such a character, that " I am not at all surprized, its appearance should " have been the subject of interesting negocia- " tions at Versailles, and of a great deal of hesita- " tion on the part of Louis XIV. If I have a " right to be astonished at any thing, it is at his " allowing it to be performed. It holds out, in " my mind, devotion under such odious colours; " a certain scene presents so decisive a situation, " so completely indecent, that for my own part, " I do not hesitate to say, if the comedy had been " written in my time, I would not have allowed " it to be represented."

The Baroness de S. . . ., &c.

20th.—About four o'clock, I attended the Emperor, according to his orders, in the billiard room. The weather still continued dreadful; it did not allow him to set his foot out of doors, and he was, he said, notwithstanding, driven from his apartment and the saloon by the smoke. He found my countenance, he remarked, quite cast down; it was with the most lively indignation, and he wished to know the cause of it.

" Two or three years," I said, " have passed " since a clerk in the war office, a very worthy " man, as far as I know, used to come to my " house to give my son lessons in writing and in " Latin. He had a daughter, whom he wished " to make a governess, and begged us to recom-

Digitized by Google

" mend her, should an occasion present itself.
" Madame Las Cases sent for her; she was
" charming, and in every respect highly attrac-
" tive. From that moment, Madame Las Cases
" invited her occasionally to her house, with the
" view of introducing her into the world, and ob-
" taining some acquaintances for her who might
" prove useful. But how strange! this young
" person, our acquaintance, our obliged friend,
" is actually at this moment, the *Baroness de*
" *S* . . . . , the wife of one of the Commissioners
" of the allied powers, who arrived nearly a
" month since, in the island.

" Your Majesty may judge of my surprize, and
" of all my joy at this singular caprice of fortune.
" I am then about to have, I said to myself, positive,
" particular, and even secret information respect-
" ing every thing that interests me. Several days
" passed without any communication, but without
" any anxiety, and even with some satisfaction on
" my part. For, I thought the greater the caution,
" the more I had to expect. At length hurried on
" by my impatience, I sent three or four days ago
" my servant to Madam de S. . . . .; I had de-
" scribed her very properly, and as an inhabitant
" of the island he found no difficulty in gaining
" admittance. He returned shortly with an an-
" swer from Madam de S . . . ., that she did not
" know the person who had sent him. I might,
" under every circumstance, be still induced to

Digitized by Google

" think, that this was an excess of prudence, and " that she was unwilling to place confidence in one " unknown to her. But this very day, I received " notice from the governor, not to attempt to " form any secret connexion in the island, that I " ought to be aware of the danger to which I ex- " posed myself, and that the attempt with which " he reproached me was not a matter of doubt; " for he was put in possession of it by the very " person to whom I had addressed myself. Your " Majesty now knows what has confounded me. " To find so villanous a charge in a quarter " where I had a right to expect some interest in " my affairs, and even gratitude, has irritated me " beyond measure; I am no longer the same " person."

The Emperor laughed in my face; " How little " do you know of the human heart! What! her " father was your son's tutor, or something of that " kind; she enjoyed your wife's protection when " she was in want of it, and she is become a Ger- " man baroness! But, my dear Las Cases, you " are the person whom she dreads most here, " who lay her most under constraint; she did " not even see your wife at Paris, and besides, " this mischievous Sir Hudson Lowe may have " been delighted with giving an odious turn to " the thing; he is so artful, so malignant." . . . . And he then began again to laugh at me and my anger.

Digitized by Google

After dinner the Emperor resumed his reading of the Tartufe, which he had not finished yesterday, and there was enough left for to-day. The Emperor was quite dejected; the bad weather has a visible effect upon him.

Corvisard.—Anecdotes of the Saloons of Paris.

21st.—The weather as horrible as ever.—We are seriously incommoded with the wet in our apartments; the rain penetrates every where.

The governor's secretary brought me a letter from Europe; it communicated a few moments of real happiness; it contained the recollections and good wishes of my dearest friends. I went and read it to the Emperor.

The Emperor suffered seriously from the badness of the weather. He went to his saloon about four o'clock; he thought he had the fever, and found himself much depressed; he called for some punch, and played a few games of chess with the grand marshal. The doctor is arrived from the town. The two vessels just arrived came from the Cape; one of them is the Podargus, which left Europe ten days after the Griffin; the other, a small frigate on her way from India to Europe. There was, it was said, a letter for the *Emperor Napoleon*, but it was not delivered, and we did not know from whom it came.

After dinner it was said, that the medicines in the island were exhausted, and it was remarked,

Digitized by Google

that the Emperor could not be accused of having contributed to it. This led him to observe, that he did not recollect having ever taken any medicine at the Tuileries. He had had three blisters at once, and he had stopped them without taking any. He received a serious wound at Toulon; it was he said, like that of Ulysses, by which his old nurse knew him again; he had recovered, altogether without taking physic. One of us taking the liberty to say; "If your majesty had the dysentary to-morrow, would you still reject all kind of medicine?" The Emperor answered; "At present that I am tolerably well, I answer, "yes, without hesitation; but if I got very ill, I "should, perhaps, alter my mind, and should "then feel that kind of conversion, which is produced on a dying man through the fear of the "devil." He again mentioned his incredulity in physic, but he did not think so, he said, of surgery. He had three times commenced a course of anatomical study; but he had been always interrupted by business and disgust. "On a certain occasion and at the end of a long discussion, Corvisard, desirous of speaking to me "with his proofs in hand, was so abominable and "filthy as to bring a stomach, wrapped up in his "pocket handkerchief to Saint Cloud, and I was "instantly compelled, at that horrible sight, to "cast up all I had in mine."

The Emperor attempted, after dinner, to read

Digitized by Google

a comedy, but he was so fatigued and suffered so much, that he was forced to stop and retire about nine o'clock. He made me follow him, and as he felt no inclination to sleep, he said; "Come, my "dear Las Cases, let us see; let us have a story "about your fauxbourg Saint Germain, and let us "endeavour to laugh at it, as if we were listening "to the Thousand and One Nights' Tales!"— "Very well, Sire; there was formerly one of "your Majesty's chamberlains, who had a grand "uncle, who was very old, very old indeed, ... "and I remember your Majesty telling us the "story of a heavy German officer, who, taken "prisoner at the opening of the campaign of "Italy, complained that a young conceited fellow "had been sent to command against them, who "spoiled the profession, and made it intolerable. "Well! we had precisely his likeness among us; "it was the old grand-uncle, who was still dress-"ed nearly in the costume of Louis XIV. He "showed off, whenever you sent accounts of any "extraordinary achievements on the other side "of the Rhine; your bulletins of Ulm and Jena "operated upon him like so many revulsions of "bile. He was far from admiring you. You "also spoiled the profession in his opinion. He "had, he frequently said, made the campaigns "of the Marshal de Saxe, which indeed were "prodigies in war, and had not been sufficiently "appreciated. 'War was, no doubt, then an art;

Digitized by Google

" but now!!!' he remarked, shrugging up his " shoulders.... ' In our time, we carried on war " with great decorum; we had our mules; we " were followed by our canteens; we had our " tents; we lived well; we had even plays per- " formed at head-quarters; the armies approached " each other; admirable positions were occu- " pied; a battle took place; a siege was oc- " casionally carried on, and afterwards we went " into winter-quarters, to renew our operations " in the Spring. That is,' he exclaimed, with " exultation, ' what may be called making war! " But now, a whole army disappears before " another in a single battle, and a monarchy is " overturned; a hundred leagues are run over in " ten days; as for sleeping and eating, they are " out of the question. Truly, if you call that " genius, I am, for my own part, obliged to ac- " knowledge, that I know nothing about it; and " accordingly, you excite my pity, when I hear " you call him a great man.' "

The Emperor burst into fits of laughter, particularly when the mules and canteens were mentioned. He then added; " you were of course " accustomed to say a great many foolish things " about me."—" O yes, Sire, and in vast abund- " ance." " Very well! We are alone; nobody " will intrude; tell me some more of them." " A " fine gentleman, who had formerly been a cap- " tain of cavalry, and who seemed perfectly satis-

Digitized by Google

" fied with his own person and accomplishments,
" was introduced to a select society where I was
" present. ' I come,' he said, ' from the plain des
" Sablons. I have just seen *our Ostrogoth* man-
" œuvre.' That, Sire, was your Majesty. ' He
" had two or three regiments which he threw
" into confusion upon each other, and they
" were all lost in some bushes. I would
" have taken him and all his men prisoners
" with fifty maitres (formerly troopers) only.
" An usurped reputation!' he exclaimed. ' Ac-
" cordingly, Moreau was always of opinion,
" that he would fail in Germany. A war with
" Germany is talked of; if it take place, we shall
" see how he will extricate himself. He will
" have justice done to him.'

" The war took place, and your Majesty sent
" us in a very few days the bulletin of Ulm and
" that of Austerlitz, &c.; our fine gentleman
" again made his appearance in the same com-
" pany, and for the instant, we could not, not-
" withstanding our malevolence, help crying out
" all in the same breath; ' And your fifty maitres!'
" ' Oh! truly,' said he, ' it is impossible to com-
" prehend the thing; this man triumphs over
" every obstacle; fortune leads him by the hand,
" and besides, the Austrians are so awkward;
" such fools!' " . . . .

The Emperor laughed heartily, and wished for some anecdote still more absurd. " That would

Digitized by Google

"indeed, Sire, be very difficult. I recollect, "however, an old dowager, who to the day of "her death obstinately refused to give credit to "any of your successes in Germany. When Ulm, "Austerlitz, and your entrance into Vienna were "mentioned in her presence;—'So you be-"lieve all that,' said she, shrugging up her shoul-"ders. 'It is all his fabrication. He would not "presume to set a foot in Germany; be assured, "that he is still behind the Rhine, where he is "perishing from fear, and sends us those silly "stories: you will learn in time that I am not "to be imposed upon.'"

And these stories being over, the Emperor sent me away, saying; "What are they doing, "what must they say, at present? I am certainly "now giving them a fine opportunity."

22d.—This was a day of real mourning for me, it was the first, since our departure from France, in which I did not see the Emperor. I was the only one, in consequence of fortunate circumstances, who, until now, had enjoyed that happiness. His sufferings were great, and his seclusion complete. He did not wish to see a single person.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor continues ill.—Remarkable Official Document, addressed to Sir Hudson Lowe.

23d.—The weather has continued wet and rainy. About half-past three, the Emperor sent for me to his chamber. He was dressing himself; he had been very seriously indisposed, but thanks to his mode of treating himself, he said, and to his hermetical seclusion of the preceding day, his complaint was over. He was again well.

I dared to express my sincere grief; I had inscribed, I said, an unhappy day in my journal; I should have marked it in red ink. And when he learned what it was; "What, in fact," he said, "is it the only day, since we left France, "in which you have not seen me? ... And you "are the only one! ...." And after some seconds of silence, he added, in a tone peculiarly adapted to make me amends, if that were possible; "But, my dear Las Cases, if you set "such a value on it, if you consider it of so "much moment, why did you not come and "knock at my door? I am not inaccessible to "you."

The Doctor was introduced; he assured us that the Governor had promised never again to set foot at Longwood. It was ironically observed

Digitized by Google

by one of us, that he began to make himself agreeable.

The Emperor then went to his library, where a long letter I had written to Rome *, was read to him by my son. He was driven out by the wet, and, on his way to the saloon and billiard-room, he was tempted by the sight of the steps to walk a little. "I know," he said, "I am "doing what is not prudent." Happily, the wet weather forced him to return almost instantly. He took a seat in the saloon, where there was a good fire, called for some orange-leaf ptisan, and played some games of chess.

After dinner, the Emperor read Marmontel's tales, and stopped at that of the self-styled philosopher. He still coughed a great deal, and again called for some of the same ptisan. He entered into a long and most interesting review of Jean Jaques, of his talents, his influence, his eccentricities, his private vices, &c. He retired at ten o'clock. I regret very much, that I cannot now recollect the particulars relative to all these objects.

In the course of the day M. de Montholon addressed the following official answer to the Governor, who had sent a letter, respecting the

* It was my letter to Prince Lucien, since so celebrated in the history of my persecutions, and which will be found in its proper place.

Digitized by Google

commissioners of the allied powers, and the embarrassed state of his finances. It is the letter, which I have already noticed, the 18th of this month.

OFFICIAL DOCUMENT.

"General,—I have received the treaty of the 2d of August, 1815, concluded between his Britannic Majesty, the Emperor of Austria, the Emperor of Russia, and the King of Prussia, which was annexed to your letter of the 23d of July.

"The Emperor Napoleon protests against the purport of that treaty; he is not the prisoner of England. After having placed his abdication in the hands of the representatives of the nation, for the benefit of the constitution, adopted by the French people, and in favour of his son, he proceeded voluntarily and freely to England, for the purpose of residing there, as a private person, in retirement, under the protection of the British laws. The violation of all laws cannot constitute a right in fact. The person of the Emperor Napoleon is in the power of England; but neither, as a matter of fact, nor of right, has it been, or is it, at present, in the power of Austria, Russia, and Prussia; even according to the laws and customs of England, which has never included, in its exchange of prisoners, Russians, Austrians, Prussians, Spaniards, or

Digitized by Google

Portuguese, although united to these powers by treaties of alliance, and making war conjointly with them. The Convention of the 2d of August, made fifteen days after the Emperor Napoleon had arrived in England, cannot, as a matter of right, have any effect; it merely presents the spectacle of the coalition of the four principal powers of Europe, for the oppression of a single man; a coalition which the opinion of every people disavows, as do all the principles of sound morality. The Emperors of Austria and Russia, and the King of Prussia not possessing, either in fact or by right, any power over the person of the Emperor Napoleon, were incapable of enacting any thing with regard to him. If the Emperor Napoleon had been in the power of the Emperor of Austria, that prince would have remembered the relations formed by religion and nature between a father and a son, relations which are never violated with impunity. He would have remembered that, four times, Napoleon re-established him on his throne; at Leoben, in 1797, and at Luneville in 1801, when his armies were under the walls of Vienna; at Presburg in 1806, and at Vienna in 1809, when his armies were in possession of the capital and of three fourths of the monarchy. That prince would have remembered the protestations which he made to him at the bivouac of Moravia in

Digitized by Google

1806, and at the interview at Dresden in 1812. If the person of the Emperor Napoleon had been in the power of the Emperor Alexander, he would have remembered the ties of friendship, contracted at Tilsit, at Erfurth, and during twelve years of daily intercourse; he would have remembered the conduct of the Emperor Napoleon the day subsequent to the battle of Austerlitz, when having it in his power to take him prisoner with the remains of his army, he contented himself with his word, and let him effect his retreat; he would have remembered the dangers to which the Emperor Napoleon personally exposed himself to extinguish the fire of Moscow and preserve that capital for him; unquestionably that prince would not have violated the duties of friendship and gratitude towards a friend in distress. If the person of the Emperor Napoleon had been even in power of the King of Prussia, that sovereign would not have forgotten that it was optional with the Emperor, after the battle of Friedland, to place another prince on the throne of Berlin; he would not have forgotten, in the presence of a disarmed enemy, the protestations of devotedness and the sentiments which he expressed to him in 1812, at the interviews at Dresden. It is, accordingly, evident from the 2d and 5th articles of the said treaty, that being incapable of any influence whatever over the fate, and the person of the Emperor Napoleon, who is not in their power,

Digitized by Google

these princes refer themselves in that respect to the future conduct of his Britannic Majesty, who undertakes to fulfil all obligations.

"These princes have reproached the Emperor Napoleon with preferring the protection of the English laws to theirs. The false ideas which the Emperor Napoleon entertained of the liberality of the English laws, and of the influence of a great, generous, and free people on its government, decided him in preferring the protection of these laws to that of his father-in-law, or of his old friend. The Emperor Napoleon always would have been able to obtain the security of what related personally to himself, whether by placing himself again at the head of the army of the Loire, or by putting himself at the head of the army of the Gironde, commanded by General Clauzel; but looking for the future only to retirement and to the protection of the laws of a free nation, either English or American, all stipulations appeared useless to him. He thought, that the English people would have been more bound by his frank conduct, which was noble and full of confidence, than it could have been by the most solemn treaties. He has been deceived, but this delusion will for ever excite the indignation of real Britons, and with the present as well as future generations, it will be a proof of the perfidy of the English administration. Austrian and Russian commissioners are arrived at Saint-Helena;

Digitized by Google

if the object of their mission be to fulfil part of the duties, which the Emperors of Austria and Russia have contracted by the treaty of the 2d of August, and to take care, that the English agents, in a small colony, in the middle of the Ocean, do not fail in the attentions, due to a prince, connected with them by the ties of affinity, and by so many relations, the characteristics of these two sovereigns will be recognized in that measure. But you, Sir, have asserted, that these commissioners possessed neither the right nor the power of giving any opinion on whatever may be transacted on this rock.

"The English ministry have caused the Emperor Napoleon to be transported to Saint Helena, two thousand leagues from Europe. This rock, situated under the tropic at the distance of five hundred leagues from every kind of continent is, in that latitude, exposed to a devouring heat; it is, during three-fourths of the year, covered with clouds and mists, it is at once the dryest and wettest country in the world. This is the most inimical climate to the Emperor's health. It is hatred which dictated the selection of this residence as well as the instructions, given by the English ministry to the officers, who command in this country; they have been ordered to call the Emperor Napoleon, General, being desirous of compelling him to acknowledge, that he never reigned in France, which decided him not to take an incog-

Digitized by Google

nito title, as he had determined, in quitting France. First magistrate for life, under the title of first-consul, he concluded the preliminaries of London and the treaty of Amiens with the king of Great Britain. He received as ambassadors, Lord Cornwallis, Mr. Merry, and Lord Whitworth, who resided in that quality at his court. He sent to the King of England, Count Otto and General Andreossi, who resided as ambassadors at the Court of Windsor. When, after the exchange of letters between the ministers for foreign affairs belonging to the two monarchies, Lord Lauderdale came to Paris, provided with full powers from the King of England, he treated with the plenipotentiaries provided with full powers from the Emperor Napoleon, and resided several months at the court of the Tuileries. When, afterwards, at Chatillon, Lord Castlereagh signed the ultimatum, which the allied powers presented to the plenipotentiaries of the Emperor Napoleon, he thereby, recognized the fourth dynasty. That ultimatum was more advantageous than the treaty of Paris; but France was required to renounce Belgium and the left bank of the Rhine, which was contrary to the propositions of Frankfort and to the proclamations of the allied powers; and was also contrary to the oath by which, at his consecration, the Emperor had sworn the integrity of the empire. The Emperor then thought

Digitized by Google

these national limits, were necessary to the security of France as well as to the equilibrium of Europe; he thought that the French nation, in the circumstances under which she found herself, ought rather to risk every chance of war than to give them up. France would have obtained that integrity, and with it preserved her honour, had not treason contributed to the success of the allies. The treaty of the 2d of August, and the bill of the British parliament style the Emperor, Napoleon Buonaparte, and give him only the title of General. The title of *General Buonaparte* is, no doubt, eminently glorious; the Emperor bore it at Lodi, at Castiglione, at Rivoli, at Arcole, at Leoben, at the Pyramids, at Aboukir; but for seventeen years he has borne that of First Consul and of Emperor; it would be an admission, that he has been neither first magistrate of the republic, nor sovereign of the fourth dynasty. Those, who think that nations are flocks, which, by divine right, belong to some families, are neither of the present age, nor of the spirit of the English legislature, which has several times changed the succession of its dynasties, because the great alterations occasioned by opinions, in which the reigning princes did not participate, had made them enemies to the happiness of the great majority of that nation. For kings are but hereditary magistrates, who exist but for the

Digitized by Google

happiness of nations, and not nations for the satisfaction of kings. It is the same spirit of hatred, which directed that the Emperor Napoleon should not write, nor receive any letter without its being opened and read by the English ministers and the officers of Saint Helena. He has, by that regulation, been interdicted the possibility of receiving intelligence from his mother, his wife, his son, his brothers; and when, wishing to free himself from the inconvenience of having his letters read by inferior officers, he desired to send sealed letters to the Prince Regent, he was told, that open letters only could be taken charge of and conveyed, and that such were the instructions of the ministry. That measure stands in need of no comment; it will suggest strange ideas of the spirit of the administration by which it was dictated; it would be disclaimed even at Algiers! Letters have been received for general officers in the Emperor's suite; they were opened and delivered to you; you have retained them, because they had not been transmitted through the medium of the English ministry; it was found necessary to make them travel four thousand leagues over again, and these officers had the misfortune to know, that there existed on this rock news from their wives, their mothers, and their children, and that they could not be put in possession of it, in less than six months!!!—The heart revolts. Permission could not be obtained

Digitized by Google

to subscribe to the Morning Chronicle, to the Morning Post, or to some French journals: some broken numbers of the Times have been occasionally sent to Longwood. In consequence of the demand made on board of the Northumberland, some books have been sent, but all those, which relate to the transactions of late years, have been carefully kept back. It was since intended to open a correspondence with a London bookseller for the purpose of being directly supplied with books which might be wanted, and with those relative to the events of the day; that intention was frustrated. An English author having published at London, an account of his travels in France, took the trouble to send it, as a present to the Emperor, but you did not think yourself authorized to deliver it to him, because it had not reached you through the channel of your government. It is also said, that other books, sent by their authors have not been delivered, because the address of some was,—To the Emperor Napoleon, and of others,—To Napoleon the Great. The English ministry are not authorized to order any of these vexations. The law, however unjust, considers the Emperor Napoleon as a prisoner of war; but prisoners of war have never been prohibited from subscribing to the journals, or receiving books that are printed; such a prohibition is exercised only in the dungeons of the inquisition.

Digitized by Google

"The island of St. Helena is ten leagues in circumference; it is every where inaccessible; the coast is guarded by brigs, posts within sight of each other are placed on the shore, and all communication with the sea is rendered impracticable. There is but one small town, James Town, where the vessels anchor, and from which they sail. In order to prevent the escape of an individual, it is sufficient to guard the coast by land and sea. By interdicting the interior of the island, one object only can be in view, that of preventing a ride of eight or ten miles, which it would be possible to take on horseback, and the privation of which, according to the consultations of medical men, is abridging the Emperor's days.

"The Emperor has been placed at Longwood, which is exposed to every wind; a barren piece of ground, uninhabited, without water, and incapable of any kind of cultivation. The space contains about 1200 uncultivated fathoms. At the distance of 11 or 1200 fathoms, a camp was established on a small eminence; another has been since placed nearly at the same distance in an opposite direction, so that in the intense heat of the tropic, whatever way the eye is directed, nothing is seen but encampments. Admiral Malcolm, perceiving the utility of which a tent would be to the Emperor in that situation, has had one pitched by his seamen at the distance of twenty paces from the house; it is the only spot

Digitized by Google

in which shade is to be found. The Emperor, has, however, every reason to be satisfied with the spirit which animates the officers and soldiers of the gallant 53d, as he had been with the crew of the Northumberland. Longwood house was constructed to serve as a barn to the company's farm; some apartments were afterwards made in it by the Deputy-Governor of the island; he used it for a country-house; but it was, in no respect, adapted for a residence. During the year it has been inhabited, it has been always in want of repair, and the Emperor has been constantly exposed to the inconvenience and unwholesomeness of a house, in which workmen are employed. His bedchamber is too small to contain a bedstead of ordinary size; but every kind of building at Longwood would prolong the inconvenience arising from the workmen employed. There are, however, in this wretched island, some beautiful situations, with fine trees, gardens, and tolerably good houses, among others Plantation House; but you are prevented by the positive instructions of the ministry from granting this house, which would have saved a great deal of expense laid out in building, at Longwood, huts covered with pitched paper, which are no longer of any use. You have prohibited every kind of intercourse between us and the inhabitants of the island; you have, in fact, converted Longwood House into a secret prison; you have even thrown

Digitized by Google

difficulties in the way of our communication with the officers of the garrison. The most anxious care would seem to be taken to deprive us of the few resources afforded by this miserable country, and we are no better off here than we should be on Ascension Rock. During the four months you have been at St. Helena, you have, Sir, rendered the Emperor's condition worse. It was observed to you by Count Bertrand, that you violated the law of your legislature, that you trampled upon the privileges of general officers, prisoners of war. You answered, that you knew nothing but the letter of your instructions, and that they were still worse than your conduct appeared to us.

I have the honour, &c. &c.

(Signed) COUNT DE MONTHOLON.

" P. S.—I had, Sir, signed this letter, when I received yours of the 17th, to which you annex the estimate of an annual sum of 20,000*l.* sterling, which you consider indispensable to meet the expenses of the establishment of Longwood, after having made all the reductions which you have thought possible. The consideration of this estimate can, in no respect, concern us; the Emperor's table is scarcely supplied with what is necessary; all the provisions are of a bad quality and four times dearer than at Paris. You require a fund of twelve thousand pounds sterling from the Emperor, as your government only allows you

Digitized by Google

eight thousand pounds for all these expenses. I have had the honour of telling you, that the Emperor had no funds; that no letter had been received or written for a year, and that he was altogether unacquainted with what is passing or what may have passed in Europe. Transplanted by violence to this rock, at the distance of two thousand leagues, without being able to receive or to write any letter, he now finds himself at the discretion of the English agents. The Emperor has uniformly desired and still desires to provide himself for all his expenses of every nature, and he will do so, as speedily as you shall give possibility to the means, by taking off the prohibition, laid upon the merchants of the island, of carrying on his correspondence, and releasing it from all kind of inquisition on your part or on that of any of your agents. The moment the Emperor's wants shall be known in Europe, the persons who interest themselves for him, will transmit the necessary funds for his supplies.

"The letter of Lord Bathurst, which you have communicated to me, gives rise to strange ideas! can your ministers then be so ignorant as not to know, that the spectacle of a great man struggling with adversity is the most sublime of spectacles? Can they be ignorant, that Napoleon at Saint Helena, in the midst of persecutions of every kind, against which his serenity is his only shield, is greater, more sacred, more venerable than on the

Digitized by Google

first throne of the world, where he was, so long, the arbiter of Kings? Those, who, fail in respect to Napoleon, thus situated, merely degrade their own character and the nation which they represent!"

My English Family.—Just Debt of Gratitude to the English on the part of the Emigrants, &c.—General Joubert.—Petersburg.—Moscow; the Fire.—Projects of Napoleon, had he returned victorious.

24th.—I went, at two o'clock, to the Emperor, in his apartment. He had sent for my atlas in the morning. I found him finishing his examination of the map of Russia, and of that part of America adjoining the Russian establishments.

He had suffered, and coughed a great deal, during the night. The weather had, however, assumed a mild appearance. While he was dressing to go out, he often dwelt upon the happy idea of the atlas, the merit of its execution, and the immensity of its contents. He concluded, as usual, with saying; "What a collection! What "details! How complete in all its parts!"

The Emperor went to the garden. I told him, that I had written, in the morning, to England, and answered the letter which I had read to him two or three days ago. "Your English family," he then observed, "seem to be very good kind

Digitized by Google

"of people; they are very fond of you, and you "appear very much attached to them." I answered; "Sire, I took care of them in France, "during their ten years of captivity, and they "had taken care of me in England, during my "ten years of emigration. It is altogether the "hospitality of the ancients which we exer- "cise towards each other. I rely upon them, "in every respect, and they are at liberty to "dispose of all I possess." "This," said he, "is a very happy connexion. How did you "obtain it? To what are you indebted for it?" I then told him how I became acquainted with this family.

"Never was the plank, by the assistance of "which an unfortunate person, after shipwreck, "preserved his life, dearer to him than this "family is to me. There are, Sire, no favours, "no treasures, which can compensate the kind- "nesses I have received from it, and the hap- "piness it has conferred upon me.

"When the horrible excesses of our revolution "compelled us to take refuge in England, our "emigration produced the liveliest sensation in "that country; the arrival of so many illus- "trious exiles, their past fortunes, and their "actual forlorn condition, were impressed on "every mind, and filled every heart. They be- "came the subject of consideration in political "assemblies, in places of divine worship, in

Digitized by Google

" fashionable circles, and in private families. " That catastrophe agitated every class, and ex- " cited every sympathy. We were surrounded " by a generous and feeling multitude. We were " the objects of the most delicate attentions, and " of the most substantial favours. Such, it must " be acknowledged, was the affecting sight held " out by a vast portion of English society, even " in spite of the difference of opinions. It is a " testimony due from our gratitude to the truth " of history.

" I was then at London with a cousin of my " name, whose situation at the court of Ver- " sailles, had enabled her to be of some service " to the most distinguished persons in Europe, " where she was a lady of honour to the Princess " Lamballe, who was herself sub-intendant of the " Queen's household. That turned out a for- " tunate circumstance for our family. My cousin " experienced proofs of the greatest benevolence; " a great number of persons were eager in making " a tender of their services, and, among others, " a certain young couple. The wife was charming, " and distinguished for the elegance and nobleness " of her manners; the husband was of an easy " temper, of a mild and honourable character. " Their house was almost instantly open to my " cousin, and to all her relations, who had every " reason to find themselves as much at their ease " there, as if they had been in their own families.

Digitized by Google

"This worthy couple took every occasion "to oblige, and to be of use to our refugees. "Their house was frequented by the most distin- "guished emigrants. A great number of us "there contracted a debt of gratitude, which, "notwithstanding all its extent, I should not de- "spair of paying, were I alone left to discharge "it. I shall leave it as a legacy to my children, "who, if they resemble me, will look upon it as "sacred, and deem themselves happy in re- "deeming the obligation.

"Elevation of soul, and the emotions of a "French heart, characterized the conduct of "Lady ... When the Prince of Condé, (arrived "at London,) was looking for a country residence, "she sent me to offer him the superb mansion "she possessed, in the county of Durham. The "Prince, after hearing the particulars, having "remarked, that it would, no doubt, cost him "the ransom of a King, was agreeably surprised "at learning, that it was presented to him by "a French woman, who would, she said, consider "that she had received an inestimable price, "should a Condé condescend to inhabit it. He "went, instantly, to express his acknowledg- "ments in person.

"This family visited Paris after the peace of "Amiens, and it was in its bosom, and through "its protection, that I was enabled, a few days

Digitized by Google

"sooner, to breathe the air of my country. I "was exempted, through its means, from the "tedious and painful formalities required from "me by the act of amnesty on the frontier, and "I felt it my duty to provide for their accom- "modation at Paris, with much more facility "and less inconvenience than they could have "done themselves. I had also the happiness, "when the measure for detaining the English "residents was carried into effect, and this family "was placed among the number, of alleviating, "in my turn, their condition, and becoming their "security.

"We were, at length, separated by time and "circumstances; but they have lost nothing in "my recollection; and the needle is less con- "stant to the pole, and less faithful in its "guidance, than are my thoughts, and my gra- "titude, with respect to those good and valuable "friends. Such, Sire, is what your Majesty is "pleased to call my English family."

We had, however, during my relation, walked to the stable, and called for the calash. The Emperor ordered it to take us up at the bottom of the wood. We waited for it a long time, because Madame de Montholon was seized with a sudden indisposition. Her husband came to apologize for the delay, and the Emperor made him get in.

Digitized by Google

The conversation turned, during our ride, upon General Joubert, whose brother-in-law and aide-de-camp M. de Montholon had been.

"Joubert," said the Emperor, "entertained a "high veneration for me; he deplored my ab- "sence at every reverse experienced by the re- "public, during the expedition to Egypt. He "was, at that time, at the head of the army of "Italy; he had taken me for his model, aspired "to imitate my plans, and attempted to accom- "plish nothing less than what I afterwards effected "in Brumaire: he had, however, the jacobins to "assist him. The measures and intrigues of that "party, to place the means of executing that "grand enterprise in his power, had raised him "to the command in Italy, after the disasters of "Scherer; of that Scherer, who was an ignorant "peculator, and deserving of every censure. "But Joubert was killed at Novi, in his first "rencounter with Suwarrow; any attempt of "his, at Paris, would have failed; he had not "yet acquired a sufficient degree of glory, of "consistency and maturity. He was, by nature, "calculated for all these acquirements, but, at "that moment, he was not adequately formed; "he was still too young, and that enterprise was "then beyond his ability."

The following is the General's portrait, drawn by the Emperor, for his campaigns of Italy, and of which I have recovered the sketch.

Digitized by Google

Joubert, born in the department of the Ain, in ancient Bressa, had gone through a course of studies for the bar. He was induced by the revolution to turn his thoughts to the military art; he served in the army of Italy and was there promoted to the rank of General of Brigade. He was tall and thin, and seemed naturally of a feeble constitution; but he had exercised it by severe fatigues in the Alps, and had inured it to hardship. He was intrepid, vigilant, extremely active, and marched always at the head of his columns. He was made General in the room of Vaubois, whose corps d'armée he commanded. He gained a great deal of honour in the campaign of Leoben, commanding the left wing, which he led to effect a junction with the main body of the army from the mountains of the Tyrol through the defiles of the Putherstal. He was very warmly attached to Napoleon, who entrusted him with the presentation of the lost standards taken by the army of Italy, to the Directory. Having remained at Paris during the campaign of Egypt, he married the daughter of the senator Semonville, who afterwards became the wife of General Macdonald. That marriage involved him in the intrigues of the Manège, and got him appointed Commander in chief of the army of Italy after Scherer's defeat. He was killed at the battle of Novi. He might have acquired great celebrity.

The Emperor was only able to take one round;

Digitized by Google

he found himself too much fatigued, and was far from being well.

At half past eight o'clock, the Emperor ordered me to be called. He told me, he had been obliged to take a bath, and thought he was a little feverish. He felt he had suddenly caught cold, but he no longer coughed since he was in the bath. He continued for a long time in the water. He dined in it, and a small table was laid for me at the side of it. The Emperor reverted to the history of Russia. "Had Peter the Great," he asked, "acted with "wisdom in founding a capital at Petersburgh at "so vast an expense? Would not the results have "been greater, had he expended all his money at "Moscow? What was his object? Had he accom- "plished it?" I replied; "if Peter had remained "at Moscow, his nation would have continued "Muscovite, a people altogether Asiastic; it was "necessary that it should be displaced for its re- "form and alteration. He had, therefore, selected "a position on the very frontiers, wrested from "the enemy, and in founding his capital, and ac- "cumulating all his strength, he rendered it in- "vulnerable; he connected himself with European "society; he established his power in the Baltic "sea, by which he could with ease prevent his "natural enemies, the Poles and Swedes, from "forming alliances, when they stood in need of "them, with the nations situated behind them," &c. &c.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor said, " he was not altogether " satisfied with these reasons. However, it may " be," he observed, " Moscow has disappeared, " and who can compute the wealth that has been " swallowed up there? Let us contemplate Paris " with the accumulation of centuries, of works " and of industry. Had its capital, for the 1400 " years it has existed, increased but a million a " year, what sums! Let us connect with that the " warehouses, the furniture, the union of sciences " and the arts, the complete establishments of " trade and commerce, &c. &c., and this is the " picture of Moscow, and yet all that vanished in " an instant! What a catastrophe! Does not the " bare idea of it make one shudder? . . . I do not " think it could be re-established at the expense " of two thousand millions."

He expatiated at great length on all these events, and let a word escape him, which was too characteristic, not to be specially noted down by me. The name of Rostopchin having been pronounced, I presumed to remark, that the colour at that time given to his patriotic action, had very much surprized me, for he had interested me instead of exciting my indignation, and even much more, that I had envied him! . . . . To which the Emperor replied with singular vivacity, and with a kind of contraction which betrayed vexation; " If many at Paris had been capable " of reading and feeling it in that way, believe me

Digitized by Google

"I should have applauded it? But I had no "choice left me." Resuming the subject of Moscow, he said:——

"Never with all the powers of poetry, have "the fictions of the burning of Troy equalled the "reality of that of Moscow. The city was of "wood, the wind was violent; all the pumps "had been carried off. It was literally an ocean "of fire. Nothing had been saved from it; our "march was so rapid, our entrance so sudden. "We found even diamonds on the women's toilets, "they had fled so precipitately. They wrote to us "in a short time afterwards, that they had sought "to escape from the first bursts of a dangerous "soldiery; that they recommended their pro- "perty to the generosity of the conquerors, and "would not fail to reappear in the course of a "few days to solicit their kindnesses and testify "their gratitude.

"The population was far from having plotted "that atrocity. Even they themselves delivered "up to us three or four hundred criminals, "escaped from prison, who had executed it." "But, Sire, may I presume to ask, if Moscow "had not been burnt, did not your Majesty "intend to establish your quarters there?" "Cer- "tainly," answered the Emperor, "and I should "then have held up the singular spectacle of an "army wintering in the midst of a hostile nation, "pressing upon it from all points; it would have

Digitized by Google

" been the ship caught in the ice. You would " have been in France without any intelligence " from me for several months; but you would " have remained quiet, you would have acted " wisely; Cambacères would, as usual, have " conducted affairs in my name, and all would " have been as orderly, as if I had been present. " The winter, in Russia, would have weighed " heavy on every one, the torpor would have " been general. The spring also would have re- " vived for all the world. All would have been " at once on their legs, and it is well known, that " the French are as nimble as any others.

" On the first appearance of fine weather, I " should have marched against the enemy, I " should have beaten them; I should have been " master of their empire. Alexander, be as- " sured, would not have suffered me to pro- " ceed so far. He would have agreed to all the " conditions which I might have dictated, and " France would then have begun to enjoy all her " advantages. And truly, my success depended " upon a mere trifle. For I had undertaken the " expedition to fight against armed men, not " against nature in the violence of her wrath. I " defeated armies, but I could not conquer the " flames, the frost, stupefaction, and death! . . . " I was forced to yield to fate. And, after all, " how unfortunate for France—indeed for all " Europe!

Digitized by Google

"Peace, concluded at Moscow, would have "fulfilled and wound up my hostile expeditions. "It would have been, with respect to the "grand cause, the term of casualties and the "commencement of security. A new horizon, new "undertakings, would have unfolded themselves, "adapted, in every respect, to the well-being "and prosperity of all. The foundation of the "European system would have been laid, and "my only remaining task would have been its "organization.

"Satisfied on these grand points, and every "where at peace, I should have also had my "congress and my holy alliance. These are plans "which were stolen from me. In that assembly "of all the sovereigns, we should have discussed "our interest in a family way, and settled our "accounts with the people, as a clerk does with "his master.

"The cause of the age was victorious, the re-"volution accomplished; the only point in ques-"tion was to reconcile it with what it had not "destroyed. But that task belonged to me; I "had for a long time been making preparations "for it, *at the expense, perhaps, of my popularity.* "No matter. I became the arch of the old and "new alliance, the natural mediator between the "ancient and modern order of things. I main-"tained the principles and possessed the confid-"ence of the one; I had identified myself with

Digitized by Google

" the other. I belonged to them both; I should " have acted conscientiously in favour of each:

" My glory would have consisted in my equity."

And, after having enumerated what he would have proposed between sovereign and sovereign, and between sovereigns and their people, he continued; " Powerful as we were all that we " might have conceded, would have appeared " grand. It would have gained us the gratitude " of the people. At present, what they may ex- " tort, will never seem enough to them, and they " will be uniformly distrustful and discontented."

He next took a review of what he would have proposed for the prosperity, the interests, the enjoyments and the well-being of the European confederacy. He wished to establish the same principles, the same system every where. An European code; a court of European appeal, with full powers to redress all wrong decisions, as our's redresses at home those of our tribunals. Money of the same value but with different coins; the same weights, the same measures, the same laws, &c. &c.

" Europe would soon in that manner," he said, " have really been but the same people, and " every one, who travelled, would have every " where found himself in one common country."

He would have required, that all the rivers should be navigable in common; that the seas should be thrown open; that the great standing

Digitized by Google

armies should, in future, be reduced to the single establishment of a guard for the sovereign, &c. &c.

In fine, a crowd of ideas fell from him, the greater part of which were new; some of the simplest nature, others altogether sublime, relative to the different political, civil, and legislative branches, to religion, to the arts, and commerce; they embraced every subject.

He concluded: "On my return to France, in "the bosom of my country, at once great, power- "ful, magnificent, at peace and glorious, I would "have proclaimed the immutability of bounda- "ries, all future wars, purely *defensive;* all new "aggrandizement, *anti-national.* I would have "associated my son with the empire; my dicta- "torship would have terminated, and his consti- "tutional reign commenced. . . .

"Paris would have been the capital of the "world, and the French the envy of nations! . . .

"My leisure and my old age would have been "consecrated, in company with the Empress, "and, during the royal apprenticeship of my son, "in visiting, with my own horses, like a plain "country couple, every corner of the empire; "in receiving complaints, in redressing wrongs, "in founding monuments, and in doing good "every where and by every means! . . . These "also, my dear Las Cases, were among my "dreams!!!"

The Emperor conversed a great deal about the

Digitized by Google

interior of Russia, of the prosperity of which, he said, we had no idea. He dwelt, at great length, upon Moscow, which had, under every point of view, much surprized him, and might bear a comparison with all the capitals of Europe, the greater number of which it surpassed. Here unfortunately I can find but bare outlines in my notes, which it is impossible for me, at present, to fill up.

He was particularly struck with the gilded spires of Moscow, and it was that which induced him, on his return, to have the dome of the Invalids regilded; he intended to embellish many other edifices at Paris in the same manner.

N. B.—As the city of Moscow seems to have been so different from the idea, which we have generally entertained of it in our Western world, I am inclined to think, that a description of it in this place, supplied by an eye-witness, a distinguished person, attached to the expedition, will not prove disagreeable. It is by Baron Larrey, principal surgeon to the grand army. I take it from a work of that celebrated character, (les Mémoires de la Chirurgie Militaire) in no great circulation, on account, perhaps, of its peculiarly scientific nature.

The relation begins at the moment when the French army was setting out on its march from Moscow, after the battle of Mozaisk or of Moskowa.

"We were hardly a few miles off from Mozaisk,

Digitized by Google

when we were all surprised at finding ourselves, notwithstanding the vicinity of the spot to one of the greatest capitals of the world, on a sandy, arid, and completely desert plain. The mournful aspect of that solitude, which discouraged the soldiers, seemed an omen of the entire abandonment of Moscow, and of the misfortunes which awaited us in that city, from the opulence of which we had promised ourselves such advantages.

"The army marched, with difficulty, over that tract. The horses were harassed, and exhausted with hunger and thirst, for water was as rare as forage. The men had also a great deal to suffer. They were, in fact, overwhelmed with fatigue, and in want of all subsistence. The troops had not, for a long time, received any rations, and the small quantity of provisions found at Mozaisk, was only sufficient for the young and old guard. A considerable number of the former corps fell victims to their abuse of Chenaps (the brandy of the country). They were observed to quit their comrades a few paces, to totter, whirl round, and afterwards fall on their knees or sit down involuntarily; they remained immoveable in that attitude, and expired shortly afterwards, without uttering a single complaint. These young men were predisposed to the pernicious effects of that liquor by languor, privations, and excessive fatigue.

"We arrived, however, on the evening of the

Digitized by Google

14th of September, in one of the fauxbourgs of Moscow; we there learnt, that the Russian army had, in its passage through the city, carried off all the citizens and public functionaries, some of the low classes and some servants alone were left; so that in going through the principal streets of that great city, which we entered the following morning, we scarcely met any one; all the houses were completly abandoned. But what very much surprised us, was to see the fire break out in several remote quarters, where none of our troops had yet been, and particularly in the bazar of the Kremlin, an immense building, with porticoes which have some resemblance to those of the Palais Royal at Paris.

"After what we had witnessed on our passage through little Russia, we were astonished at the vastness of Moscow, at the great number of churches and palaces which it contained, at the beautiful architecture of those edifices, at the commodious disposition of the principal houses, and all the objects of luxury which were found in the greater part of them. The streets in general were spacious, regular, and well laid out. Nothing had the appearance of discordance throughout that city. Every thing announced its wealth, and the immense trade it carried on in the productions of the four quarters of the world.

"The variety displayed in the construction of the palaces, houses, and churches, was an infinite

Digitized by Google

addition to the beauty of the city. There were places, which, by the peculiar kind of architecture of the different edifices, indicated the nations that generally inhabited them; thus, the residence of the Franks, Chinese, Indians, and Germans, was easily distinguished. The Kremlin might be considered the citadel of Moscow; it is in the centre of the town, situated on an eminence sufficiently elevated, surrounded by a wall with bastions, and flanked, at regular distances, by towers, mounted with cannon. The bazar, which has been already noticed, usually filled with the merchandize of India and valuable furs, had become the prey of the flames, and the only articles preserved were those which had been laid up in the vaults, where the soldiers penetrated, after the fire that consumed the whole of the exterior of that beautiful edifice. The palace of the Emperors, that of the senate, the archives, the arsenal, and two very ancient temples, occupy the rest of the Kremlin. These different monuments of a rich species of architecture, form a magnificent appearance about the parade. One might imagine one's self transported to the public place of ancient Athens, where the Areopagus and the temple of Minerva on one side, and the academy and the arsenal on the other, were the objects of admiration. A cylindrical tower presents itself between the two temples, in the shape of a column, known by the name of Ywan's tower; it is rather an

Digitized by Google

Egyptian minaret, within which several bells of different sizes, are hung. At the bottom of this tower, one is seen of a prodigious magnitude, which has been noticed by all the historians. The whole of the city and its environs are seen from the top of the towers, they present themselves to the eye in the form of a star, with four forked branches. The city assumes a most picturesque appearance from the variegated colours of the roofs of the houses, and from the gold and silver expended on the domes and tops of the belfries, of which there is a considerable number. Nothing can equal the richness of one of the temples or churches of the Kremlin (it was the sepulchre of the Emperors); its walls are covered with plates of vermilion, five or six lines thick, on which the history of the Old and New Testaments is represented in relievo; the lustres and candelabras of massy silver, were particularly remarkable for their extraordinary proportions.

"The hospitals to which my attention was peculiarly directed, are worthy of the most civilized nation in the world; I class them as military and civil. The grand military hospital is divided into three parts, forming altogether a parallelogram. The principal part was constructed on the side of a great road, opposite to an immense barrack, which may be compared to the military school at Paris. Two lateral buildings, by cutting it at right angles, inclose the court, which communi-

Digitized by Google

cates with a fine and extensive garden appropriated to the use of the sick. The front of this building, which is two stories high, consists of a portico, with columns of the composite order. At the entrance, is a spacious lobby, where the doors of the wards on the ground-floor correspond with each other, and a large and magnificent stair-case leads to the upper stories. The wards occupy the entire length of the building, and the windows on each side reach from the ceiling to the floor; they are made with double sashes, as is customary throughout Russia, and are completely closed in winter; stoves are placed in the inside at suitable distances. The wards contain four rows of beds of the same kind, separated by the requisite space for wholesomeness; each row consists of fifty beds, and the total number may be estimated at more than three thousand; the hospital contains fourteen principal wards of very nearly the same extent. The offices, pharmacy, kitchen, and other establishments, are very commodiously situated in separate places at a convenient distance from the wards.

"The civil hospitals are equally entitled to notice. The four principal are those of Cheremetow, Galitzin, Alexander, and the Foundlings.

"The first, remarkable for its shape, its structure, and its internal arrangements, was used to receive the sick and wounded belonging to the guard.

Digitized by Google

"The hospital which is three stories high, is built in the form of a crescent; the requisite offices are situated in the rear. A beautiful portico, projecting from the centre of the half-moon, forms the entrance of a chapel in the middle of the edifice; the chapel surmounted with a dome, is the central point of all the wards, and contains the mausoleum of the prince who founded the hospital; it is ornamented with columns in stucco, with statues and beautiful pictures. The pharmacy is one of the finest and best supplied I know.

"The Foundling hospital situated on the banks of the Moscowa, and protected by the cannon of the Kremlin, is indisputably the largest and noblest establishment of the kind in Europe. It consists of two divisions of buildings; the first, where the entrance is placed, is appropriated to the residence of the governor, who is selected from the old generals of the army, of the board of management, of the medical officers, and of all those employed in the service of the hospital. The second forms a perfect square. In the centre of the court, which is very spacious, is a reservoir, that supplies the whole of the establishment with water from the river. Each of the sides is composed of four great floors, round which is a regular corridor, not very broad, yet sufficiently spacious for the admission of air, and the accommodation of the individuals who pass

Digitized by Google

through it. The wards ocupy the remainder of the breadth, and the whole extent of each wing of the building. There are two rows of beds with curtains in each ward, their size corresponds with that of the children; the boys are kept separate from the girls, and the greatest cleanliness and regularity are observed.

"We had scarcely taken possession of the town, and succeeded in extinguishing the fire, kindled by the Russians in the most beautiful quarters, when in consequence of two principal causes, the flames again broke out in the most violent manner, spread rapidly from one street to another, and involved the whole place in one common ruin. The first of these causes is justly reported to have been the desperate resolution of a certain class of Russians, who were said to have been confined in the prisons, the doors of which were thrown open on the departure of the army; these wretches, whether incited by superior authority, or by their own feelings, with the view, no doubt, of plunder, openly ran from palace to palace, and from house to house, setting fire to every thing that fell in their way. The French patroles, although numerous and on the alert, were unable to prevent them. I saw several of those miscreants taken in the act; lighted matches and combustibles were found in their possession. The pain of death inflicted upon those caught in the actual commission of the atrocity, made no

Digitized by Google

impression on the others, and the fire raged three days and three nights without interruption; the houses were pulled down in vain by our soldiers, the flames quickly spread themselves over the vacant space, and the buildings thus insulated were set on fire in the twinkling of an eye. The second cause must be attributed to the violence of the equinoctial winds which are always very powerful in those parts, and by means of which the conflagration increased and extended its ravages with extraordinary activity.

"It would be difficult, under any circumstances, to imagine a picture more horrible than that with which our eyes were afflicted. It was more particularly during the night between the 18th and 19th of September, the period when the fire was at the highest pitch, that its consequences presented a terrific spectacle; the weather was fine and dry, the wind continuing to blow from East to North, or from North to East. During that night, the dreadful image of which will never be effaced from my recollection, the whole of the city was on fire. Large columns of flames of various colours shot up from every quarter, entirely covered the horizon, and diffused a glaring light and a scorching heat at a considerable distance. These masses of fire, driven on by the violence of the winds, were accompanied in their rise and rapid movement by a dreadful whizzing and by thundering explo-

Digitized by Google

sions, the result of the combustion of gunpowder, saltpetre, oil, resin, and brandy, with which the greater part of the houses and shops had been filled. The varnished iron plates which covered the buildings, were torn off by the effect of the heat, and carried to a great distance; very large pieces of beams and rafters made of fir, seized by the flames, were thrown an immense way off, and contributed to extend the conflagration to houses which were considered the least exposed, on account of the distance. Every one was struck with terror and consternation. The guard, with the head quarters and the staff of the army, was transferred from the Kremlin and the town, and a camp was established at Petrowski, a castle belonging to Peter the Great, on the road to Petersburg. I remained with a very small number of my comrades, in a house built of stone, which stood alone, and was situated on the top of the quarter of the Franks close to the Kremlin. I was there enabled to observe all the phenomena of that tremendous conflagration. We had sent our equipage to the camp, and kept ourselves constantly on the look out, to be prepared for or to prevent danger.

The lower classes, who had remained at Moscow, driven from house to house by the fire, ejaculated the most lamentable cries; extremely anxious to preserve what was most valuable to them, they loaded themselves with packages,

Digitized by Google

which they could hardly sustain, and which they frequently abandoned to escape from the flames. The women, impelled by a very natural feeling of humanity, carried one or two children on their shoulders, and dragged the others along by the hand, and in order to avoid the death which threatened them on every side, they ran, with their petticoats tucked up, to take shelter in the corners of the streets and squares; but they were soon compelled, by the intenseness of the heat, to abandon those spots and to fly with precipitation every way that was open to them, sometimes without being able to extricate themselves from that kind of labyrinth in which many of them experienced a miserable end. I saw old men, whose long beards had been caught by the flames, drawn on small carts by their own children, who endeavoured to rescue them from that real Tartarus.

"As for our soldiers, tormented with hunger and thirst, they exposed themselves to every danger to obtain in the cellars and shops which were on fire, eatables, wines, liquors, or any other article more or less useful. They were seen running through the streets, pell-mell, with the broken-hearted inhabitants, carrying away every thing they could snatch from the ravages of this dreadful conflagration. At length, in the course of eight or ten days, this immense and superb city was reduced to ashes, with the exception of

Digitized by Google

the Kremlin palace, some large houses, and all the churches: these edifices are built of stone.

"This calamity threw the army into great consternation, and was a presage to us of more serious misfortunes. We all thought that we should no longer find either subsistence, cloth, or any other necessary for equipping the troops, and of which we were in the most pressing want. Could a more dismal idea suggest itself to our imagination? The head quarters were, however, after the fire, again established at the Kremlin, and the guard sent to some houses of the Franks quarter, which had been preserved. Every one resumed the exercise of his duties.

"Magazines of flour, meal, salt fish, oil, wine and liquors, were discovered by dint of perseverance. Some were served out to the troops, but there was too great a wish to spare or hoard up these articles, and that excess of precaution, which is sometimes a mere pretext, induced us to burn or leave behind us, in the end, provision of every kind, from which we might have derived the greatest advantages, and which would have even been sufficient for the wants of the army for more than six months, had we remained at Moscow. The same conduct was pursued with regard to the stuffs and furs, which ought to have been immediately worked up for the purpose of supplying our troops with all the clothing capable of preserving them, as much as possible, from

Digitized by Google

the inclemency of the cold that was at hand. The soldiers, who never think of the future, far from obviating, on their part and for their own interests, that defect of precaution, were solely engaged in collecting the wines, the liquors, and all the gold and silver articles they could find, and despised every other consideration.

"This unexpected abundance, which was owing to the indefatigable researches of the troops, was attended with a bad effect on their discipline and on the health of those who were intemperate. That motive alone ought to have made us hasten our departure for Poland. Moscow became a new Capua to our army. The enemy's generals flattered ours with the hopes of peace; the preliminaries were to be signed from day to day. Clouds of cosacks, however, covered our cantonments and carried off every day a great number of our foragers. General Kutusoff was collecting the wreck of his army and strengthening himself with the recruits, that joined him from all parts. Imperceptibly and under various pretences of pacification, his advanced posts drew near to ours. Finally, the period of negociation had arrived, and it was at the moment in which the French ambassador was to obtain a first decision, that Prince Joachim's corps d'armée was surrounded. It was with difficulty that our general, the ambassador, surmounted the obstacles which were opposed to his return to Moscow. Several

Digitized by Google

parties of our troops and some pieces of cannon had been already carried off. The different corps of this advanced guard, which were at first dispersed, were, notwithstanding, rallied, broke the Russian column that hemmed them in, took up a favourable position and charged successively the enemy's numerous cavalry, which they repulsed with vigour, retaking part of the artillery and some of the soldiers made prisoners in the first onset. At length the arrival of General Lauriston and of the wounded, was to us, at head quarters, a confirmation, that hostilities would be resumed. Orders were immediately given for the sudden departure of the army; the drum beat to arms; and all the corps prepared to execute that precipitate movement. Some provisions were hastily collected and the march commenced on the 19th of October."

On the Coronation, &c.—Decrees of Berlin and Milan.—The Grand Cause of the Hatred of the English.

25th.—The weather has become fine in every respect. The Emperor breakfasted in the tent and sent for us all. The conversation turned upon the ceremonies of the coronation. He asked for information from one of us, who had been present, but was unable to satisfy him. He made the same inquiries of another, but the latter had not seen it? "Where were you then at that time?"

Digitized by Google

asked the Emperor—"at Paris, Sire." "How then! "you did not see the coronation!"—"no, Sire."

The Emperor then casting a side glance at him, and taking him by the ear, said; "Were you so "absurd as to carry your aristocracy to that "point?"—"But Sire, my hour was not come."—"But at least you saw the retinue?'—"Ah! "Sire, had my curiosity prevailed, I should have "hastened to witness what was most worthy "and most interesting to be seen. I had, how-"ever, a ticket of admission, and I preferred pre-"senting it to the English lady, whom I lately "mentioned to your Majesty, and who, by way "of parenthesis, caught a cold there, that nearly "killed her. For my own part I remained quiet-"ly at home". "Ah, that is too much for me to "put up with," said the Emperor, "the villan-"ous aristocrat! How! And you were really "guilty of such an absurdity?" "Alas! I was," replied the accused, "and yet here I am near "you, and at Saint Helena." The Emperor smiled, and let go the ear.

After breakfast, a captain of the English artillery, who had been six years at the Isle of France, called upon me. He was to sail for Europe the next day. He entreated me in a thousand ways to procure him the happiness of seeing the Emperor. He would, he said, give all he had in the world for such a favour; his gratitude would be boundless, &c.

Digitized by Google

We conversed together for a long time; the Emperor was taking his round in the calash. On his return, I was happy enough to realize the English officer's wishes. The Emperor received him for upwards of a quarter of an hour; his joy was extreme, as he was aware that the favour became every day more rare. Every thing about the Emperor had struck him, he declared, in a most extraordinary manner; his features, his affability, the sound of his voice, his expressions, the questions he had asked; he was, he exclaimed, a hero, a god! . . . . .

The weather was delightful. The Emperor continued to walk in the garden in the midst of us. He entered into the consideration of the failure of a negociation, undertaken by one of us; a business which the Emperor had judged very easy, but which turned out to be of the most delicate nature for the person entrusted with it. The object of it was to prevail upon some English officers to publish a certain paper in England.

The Emperor expressed his disapprobation of the failure in his usual mode of reasoning, and with the intelligence and point that are familiar to him; he was, however, very much disappointed at it; his observations were rather strong; he pushed them to a degree of ill humour, of which the person he found fault with, had never, perhaps, before, received any proofs. At length, he con-

Digitized by Google

cluded with saying; "After all, Sir, would you "not have accepted yourself, what you proposed "to others, had you been in their place?" "No, "Sire."—"Why not? Well then," he added, in a tone of reproof, "you should not be my mi- "nister of police." "And your Majesty would "be in the right," quickly replied the other, who felt himself vexed in his turn; "I feel no in- "clination whatever for such an office." The Emperor seeing him enter the saloon, a little before dinner, said; "Ah! there is our little "officer of police! Come, approach, my little "officer of police;" and he pinched his ear. Although hours had passed since the warm conversation took place, the Emperor recollected it; he knew the person, who, had been the object of it was full of sensibility, and it was evident, that he wished to efface the impression it had made upon him. These are characteristic shades, and those which arise from the most trifling causes, are the most natural and the most marked.

After dinner, the Emperor was induced, by the turn which the conversation took, to review the special subject of his maritime dispute with England. "Her pretensions to blockade on "paper," he observed, "produced my famous "Berlin decree. The British council, in a fit "of passion, issued its orders; it established a "right of toll on the seas. I instantly replied "by the celebrated Milan decrees, which de-

Digitized by Google

" nationalized every flag that yielded obedience " to the English acts; and it was then that the war " became, in England, truly personal. Every " one connected with trade was enraged against " me. England was exasperated at a struggle " and energy, of which she had no example. She " had uniformly found those, who had preceded " me, more complaisant."

The Emperor explained, on a later occasion, the means, by which he had forced the Americans to make war against the English. He had, he said, discovered the way of connecting their interests with their rights; for people, he remarked, fight much more readily for the former than for the latter.

At present, the Emperor was in expectation, he said, of some approaching attempt on the part of the English, on the sovereignty of the seas, for the establishment of the right of universal toll, &c. &c. " It is," said he, " one of the principal " resources left them for discharging their debts, " for extricating themselves from the abyss into " which they are plunged; in a word, of getting " rid of their embarassments. If they have " among them an enterprizing genius, a man of " a strong intellect, they will certainly undertake " something of that kind. Nobody is powerful " enough to oppose it and they set up their claim " with a species of justice. They may plead in " its justification, that it was for the safety of

Digitized by Google

" Europe they involved themselves in difficulties;"
" that they succeeded, and that they are entitled"
" to some compensation. And then, the only"
" ships of war in Europe are theirs. They reign,"
" in fact, at present, over the seas. There is an"
" end to the existence of public rights, when the"
" balance is broken, &c. &c.

" The English may now be omnipotent, if they"
" will but confine themselves to their navy. But"
" they will endanger their superiority, compli-"
" cate their affairs, and insensibly lose their im-"
" portance, if they persevere in keeping soldiers"
" on the continent."

Account of the Campaign of Waterloo dictated by Napoleon.

26th.—The Emperor went out early in the morning, even before seven o'clock; he did not wish to disturb any of us. He was occupied with his work in the garden and in the tent, where he sent for us all to breakfast with him. He continued there until two o'clock.

At dinner he conversed a great deal about our situation in the island. He would not, he said, leave Longwood; he did not care for any visitors; but he was desirous we should take some diversion, and find out some means of amusement. It would, he said, be a pleasure to him to see us more lively in our motions and indulge more freely in our enjoyments, &c.

The relation of the battle of Waterloo, which

Digitized by Google

the Emperor had dictated to General Gourgaud, was read by his desire. What pages! They are sickening. . . . The destinies of France suspended by so slight a thread!!!. . . .

This production was published in Europe in 1820. The measures contrived to transmit it clandestinely from Saint Helena proved successful, in spite of every kind of vigilance. The instant, this relation of Waterloo appeared in the world, nobody was deceived with regard to its author. An exclamation burst from every quarter, that Napoleon alone was capable of describing in that manner, and it is confidently stated, that his antagonist expressed himself precisely in that way. What noble chapters! It would be impossible to attempt an analysis of them, or to pretend to convey their excellence in terms adequate to their merits. We literally transcribe, however, in this place, the last pages, containing, in the shape of a summary, nine observations of Napoleon, on the faults, with which he has been reproached in that campaign.

They are points, which will possess classical duration, and we have been of opinion, that our readers would not be displeased at again finding here objects, which become, every time the occasion presents itself, the subject of earnest and important discussions.

We shall preface these observations with a description, also of Napoleon's dictation, of the

Digitized by Google

resources which France still possessed after the loss of the battle.

"The situation of France was critical, but not desperate, after the battle of Waterloo. Every preparatory measure had been taken, on the supposition of the failure of the attack upon Belgium. 70,000 men were rallied on the 27th, between Paris and Laon; from 25 to 30,000, including the depots of the guard, were on their march from Paris and the depots; General Rapp, with 25,000 men, chosen troops, was expected on the Marne, in the beginning of July; all the losses sustained in the *materiel* of the artillery had been repaired. Paris, alone, contained 500 pieces of field artillery, and only 170 had been lost. Thus an army of 120,000 men, equal to that which had passed the Sombre on the 15th, with a train of artillery, consisting of 350 pieces of cannon, would cover Paris by the 1st of July. That capital possessed, independently of these means, for its defence, 36,000 men of the national guard, 30,000 marksmen, 6000 cannoniers, 600 battering cannon, formidable entrenchments on the right bank of the Seine, and, in a few days, those of the left bank would have been entirely completed. The Anglo-Dutch and Prusso-Saxon armies weakened, however, by the loss of 80,000 men, and no longer exceeding 140,000, could not cross the Somme with more than 90,000 men; they would have to wait,

Digitized by Google

there for the co-operation of the Austrian and Russian armies, which could not be on the Marne before the 15th of July. Paris had, consequently, five-and-twenty days to prepare for its defence, to complete the arming of its inhabitants, its fortifications, its supplies of provisions, and to draw troops from every point of France. Even by the 15th of July, not more than 30 or 40,000 men could have arrived on the Rhine. The mass of the Russian and Austrian armies could not take the field before a later period. Neither arms, nor ammunition, nor officers were wanting in the capital; the number of men carrying musquets might be easily augmented to 80,000, and the field artillery could be increased to 600 pieces.

"Marshal Suchet, in conjunction with General Lécourbe, would have had, at the same time, upwards of 30,000 men, before Lyons, independently of the garrison of that city, which would have been well armed, well supplied with provisions, and well protected by entrenchments. The defence of all the strong places was secured; they were commanded by chosen officers, and garrisoned by faithful troops. Every thing might be repaired, but decision, energy, and firmness, on the part of the officers, of the government, of the chambers, and of the whole nation, were necessary!!! It was requisite, that she should be animated by the sentiment of honour, of glory,

Digitized by Google

of national independence; that she should fix her eyes upon Rome, after the battle of Cannæ, and not upon Carthage, after that of Zama!!! If France had elevated herself to that height, she would have been invincible. Her people contained more of the military elements than any other people in the world. The *materiel* of war existed in abundance, and was adequate to every want.

"On the 21st of June, Marshal Blucher and the Duke of Wellington entered the French territory at the head of two columns. On the 22d, the powder magazine took fire at Avesne, and the place surrendered. On the 24th, the Prussians entered Guise, and the Duke of Wellington was at Cambray. He was at Peronne on the 26th. During the whole of this time, the places on the first, second, and third line of Flanders were invested. The two generals learned, however, on the 25th, the Emperor's abdication, which had taken place the 22d, the insurrection of the chambers, the discouragement occasioned by these circumstances in the army, and the hopes excited among our internal enemies. From that moment, they thought only of marching upon the capital, under the walls of which they arrived at the latter end of June, with less than 90,000 men; an enterprize that would have proved fatal to them, and drawn on their total ruin, had they hazarded it in the presence of Napoleon; but that Prince had abdicated!!!

Digitized by Google

The troops of the line at Paris, consisting of more than 6000 men of the depots of the guard, the fusiliers of the national guard, chosen from among the people of that great capital, were devoted to him; they had it in their power to exterminate the domestic enemy!!! But in order to explain the motives which regulated his conduct, in that important crisis, which was attended with such fatal results, both for him and for France, the relation must be resumed from an earlier period.

First Observation.—"The Emperor has been reproached, 1st, With having resigned the dictatorship, at the moment, when France stood most in need of a dictator; 2d, With having altered the constitutions of the empire, at a moment, when it was necessary to think only of preserving it from invasion; 3d, With having permitted the Vendeans to be alarmed, who had, at first, refused to take arms against the imperial government; 4th, With having assembled the chambers, when he ought to have assembled the army; 5th, With having abdicated and left France at the mercy of a divided and inexperienced assembly; for, in fine, if it be true, that it was impossible for the Prince to save the country without the confidence of the nation, it is not less true, that the nation could not, in these critical circumstances, preserve either its happiness or its independence without Napoleon.

Digitized by Google

"We shall make no reflections on subjects which have been minutely canvassed, and treated of at length, in the tenth book.

Second Observation.—"The art, with which the movements of the different bodies of the army were concealed from the enemy's knowledge, on the opening of the campaign, cannot be too attentively remarked. Marshal Blucher and the Duke of Wellington were surprized; they saw nothing, knew nothing, of the operations which were carrying on near their advanced posts.

"In order to attack the two hostile armies, the French might have out-flanked their right or left, or penetrated their centre. In the first case, they might have advanced by the way of Lisle, and fallen in with the Anglo-Dutch army; in the second, they might have moved forward by Givet and Charlemont, and have fallen in with the Prusso-Saxon army. These two armies would have remained united, since they must have been pressed the one upon the other, from the right to the left, and from the left to the right. The Emperor adopted the plan of covering his movements with the Sambre, and piercing the line of the two armies at Charleroi, their point of junction, executing his manœuvres with rapidity and skill. He thus discovered in the secrets of the art means to supply the place of 100,000 men, of whom he stood in need. The plan was executed with boldness and prudence.

Digitized by Google

Third Observation.—" The character of several generals had been affected by the events of 1814; they had lost somewhat of that spirit, of that resolution, and that confidence, by which they had gained so much glory, and so much contributed to the success of former campaigns.

" 1st,—On the 15th of June, the third corps was to march at three o'clock in the morning, and arrive at Charleroi at ten; it did not arrive until three o'clock in the afternoon.

" 2dly,—The same day the attack on the woods in front of Fleurus, which had been ordered at four in the afternoon, did not take place until seven. Night came on before the troops could enter Fleurus, where the commander in chief had intended to establish his head quarters the same day. The loss of seven hours was very vexatious on the opening of a campaign.

" 3dly,—Ney received orders to advance on the 16th with 43,000 men, who composed the left under his command, in front of Quatre-Bras, to take up a position there at the break of day, and even to entrench himself; he hesitated, and lost eight hours. The Prince of Orange, with only 9000 men, retained, on the 16th until three o'clock in the afternoon, that important position. When at length, the Marshal received at twelve o'clock at noon the order dated from Fleurus, and saw, that the Emperor was on the point of attacking the Prussians, he ad-

Digitized by Google

vanced against Quatre-Bras, but only with half his force, leaving the other half to cover his retreat at the distance of two leagues in the rear; he forgot it until six in the evening, when he felt the want of it for his own defence. In the other campaigns, that General would have made himself master of the position in front of Quatre-Bras at six o'clock in the morning; he would have routed and captured the whole of the Belgic division, and either turned the Prussian army by sending a detachment by the road of Namur to fall on the rear of their line of battle, or by the rapidity of his movements on the road of Gennapes, he would have surprized and destroyed the Brunswick division on its march, and the fifth English division as it advanced from Brussels. He would have afterwards marched to meet the third and fourth English divisions, which were advancing by the way of Nivelles, and were both destitute of cavalry and artillery, and overwhelmed with fatigue. Ney, who was always first in the heat of battle, forgot the troops that were not directly engaged. The courage which a commander in chief should display is different from that of a general of division, as that of the latter is marked by a distinct shade from the bravery of a captain of grenadiers.

"4thly,—The advanced guard of the French army did not arrive on the 16th, in front of Waterloo, until six o'clock in the evening; it would have

Digitized by Google

arrived at three but for some vexatious hesitations. The Emperor was very much mortified at the delay, and, pointing at the sun, exclaimed, "what would I not now give to have the power of Joshua, and stop its movement for two hours!"

Fourth Observation.—"The French soldier never displayed more bravery, cheerfulness, and enthusiasm; he was animated with the sentiment of his superiority over all the soldiers of Europe. His confidence in the Emperor was altogether unabated, it had, perhaps, increased; but he was suspicious and distrustful of his other commanders. The treasons of 1814 were always in his thoughts, and he was uneasy at every movement, which he did not understand; he thought he was betrayed. At the moment, when the first cannon shots were firing near Saint Amand, an old corporal approached the Emperor and said; "Sire, beware of General Soult; be assured that "he is a traitor."—"Fear nothing," replied the Emperor, "I can answer for him as for myself." In the middle of the battle, an officer informed Marshal Soult, that General Vandamme had gone over to the enemy, and that his soldiers demanded with loud cries, that the Emperor should be made acquainted with it. At the close of the battle, a dragoon, with his sabre covered with blood, galloped up to him crying, "Sire, come instantly "to the division, General Dhénin is haranguing "the dragoons to go over to the enemy." "Did

Digitized by Google

"you hear him?" "No, Sire, but an officer, "who is looking for you, saw him and ordered "me to tell your Majesty." During this time, the gallant General Dhénin, received a cannon shot which carried off one of his thighs, after he had repulsed the enemy's charge.

"On the 14th in the evening, Lieutenant-General B...., Colonel C...., and V....., an officer of the staff, deserted and went over to the enemy. Their names will be held in execration as long as the French people shall constitute a nation. The uneasy feelings of the troops had been considerably aggravated by that desertion. It appears nearly certain, that the cry of *sauve qui peut* was raised among the soldiers of the fourth division of the first corps the evening of the battle of Waterloo, when Marshal Blucher attacked the village of La Haye. That village was not defended as it ought to have been. It is equally probable, that several officers, charged with the communication of orders, disappeared. But if some officers deserted, not a single private was guilty of that crime. Several killed themselves on the field of battle where they lay wounded, when they learned the defeat of the army.

Fifth Observation.—"In the battle of the 17th, the French army was divided into three bodies; 69,000 men under the Emperor's command, marched against Brussels by the way of Charleroi; 34,000, under the command of Marshal

Digitized by Google

Grouchy, directed their operations against that capital by the way of Wavres, in pursuit of the Prussians; 7 or 8000 men remained on the field of battle at Ligny, of whom 3000 belonging to Girard's division were employed in assisting the wounded, and in forming a reserve for any unexpected casualty at Quatre-Bras, and 4 or 5000 continued with the forces of reserve at Fleurus and at Charleroi. The 34,000 men under the command of Marshal Grouchy, with 108 pieces of cannon, were sufficient to drive the Prussian rear-guard from any position it might take up to press upon the retreat of the conquered army, and to keep it in check. It was a glorious result of the victory of Ligny, to be thus enabled to oppose 34,000 men to an army, which had consisted of 120,000. The 69,000 men, under the Emperor's command were sufficient to beat the Anglo-Dutch army, composed of 90,000. The disproportion, which existed on the 15th between the two belligerent masses in the relation of one to two, was materially changed, and it no longer exceeded three to four. Had the Anglo-Dutch army defeated the 69,000 men opposed to it, Napoleon might have been reproached with having ill-calculated his measures; but it is undeniable, even from the enemy's admission, that unless General Blucher had arrived, the Anglo-Dutch army would have been driven from the field of battle between eight and nine o'clock at night. If Marshal Blucher

Digitized by Google

had not arrived at eight with his first and second corps, the march on Brussels, with two columns, during the battle of the 17th, would have been attended with several advantages. The left would have pressed upon and kept in check the Anglo-Dutch army; the right, under the command of Marshal Grouchy, would have pursued and restrained the operations of the Prusso-Saxon army; and in the evening, the whole of the French army would have effected its junction on a line of less than five leagues from Mont Saint Jean to Wavres, with its advanced posts on the edge of the forest. But the fault committed by Marshal Grouchy, in stopping on the 17th, at Gembloux, having marched scarcely two leagues in the course of the day, instead of pushing on three leagues more in front of Wavres, was aggravated and rendered irreparable by that which he committed the following day, the 18th, in losing twelve hours, and arriving at four o'clock in the afternoon in front of Wavres, when he should have been there at six in the morning.

"1st,—Grouchy, charged with the pursuit of Marshal Blucher, lost sight of him for twenty-four hours, from four o'clock in the afternoon of the 17th, until a quarter past twelve at noon on the 18th.

"2dly,—The movement of the cavalry on the plain, while General Bulow's attack was not yet repulsed, proved a distressing accident. It

Digitized by Google

was the intention of the Commander in chief to order that movement, but not until an hour later, and then it was to have been sustained by the sixteen battalions of infantry belonging to the guard, with one hundred pieces of cannon.

"3dly,—The horse grenadiers and the dragoons of the guard, under the command of General Guyot, engaged without orders. Thus at five in the afternoon, the army found itself without a reserve of cavalry. If at half past eight, that reserve had been in existence, the storm which swept all before it on the field of battle would have been dispersed, the enemy's charges of cavalry driven back, and the two armies would have slept on the field, notwithstanding the successive arrivals of General Bulow and Marshal Blucher; the advantage would also have been in favour of the French army, as Marshal Grouchy's 34,000 men, with 108 pieces of cannon, were fresh troops bivouacked on the field of battle. The enemy's two armies would have placed themselves in the night under cover of the forest of Soignes. The constant practice in every battle was for the horse grenadiers and the dragoons of the guard never to lose sight of the Emperor, and never to make a charge but in consequence of an order verbally given by that Prince to the General, who commanded them.

"Marshal Mortier, who was Commander in chief of the guards, gave up the command on the

Digitized by Google

15th, at Beaumont, just as hostilities were on the point of commencing, and no one was appointed in his stead, which was attended with several inconvenient results.

Sixth Observation.—" 1st, The French army manœuvred on the right of the Sambre, on the 13th and 14th. It encamped, the night between the 14th and 15th, within half a league of the Prussian advanced posts; and yet Marshal Blucher had no knowledge of it, and when on the morning of the 15th, he learned at his head-quarters at Namur, that the Emperor had entered Charleroi, the Prusso-Saxon army was still cantoned over an extent of thirty leagues; two days were necessary for him to effect the junction of his troops. It was his duty, from the 15th of May, to advance his head quarters to Fleurus, to concentrate the cantonments of his army within a radius of eight leagues with his advanced posts on the Meuse and Sambre. His army might then have been assembled at Ligny on the 15th at noon, to await in that position the attack of the French army, or to march against it in the evening of the 15th, for the purpose of driving it into the Sambre.

" 2dly,—Yet, notwithstanding this surprise of Marshal Blucher, he persisted in the project of collecting his troops on the heights of Ligny, behind Fleurus, exposing himself to the hazard of being attacked before the arrival of his army. On the morning of the 16th he had collected but

Digitized by Google

two corps d'armée, and the French army was already at Fleurus. The third corps joined in the course of the day, but the fourth, commanded by General Bulow, was unable to present itself in time for the battle. Marshal Blucher, the instant he learned the arrival of the French at Charleroi, that is to say, on the evening of the 15th, ought to have assigned as a point of junction for his troops, neither Fleurus nor Ligny, which were under the enemy's cannon, but Wavres, which the French could not have reached until the 17th. He would have also had the whole of the 16th, and the night between the 16th and 17th, to effect the total junction of his army.

"3dly,—After having lost the battle of Ligny, the Prussian General instead of making his retreat on Wavres, ought to have effected it upon the army of the Duke of Wellington, whether at Quatre-Bras where the latter had maintained himself, or at Waterloo. The whole of Marshal Blucher's retreat on the morning of the 17th, was contrary to common sense, since the two armies, which were, on the evening of the 16th, little more than three miles from each other, and had a fine road for their point of communication, in consequence of which their junction might have been considered as effected, found themselves, on the evening of the 17th, separated by a distance of nearly twelve miles, and intercepted by defiles and impassable ways.

Digitized by Google

"The Prussian General was guilty of a breach of the three grand rules of war; 1st, To maintain his cantonments near each other; 2dly, To assign a point of junction where his troops can all assemble before those of the enemy; 3dly, To operate his retreat upon his reinforcements.

Seventh Observation.—"1st, The Duke of Wellington was surprised in his cantonments; he ought to have concentrated them the 15th of May, at eight leagues about Brussels, and maintained advanced guards on the roads opening from Flanders. The French army was for three days manœuvring close upon his advanced posts; it had commenced hostilities four and twenty hours; its head quarters had been twelve hours at Charleroi, and yet the English General was at Brussels, ignorant of what was passing, and all the cantonments of his army were still in full security, extended over a space of more than twenty leagues.

"2dly,—The Prince of Saxe-Weimar, who belonged to the Anglo-Dutch army, was on the 16th, at four o'clock in the afternoon, in position before Frasne, and knew that the French army was at Charleroi. If he had immediately despatched an aide-de-camp to Brussels, he would have arrived there at six in the evening; and yet the Duke of Wellington was not informed, that the French army was at Charleroi until eleven at night. He thus lost five hours in a crisis, and against a man, which rendered the loss of a single hour highly important.

Digitized by Google

" 3dly,—The infantry, cavalry, and artillery of that army, were in cantonments so remote from each other, that the infantry was engaged at Waterloo without cavalry or artillery, which exposed it to considerable loss, since it was obliged to form in close columns to make head against the charges of the cuirassiers, under the fire of fifty pieces of cannon. These brave men were slaughtered without cavalry to protect, or artillery to avenge them. As the three branches of an army cannot, for an instant, dispense with each other's assistance, they should be always cantoned and placed in a way to be of mutual service to each other.

" 4thly,—The English General, although surprized, assigned Quatre-Bras, which had been, for the last four and twenty hours in possession of the French, as the rallying point of his army. He exposed his troops to partial defeats as they gradually arrived; the danger which they incurred, was still more considerable since they presented themselves, without artillery and without cavalry; he delivered up his infantry to his enemy piece-meal, and destitute of the assistance of the two other branches. He should have fixed upon Waterloo for his point of junction; he would then have had the day of the 16th, and the night between the 16th and 17th, an interval quite sufficient, to collect the whole of his army, infantry, cavalry, and artillery. The French could not

Digitized by Google

have arrived until the 17th, and would have found all his troops in position.

Eighth Observation.—" 1st, The English General fought the battle of Waterloo on the 18th, that measure was contrary to the interests of his nation, to the general system of war adopted by the allies, and to all the rules of war. It was not the interest of England, who wants so many men to recruit her armies of India, of her American colonies, and her vast establishments, to expose herself, with a generous vivacity, to a sanguinary contest in which she might lose the only army she had, and expend, at the very least, her purest blood. The plan of the allies consisted in operating in a mass and in avoiding all partial actions. Nothing was more contrary to their interests and their plan, than to expose the success of their cause in a doubtful battle with a nearly equal force, in which all the probabilities were against them. If the Anglo-Dutch army had been destroyed at Waterloo, of what use to the allies would have been the great number of armies, that were preparing to cross the Rhine, the Alps, and the Pyrenees.

" 2dly,—The English General in accepting the battle of Waterloo, placed his reliance on the co-operation of the Prussians, but that co-operation could not be carried into effect until the afternoon; he therefore continued exposed alone from four o'clock in the morning until five in the

Digitized by Google

afternoon, that is to say, for thirteen hours; no battle lasts generally more than six hours; that co-operation was therefore an illusion.

"But, if he relied upon the co-operation of the Prussians, he must have supposed, that the whole of the French army was opposed to him, and he must consequently have undertaken to defend his field of battle, during thirteen hours, with 90,000 men of different nations, against an army of 104,000 French. That calculation was evidently false; he could not have maintained himself three hours; the battle would have been decided by eight o'clock in the morning, and the Prussians would have arrived only to be taken in flank. Both armies would have been destroyed in one battle. If he calculated, that a part of the French army had, conformably to the rules of war, pursued the Prussian army, he ought, in that case, to be convinced that he could receive no assistance from it, and that the Prussians, beaten at Lintz, with the loss of from 25, to 30,000 men on the field of battle, and 20,000 scattered and dispersed over the country, and pursued by from 35, to 40,000 victorious French, would not have risked any fresh operation, and would have considered themselves scarcely sufficient to maintain a defensive position. In that case, the Anglo-Dutch army alone would have to sustain the shock of 69,000 French during the whole of the 18th, and there is no Englishman who will not agree, that the

Digitized by Google

result of that struggle could not be doubtful, and that their army was not constituted so as to be capable of sustaining the attack of the imperial army for four hours.

"During the whole of the night between the 17th and 18th, the weather was horrible, and the roads were impassable until nine o'clock in the morning. This loss of six hours from the break of day was entirely in the enemy's favour; but could the English General stake the fate of such a struggle upon the weather which happened in the night between the 17th and 18th? Marshal Grouchy, with 34,000 men, and 180 pieces of cannon found the secret, which one would suppose, was not to be found, of not being in the engagement of the 18th, either on the field of battle of Mont Saint Jean or on Wavres. But had that Marshal pledged himself to the English General to be led astray in so strange a manner? The conduct of Marshal Grouchy was as unexpected, as that his army should, on its march, be swallowed up by an earthquake. Let us recapitulate. If Marshal Grouchy had been on the field of battle of Mont Saint Jean, as he was supposed to be by the English General and the Prussian General, during the whole night between the 17th and 18th, and all the morning of the 18th, and the weather had allowed the French army to be drawn up in order of battle at four o'clock in the morning, the

Digitized by Google

Anglo-Dutch army would have been dispersed and cut to pieces before seven; its ruin would have been complete; and if the weather had not allowed the French army to range itself in order of battle until ten, the fate of the Anglo-Dutch army would have been decided before one o'clock at noon; the remains of it would have been driven either beyond the forest or in the direction of Hal, and there would have been quite time enough in the afternoon to go and meet Marshal Blucher, and treat him in a similar manner. If Marshal Grouchy had encamped in front of Wavres in the night between the 17th and 18th, no detachment could have been sent by the Prussians to save the English army, which must have been completely beaten by the 69,000 French opposed to it.

"3dly.—The position of Mont Saint Jean was ill chosen. The first requisite of a field of battle is to be without defiles in its rear. The English General derived no advantage, during the battle, from his numerous cavalry; he did not think, that he ought to be and would be attacked on the left; he believed that the attack would be made on his right. Notwithstanding the diversion operated in his favour by General Bulow's 30,000 Prussians, he would have twice effected his retreat, during the battle, had that measure been possible. Thus, in reality, how strange and capricious are human events! the bad choice of

Digitized by Google

his field of battle, which prevented all possibility of retreat, was the cause of his success ! ! !

Ninth Observation.—" It may be asked, what then should have been the conduct of the English General after the battle of Ligny, and the engagement of Quatre Bras? On this point, posterity will not entertain two opinions; he ought, in the night between the 17th and 18th, to have crossed the forest of Soignes, by the road of Charleroi; the Prussian army ought also to have crossed it by the road of Wavres; the armies would have effected a junction by break of day in Brussels; left their rear guards for the defence of the forest, gained some days in order to give time to the Prussians, dispersed after the battle of Ligny, to join their army; reinforced themselves with fourteen English regiments, which were in garrison in the fortresses of Belgium, or had been just landed at Ostend on their return from America, and let the Emperor of the French manœuvre as he pleased.

" Would he, with an army of 100,000 men have traversed the forest of Soignes to attack in an open country the two united armies, consisting of more than 200,000 men, and in position? It would have certainly been the most advantageous thing that could have happened to the allies. Would he have been contented with taking up a position himself? He could not have long remained in an inactive state, since 300,000 Russians, Austrians,

Digitized by Google

Bavarians, &c. were on their march to the Rhine; they would have been in a few weeks on the Marne, which would have compelled him to hasten to the assistance of his capital. It was then, that the Anglo-Prussian army ought to march and effect its junction with the allies, under the walls of Paris. It would have exposed itself to no risk, suffered no loss, and have acted conformably to the interests of the English nation, and the general plan of carrying on the war adopted by the allies, and sanctioned by the rules of the military art. From the 15th to the 18th the Duke of Wellington invariably manœuvred, as his enemy wished; he executed nothing which the latter apprehended he would. The English infantry was firm and solid; the cavalry might have conducted itself better; the Anglo-Dutch army was twice saved, in the course of the day, by the Prussians, the first time before three o'clock, by the arrival of General Bulow with 30,000 men, and the second time by the arrival of Marshal Blucher with 31,000 men. In that battle, 69,000 French beat 120,000 men; the victory was wrested from them, between eight and nine, by 150,000 men.

"Let the feelings of the people of London be imagined, had they been doomed to hear of the destruction of their army, and the prodigal waste of their purest blood, in support of the cause of

Digitized by Google

kings against that of the people, of privileges against equality, of the oligarchs against the liberals, and of the principles of the holy alliance against those of the sovereignty of the people!!!"

Digitized by Google

INDEX

TO

THE FIFTH PART.

AUGUST. Account of the disturbances of the tenth of August, related by the Emperor, who had witnessed them, 144.

B. . . . (*Madame de.*) The Emperor imagined her to be malignant: he is completely undeceived, 73.—Anecdote relating to the First Consul, 74.

BARRAL, (*De, Archbishop of Tours.*) The Emperor described him as a man of extensive information, 89.—Is addressed by the Emperor at one of his Sunday audiences, on the transactions with the Pope, 216.

BEAUMARCHAIS. Napoleon always kept him at a distance, on account of his character, notwithstanding his brilliant talents, 2.

BRAUSSET, (*De, Bishop of Arles.*) The Emperor's opinion of, 90.

BERNADOTTE. Elected in Sweden, on account of his wife, sister to King Joseph's consort, 171.—One of the main causes of our misfortunes, by giving the enemy the key to our policy and to the tactics of our armies, &c. ———On returning amongst us, perceived that public opinion was justly unfavorable to him, 172.—Letter addressed to him by Napoleon, on the continental system, 175.

BERTHIER, (*Prince of Neufchatel.*) His private life. Napoleon pressed him to marry; Madame V..... induced him to marry a princess of Bavaria, 21.—Berthier's despair, 22.

BOISGELIN, (*Cardinal.*) The Emperor described him as a man of talent and probity, 89.

CALONNE, (*M. de.*) One of the causes of the emigration, 96.—The financial oracle of the emigrants, 99.

CAMPAIGNS OF ITALY AND EGYPT. According to the Emperor, the chapters relating thereto would be highly agreeable to the French and Italians, 165.—They would immortalise the names of his companions in glory, 166.

CATHERINE II. (*Empress of Russia.*) Described by the Emperor as a commanding woman, worthy of a beard, 194.

CAZALES, (*M. de.*) His arrival at Coblentz, 109.—Judicious observations on the passage of the Prussians through Coblentz, 118.

Digitized by Google

CHERBOURG. Account of the works at that port, 2.
CLERGY. The Emperor was satisfied with the old clergy, 89.—None of the ancient bishops betrayed his confidence.—Had to complain only of those whom he had himself appointed, 90.
CONVENTS. Nuns and Monks.—The taking of the veil, a ceremony formerly much attended by young officers, &c. 87.—The Emperor unfavorable to convents.—Admitted, nevertheless, that an empire like France might and ought to have a few hospitals for lunatics called *trappistes*, 88.—Called the monks of mount Cenis extremely useful, and even heroic.—Thought that monks would be by far the best teachers of youth, if they could be withdrawn from a foreign jurisdiction, and attached to the government, 89.
DIDEROT'S *Père de Famille*. The Emperor's remarks on, 93.
DU BELLOY, (*Cardinal*) The Emperor's opinion of, 90.
EGYPT. Remark by the Emperor on St. Jean d'Acre, 59.—Volney's errors.—A handful of Frenchmen had proved sufficient to conquer that fine country, 60.—The English trembled on seeing us in possession of Egypt; it was the true way to deprive them of India.—If forty or fifty thousand European families should ever establish their industry, laws, and administration in Egypt, India would thenceforth be lost to the English, more by the force of circumstances than by that of arms, 61.
EMIGRATION. The Emperor requests an historical sketch of that of Coblentz.—Its origin, 95.—Assemblages at Worms and Coblentz, 96.—One called the *camp*, the other the *tour*, and the *court*, 98.—From twenty to twenty-five thousand emigrants in arms are parcelled out into three corps; six thousand under the Prince de Condé against Alsace; four thousand under the Duke de Bourbon, in Flanders; and from twelve to fifteen thousand, under the king's brothers, against Champagne, 119.—Plans for the commencement of the campaign, 120.—The emigrants sent to the rear of the Prussian army.—Set to besiege Thionville.—Curious particulars, 125.—Pleasantries, anecdotes, &c. 127.
ENGLISH. Their attentions to the emigrants, 255.—Enraged at the Berlin and Milan decrees. Not accustomed to such energy. 285.—Napoleon declared the English might now be pre-eminent, if they would confine themselves to their ships, 286.
ETIQUETTE. That of St. Helena, 30.—At the Tuileries the Emperor said he was the first that had separated the service of honour from that of necessity.—"A king," he said, "does not exist in nature, but only in civilization; there are no naked kings; there can be none but dressed ones," 81.
FAUBOURG, ST. GERMAIN. The Emperor said he had arranged matters ill with this Faubourg: he had done either too much or too little, 24.—Anecdotes, 235.

Digitized by Google

Fontainebleau, (*Palace of.*) The Emperor's opinion, who thought highly of it, 156.
Gall. His system exposed by Napoleon, 68.
Grassini, (*The beautiful Madame.*) Anecdote, 20.
Guard, National, of Paris. Constantly evinced the virtues of its station; the love of order, devotion to authority, the fear of pillage, and the hatred of anarchy, 144.
Gustavus III. (*King of Sweden.*) Was to have been the generalissimo of the troops intended to support the emigrants.—Declared his desire of fighting in person.—His expressions on taking leave of the Princess de Lamballe, 113.—Lived as a private individual at Aix-la-Chapelle, under the name of Count Haga, 166.
Gustavus IV. (*King of Sweden.*) The Emperor said he had at the commencement of his career, given himself out for a hero, but had ended it like a madman.—Had insulted Catherine the Great when a youth, and the Emperor Alexander at a subsequent period, 167.—Declared himself the great antagonist of the Emperor.—Dethroned by his subjects, 168.—After the battle of Leipsic, offered his services to Napoleon as an aide-de-camp, and requested an asylum in France, 169.
Illyria. It never was Napoleon's intention to keep it.—It was, when in our hands, a vanguard in the heart of Austria; a sentinel at the gates of Vienna, to force its cabinet to act honestly. The Emperor only took it as a pledge, and had several plans respecting it; he thought of restoring it in exchange for Gallicia, 30.
Josephine, (*The Empress.*) Witnessed the commencement of the campaign against Wurmser.—Wept much on leaving her husband, who embraced her, saying, as if by inspiration, "Wurmser shall pay dearly for those tears."—Obliged to pass near Mantua, and fired on from the walls.—Received at Lucca by the senate, and treated like a great princess, 182.
Joubert, (*General.*) Had a profound veneration for Napoleon. Took him for his model.—His death.—His portrait by Napoleon, 259.
La Harpe. The Emperor considered his Mélanie ill conceived: vicious institutions are not to be attacked with vicious weapons, 86.
Las Cases, (*Count.*) His mission concerning the depôts of mendicity, 39.—Prosperity of France, 41.—Depôts of mendicity, 43.—Hospitals, 45.—Prisons, 47.—Historical sketch of Coblentz, 95.—Found himself at the Cape of Good Hope, in the custody of an inhabitant of Coblentz, 117.
Lavater. The falsehood of his system, 69.
Louis XVI. According to Napoleon the most exemplary of private individuals, but a very poor king, 92.
Lowe, (*Sir Hudson, Governor of St. Helena.*) The Emperor

Digitized by Google

tells him, he thinks him capable of any thing; that he is a greater affliction to the captives than all the miseries of their barren rock, 18.—Withholds a book sent to the Emperor by an English Member of Parliament, because it was addressed, in gold letters, to Napoleon the Great, 83.—Had never commanded any but foreign deserters, the dregs and scum of Europe, 220.—Very harshly treated by the Emperor on his last visit, 222.

Marie Antoinette. Napoleon says she would have been at any time the ornament of private society; but her levity, inconsistency, and limited capacity, had contributed, not a little, to accelerate the catastrophe of the monarchy, 92.—Anecdote, 93.

Megrigny, (*Madame de.*) Teazed by the Emperor at a masked ball, 146.

Mesmer. His system exposed, 67.

Mendicity. Remarks on depôts, 43.—Much less common in poor and barren provinces than in rich abundant countries.—The Emperor's observations, 44.—Benevolent establishments, 45.

Moliere. The Emperor's opinion of the Tartufe, 229.

Moscow. His expressions on the burning of Moscow, 262.—Said the fictions on the burning of Troy were far from coming up to the reality of that of Moscow, 263.—Description of Moscow, and the conflagration, 268.

Napoleon,—His ideas respecting Cherbourg, 8.—Scheme of a maritime war.—Thought to end it by a battle of Actium, 10.—Felt no repugnance towards the Commissioners of the Allies at St. Helena; not even toward the French Commissioner; he was French, an indestructible claim, in his sight, 19.—On his debut in Italy, excited an universal enthusiasm and ambition.—His fortune lay in his prudence.—Madame Grassini, 20.—Madame V....., 21.—Said he had arranged matters ill with the Faubourg St. Germain: that he had done too much or too little, 24.—Collected ancient names about him; those which figured in French history, as a means of speedily giving the sanction of antiquity to modern institutions.—His first idea had been to marry a French woman, which his ministers prevented, by urging motives of policy, 26.—Reasons for his resumption of monarchial forms, crosses, ribbons, &c. 28.—Etiquette at Longwood, 29.—Convinced that the extirpation of mendicity was possible, 32.—His intentions respecting Illyria, 36.—Fatalities accumulated against him towards the end of his career, 37.—His own observations on his law of the state prisons, 54.—Positively asserted that the French were in his time the freest nation in all Europe.—All the nations separated from the empire regret the loss of the laws by which he formerly governed them, 57.—In his expedition to

Digitized by Google

Egypt, if he had been master of the sea, he would have been master of the East, 59.—Had gained such an influence over his soldiers, that a mere order of the day would have sufficed to induce them all to turn Mahometans, 61.—The desert had always possessed charms to him.—The word Napoleon signifies Lion of the Desert, 62.—Anecdote of a Chinese, 63.—Says to those about him that on returning into the world, they were destined to become brothers for his sake, 64.—On dreams and presentiments; Cagliostro, Mesmer, Gall, Lavater, &c. 66.—Accumulated vexations, 70.—Conversation with Admiral Malcolm. Ought not sovereigns to possess hearts? In defending his title of Emperor, he was defending the honour of other sovereigns, 78.—His court the most magnificent ever seen, 80.—Expenses of his hunt; table; stable department; pages, 81.—Convents; nuns; trappists; monks, 86.—Said he had never done any thing for the clergy but they had given him cause to repent it, 89.—Had met with reason to complain of the bishops he had himself appointed, only; and not of the ancient bishops, 90.—Thought that after his time, conscriptions of priests and nuns would perhaps be seen in France instead of those of soldiers; and the barracks would be turned into convents and seminaries, 91.—Historical sketch of the emigration, 95.—Things were ascribed to mere prejudices, personal inclinations, and littleness in the Emperor, which arose in reality only from profound views, grand conceptions, and state maxims of the most elevated description, 134.—His conversation with Count S.... on the emigrés, 135.—Sentimental journey to Nuitz, 139.—Before the oath to the nation, the law, and the king, if he had received orders to turn his cannon against the people, he had no doubt but that he should have obeyed; but when he had once taken the national oath, he would have regarded the people only, 142.—An eye witness of the tenth of August.—Particulars thereof, 143.—Very fond of masked balls.—Addressed at one every year by the same mask, who reminded him of former intimacies, 145.—Liked to get himself affronted there. Anecdotes, 146.—Favours conferred by him on several private families, 147.—When any useful, curious or interesting idea occurred to him, a question was proposed to the members of the institute, who adopted or rejected it, 149.—Had constructed a great number of canals; and projected many more, 150.—Wished to have made Paris the capital of Europe, 152.—Had Heaven permitted him to reign twenty years longer, and allowed him a little leisure, he would have changed the face of France.—A world might be created by means of budgets, 153.—Often refused the fêtes which the city of Paris wished to give him; proved that this useless expenditure would suffice to erect magnificent durable monuments. All his power was

Digitized by Google

requisite to enable him to do good. Expended as much as thirty millions in sewers for which no one will give him any credit, 154.—At the foot as well as at the summit of the Alps, on the sands of Holland, and on the banks of the Rhine, Napoleon appears on every side.—Thought of draining the Pontine marshes, 155.—Intended only to have prepared the ground for the palace of the king of Rome, and would have proceeded no farther.—Anecdote.—Had found it extremely difficult to make his system of budgets understood, 158.—On his journies to Fontainebleau from twelve to fifteen hundred persons were invited and accommodated with lodgings and furniture; above three thousand people dined there, 159.—Regretted that he had not had the histories of all the nations in Europe, from the time of Louis XIV., drawn up from the original documents in the foreign office.—Once wrote to Selim, 161.—His answer, 162.—Had he been able, when in Egypt, to unite the Mamelukes with his French troops, he would have looked upon himself as master of the world, 162.—The Regency one of the most hideous periods of our annals, 163.—Gustavus IV. offers himself to Napoleon as his aide-de-camp, 169.—The Swedes request him to give them a king, 170.—Had over-rated the importance of having a Frenchman on the throne of Sweden, 171.—Felt an instinctive presentiment which rendered Bernadotte's election disagreeable to him, 172.—Had found a clue to the character of the Emperor Paul, 174.—Letter to Bernadotte on his continental system, 175.—His patrimonial vine; disposed of it in favour of his nurse, 179.—Gave his patrimonial house to the Romalino family, 180.—His nurse; she came to Paris; charmed the whole family, and had a long interview with the Pope, 181.—The soldiers of a palace terrible and dangerous. During the consulate, Paul frequently wrote to him, 184.—Often repeated that he had never felt either his head or stomach, 185.—Fatalities of the campaign of Russia, 188.—Addressed by Madame de Staël. The first woman in the world is she who has had the most children, 192.—On religion, 199.—Had met with great resistance in his endeavours to restore the Catholic worship; would have been more willingly followed if he had raised the protestant banner, 201.—Francis I. well situated for adopting Protestantism, 203.—Remarks on the Pope, 207.—Drew the famous Concordat of Fontainebleau from him, merely by the force of his conversation, 210.—Tries to persuade the Pope by arguments, but in vain, 212.—His intentions with regard to religion and the Pope, in case he had returned victorious from Moscow; would have re-instated the Pope, surrounded him with honours and splendour, and made Paris the capital of the Christian world, 214.—The legal directions of ecclesiastical affairs had always been the

Digitized by Google

object of his meditation and wishes, 216.—Warm conversation with the Governor, 219.—Said that should he be hungry, he would go and take his seat at the table of the brave 53d., 221.—Napoleon will remain the subject of history and the star of civilized nations, 222.—Said that the most infamous libels never hurt him, but when there was any thing approaching to truth he instantly felt the desire to defend himself, 225.—His protest against the treaty of the second of August.—Had purposely omitted to mention the treaty of Fontainebleau.—Said he disclaimed that treaty, and why.—Called himself a piece of rock launched into space, 226.—On general S——n's work, 228.—Opinion of the Tartufe, 229.—Did not remember having once taken medicine at the Tuileries.—Had no faith in medicine.—Not so with respect to surgery.—Had thrice commenced courses of anatomy, but business and disgust had interrupted them, 234.—Official answer to the Governor concerning the Commissioners of the Allies, and the embarrassments of his budget, 241.—On the burning of Moscow, 262.—What he would have done if Moscow had not been burnt, 263.—A peace made in Moscow would have completed and terminated his warlike operations. He would then have had his *congress* and his *holy alliance*. Would have become the natural mediator between the old and new orders of things, 264.—Would have placed his glory in his equity.—Would have desired an European code, a court of cassation for all Europe, the same money, the same weights and measures, the same laws.—Europe would thus have become but one people, 265.—His dictatorship would have terminated, and the constitutional reign of his son would have commenced.—Would have associated him with himself in the empire.—Paris would have been the capital of the world, and the French the envy of all nations.—His leisure would have been spent in visiting every corner of the empire, with the empress, and by easy journies, like a true country couple, scattering benefits and creating monuments in every direction, 267.—His maritime quarrel with England, 284.—Had forced the Americans to fight the English, by connecting their interest with their rights, 285.—Observations on the battle of Waterloo, 286.

Navy. Napoleon's ideas and intentions with respect to the ports of France, and to the Navy in general, 12.

Paris. The Emperor wished to have made it the true capital of Europe; something fabulous, colossal, unknown before our times, 152.

Paul I. (*Emperor of Russia.*) His fury occasioned by the dishonorable conduct of the English ministry.—His indignation on the denial of the English that they had promised him

Digitized by Google

Malta.—Thrust his sword through the despatches of the English ministry.—The English refusing to include in their exchange, the Russian prisoners taken in Holland, in their service, Napoleon takes advantage of the circumstance, new clothes them, and sends them back to Paul, who from that moment is entirely devoted to him, 174.—It has been thought, observed the Emperor, that this attachment was fatal to him, 175.—Often wrote to the First Consul, 184.

Pius VII. Was desirous of obtaining from Napoleon, as a recompense for his coming to France and crowning him, his signature to the declaration by which Louis XIV, disapproved of the famous articles of 1682, the foundation of the liberties of the Gallican church, 207.—It was by the mere power of his private conversation that Napoleon drew from him the celebrated Concordat of Fontainebleau.—The Emperor considered him a lamb, a really worthy man, whom he greatly loved and esteemed, 210.—His change of proceedings, 212.—Causes of his last journey to France, 213.

Piedmontese. The Emperor said he had a particular affection for that province.—That the Piedmontese did not like to be a small state, 148.

Prisons. Comforts of those of England.—Difference of ours which are dreadful abodes.—Persons merely suspected placed there amongst the greatest criminals, 47.—State prisoners, 54.—Napoleon's observations on his law of the state prisons, 55.—At the time of his fall they contained only two hundred and fifty individuals. He found nine thousand state prisoners, when he became Consul, 56.

Puysegur. Attacked by the Emperor at one of his public audiences; refutation of magnetism and somnambulism, 67.

Roquelaure, (*Archbishop.*) The Emperor's opinion of, 90.

Russia. Napoleon asks whether Peter the Great acted wisely in founding a capital at Petersburg. Arguments on the subject, 261.

Santini, (*Usher of the Emperor's chamber.*) Wanted to kill the Governor, and himself afterwards.—The Emperor could not, he said, divert him from his resolution without employing his whole authority, imperial and pontifical, 84.

S——n, (*General.*) The Emperor's remarks on his work.—He had deserted from the camp at Boulogne, carrying all Napoleon's secrets to the English.—On Napoleon's returning to the isle of Elba, wrote to the Emperor with a tender of his services; but was arrested and ought to have been shot, 228.

S...., (*Count.*) Conversation with the Emperor, 135.—Proof he gives of the great and excellent qualities and heart of Napoleon, 137.—Anecdote of a crowd of kings, 138.

Selim III, (*Emperor of the Turks.*) The Emperor once wrote to him, 161.—His answer, 162.

Digitized by Google

Soult, (*Marshal.*) Described by the Emperor as an excellent director, a good war-minister, 228.

Stael, (*Madame de.*) Has described herself too faithfully in her Corinna.—The Emperor displeased with her for having decried the French in her romance, 190.—Ardent in her passions.—Letter read by the police, 191.—Banished.—Fought with one hand and solicited with the other—The First Consul causes her to be informed, that he leaves her the whole universe to carry on her operations in, with the exception of Paris, which he reserves to himself, and forbids her to approach. —Wished, during the imperial reign, to be a lady of the bedchamber, 194.

S...., (*Baroness.*) A Frenchwoman, wife to the Austrian Commissioner at St. Helena, 230.

Talleyrand, (*Prince.*) Urgently pressed the Emperor to make peace after his return from Leipsic.—Blamed Napoleon's speech to the senate.—Approved that to the legislative body. —Constantly repeated to Napoleon that he deceived himself with regard to the energy of the nation; that it would not second his efforts, but desert him, 189.—Tenth of August, account of the disturbances of that day, by the Emperor, who had witnessed them, 144.

Versailles. The Emperor says it was an error of Louis XIV. to undertake the erection of Versailles, 155.—Napoleon blamed himself for the sums he had lavished on that palace, 157. —In his gigantic ideas with respect to Paris, thought to make some use of it, to bring it in as a kind of suburb to the great capital.—Instead of the nymphs of its groves, he would have substituted panoramas of all the capitals which had been entered by our victorious troops, and of all the celebrated battles which have added glory to the French arms, 160.

Voisins, (*de, bishop of Nantes.*) Had rendered the Emperor a true Catholic, through the prudence of his reasoning, his excellent morality, and his enlightened tolerance.—His answer to Marie Louise, who consulted him with respect to the necessity of fasting on Fridays, and on a public communion at Easter, 204.—Had been the firmest support of the liberties of the Gallican church.—"He was my oracle, my light," said the Emperor; "he possessed my implicit confidence in religious matters," 206.

Waterloo. Observations on that battle, dictated by Napoleon, 286.

END OF THE FIFTH PART.

Digitized by Google

B. BENSLEY, BOLT COURT, FLEET STREET.

Digitized by Google

MEMORIAL DE SAINTE HÉLÈNE.

JOURNAL

OF THE

PRIVATE LIFE

AND

CONVERSATIONS

OF THE

EMPEROR NAPOLEON

AT SAINT HELENA

BY

THE COUNT DE LAS CASES.

VOL. III.

PART THE SIXTH.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR HENRY COLBURN AND CO.
1823.

Digitized by Google

LONDON:
PRINTED BY S. AND R. BENTLEY, DORSET STREET.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS

OF

THE SIXTH PART.

Page

Plan for a Political Defence of Napoleon; sketched by himself 1

Catinat; Turenne; Condé — Questions respecting the greatest Battle fought by the Emperor; the best Troops, &c. 3

Madame de Cottin's Mathilde, &c.—All Frenchmen interested in Napoleon—Desaix and Napoleon at Marengo —Sir Sidney Smith—Cause of General Bonaparte's return to France—Account of his voyage—Instances of the caprice of Fortune 8

Historical Doubts—The Regency of the Duke of Orleans—Madame de Maintenon—Her marriage with Louis XIV. 17

The French Ministers, &c.—Anecdote of M. Daru—Faded finery at Saint-Helena 20

The Campaign of Saxony in 1813—Reflections—Analysis —Battles of Lutzen and Wurchen—Negotiations—Battles of Dresden, Leipsic, Hanau, &c. 24

Benevolent actions performed by the Emperor—His visit to Amsterdam—Observations on the Dutch, &c.—The Massacres of the 3d of September—Remarks on Revolutions in general—Unhappy fate of Louis XVI. 70

The Body Guard of the King of France—A Deserter in the Emperor's suite 80

Napoleon's Reproofs, &c.—The Governor's petty Retrenchments 83

Confidential conversation—The Letters of Madame de Maintenon and Madame de Sévigné 85

Errors of the English Ministers—Means of which England might have availed herself for the liquidation of her Debt—The Governor's reductions 88

Digitized by Google

Page

The Emperor's Court at the Tuileries—The presentation of the Ladies—On women's ages—Manuscript of the Island of Elba 101
My domestic affairs—The Emperor's views in his munificence 140
Removal of the Emperor's bed—Anecdote of a Gascon soldier—The Guards of the Eagle 144
The Emperor continues unwell—Horrible Provisions, execrable Wine, &c. 148
Criticism on Prince Lucien's poem of Charlemagne—Homer 151
Scarcity of Provisions—Ridiculous allowance of Wine—Napoleon's return from Elba 154
Poem of Charlemagne—The brothers and sisters of the Emperor who have become authors 176
Want of Provisions—Gay Sophistry—On Impossibilities 177
Statistical Calculation—Population of the Israelites in Egypt 180
The Emperor alters visibly, and loses his strength—Sale of his Plate 183
Fresh vexation from the Governor—Topography of Italy 185
The celebrated debt of Saint-Domingo—Inspectors of the Reviews, &c.—Plans of administration, &c.—Gaudin, Mollien, Defermont, Lacuée, &c.—Minister of the Treasury—Minister Secretary of State—Importance of their functions 202
Revision and recasting of the Chapters on the Army of Italy 211
On Sensibility—On the inhabitants of the East and West; differences observable between them, &c. 212
On Holland and King Louis—Complaints of the Emperor against the members of his family—Matters of high Policy, &c.—Letter to King Louis, the Emperor's brother 216
Zeal for working—Ideas and Plans of Napoleon respecting our History, &c.—On the Works published, &c.—M. Ménéval; curious particulars, &c. &c. 233
Observations of the Emperor concerning my Wife—Dictation of the Emperor for another portion of his Memoirs 244
On a Hole in the Garden 247
Eloquent dictations of the Emperor—Characteristic details, &c. 248
My Atlas—Predestination, &c.—The Governor makes fruitless attempts to be received by the Emperor 259

Digitized by Google

Page

Jurisprudence; Code; Merlin, &c.—Monuments in Egypt —Plan to erect an Egyptian Temple in Paris 262
Resources during the Emigration; Anecdotes, &c.—Official Communications.—New Offences 265
The Emperor reads my Journal, and dictates to me—Conference between the Grand Marshal and the Governor 269
Peculiar circumstance connected with my Journal—The empire of opinion—Talma, Crescentini, &c. 274
The Odyssey—Combat between Ulysses and Irus 278
The Pole arrested by the Governor—The Emperor's Reflections on his Son and on Austria—New Vexations—Remarks on Lord Bathurst—Observations dictated by Napoleon 280
Anxiety occasioned by the new restrictions—Anecdotes of Campo-Formio—MM. de Cobentzel, Gallo, and Clarke —The Count d'Antraigues 296
The Emperor's Dream 309
Privations to which the Emperor is subjected—His claims on Prince Eugene 311
The required Declaration is sent to the Governor—The Emperor remarks that many modern books are merely booksellers' speculations — False notions created by party spirit—General Maison 313
Difficulties started by the Governor respecting our Declarations—The Emperor's sentiments on that subject—The Governor's conversation with each individual of the Emperor's suite—Napoleon's remark—Consummation of our slavery 316
Anecdotes of Sieyes—The Emperor frequently witnessed popular festivals in disguise—His visits to the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, after his return from Moscow, and from the Island of Elba—Manners during the time of the Directory—Remarkable official note 328
Louis XVI.—Marie Antoinette—Madame Campan—Leonard—The Princess de Lamballe 339
Removal of four individuals of our establishment—Recollections of the Emperor's early life 345
Madame de Genlis' Novels 348
Valuation of the Books sent out to us—The Grand Marshal comes to live nearer to us 349
Expedition of Saint-Louis to Egypt—Our Female Authors —Madame de Staël—The writers inimical to Napoleon will bite against granite 350

Digitized by Google

Page

Care taken of the wounded in the Armies—Baron Larrey —Characteristic circumstance 353

The Emperor accepts my four thousand Louis—Tragedy of Euripides in its original purity ordered for the Theatre at Saint-Cloud—Marshal Jourdan. 358

Summary of July, August, September, and October—Of Mr. O'Meara's work—Action now brought against him by Sir Hudson Lowe—A few words in defence of this work 362

ERRATUM.

Page 83, line 16, after *six*, read *thousand.*

Digitized by Google

MY RESIDENCE

WITH

THE EMPEROR NAPOLEON

AT SAINT HELENA.

Plan for a Political Defence of Napoleon; sketched by himself.

TUESDAY, Aug. 27th, 1816.—About four o'clock I joined the Emperor in the garden: he had been engaged in dictating during the whole of the morning. The wind was very rough, and the Emperor declined riding out in the calash: he therefore walked about for a considerable time in the great path of the wood, attended by all the individuals of his suite. He jokingly teased one of the party, by observing that he was sulky, and accusing him of being very often discontented and ill-humoured, &c.

The Emperor, on rising from the dinner-table, adverted to his recent protestation against the treaty of the 2d of August. He expatiated with warmth on the subject, and remarked, while he walked rapidly about the apartment, that he in-

Digitized by Google

tended to draw up another protest, on a more extended and important scale, against the bill that had been passed in the British parliament. He would prove, he said, that the bill was not a law, but a violation of every existing law. Napoleon was proscribed, and not judged by it. The English parliament had done, not what was just, but what was deemed to be expedient; it had imitated Themistocles, without hearing Aristides. The Emperor then arraigned himself before all the nations in Europe, and proved that each would successively acquit him. He took a review of the different acts of his reign, and justified them all. "The French and the Italians," said he, "lament my absence; I carry "with me the gratitude of the Poles, and even "the late and bitter regrets of the Spaniards.

"Europe will soon deplore the loss of the "equilibrium, to the maintenance of which my "French empire was absolutely necessary. The "Continent is now in the most perilous situa- "tion, being continually exposed to the risk of "being overrun by Cossacks and Tartars. And "the English," said he in conclusion, "the Eng- "lish will deplore their victory of Waterloo! "Things will be carried to such a length, that "posterity, together with every well-informed "and well-disposed person among our contem- "poraries, will regret that I did not succeed in "all my enterprises."

Digitized by Google

In course of his remarks, the Emperor occasionally rose to a pitch of sublimity. I shall not follow him into all his details. He promised to dictate the observations he had made, and said he had already sketched out a plan for his political defence, in fourteen paragraphs.

Catinat; Turenne; Condé.—Questions respecting the greatest Battle fought by the Emperor; the best Troops, &c.

28.—The Emperor did not go out until four o'clock; he had spent three hours in the bath. The weather was very unpleasant, and in consequence he merely took a few turns in the garden. He had just written to inform the Governor, that henceforth he would receive no strangers, unless they were admitted to Longwood by passes from the Grand Marshal, as in the time of Admiral Cockburn.

The Emperor proposed playing a game at chess; but before he sat down to do so, he took up a volume of Fenelon. It was *La Direction de Conscience d'un Roi.* He read to us several articles, criticising them with considerable spirit and gaiety. At length he threw down the volume, saying, that the name of an author had never influenced him in forming an opinion of his writings; that he always judged of works according to the sentiments with which they inspired him; being always equally willing to praise or to censure. He added, that in spite of

Digitized by Google

the name of Fenelon, he had no hesitation in declaring, that the work he had just looked through, was a mere string of rhapsodies; and truly it would be difficult to refute this assertion.

After dinner, the Emperor conversed about the old marine establishment, and alluded to M. de Grasse, and his defeat on the 12th of April. He wished to learn some particulars on this subject; and he asked for the Dictionary of Sieges and Battles. He looked over it, and it afforded him matter for a multitude of observations. Catinat came under his consideration, and the remarks he made on that commander lowered him infinitely in our estimation. Napoleon said, that he thought him very inferior to the reputation he enjoyed, after viewing the scenes of his operations in Italy, and reading his correspondence with Louvois. "Having risen from the *tiers-état*," said he, "and being educated for the law, dis-"tinguished for urbanity of manners and moral "integrity, affecting the practice of equality, re-"siding at St. Gratien, at the gates of Paris, Cati-"nat, became the favourite of the *litterati* of the "capital, and the philosophers of the day, who "exalted him beyond his real merits. He was "in no way comparable to Vendôme."

The Emperor said, he had endeavoured, in the same manner, to study the characters of Turenne and Condé, suspecting that they were also the objects of exaggerated eulogy; but that he was

Digitized by Google

convinced those two men were fully entitled to all the commendation that has been bestowed on them. With regard to Turenne, he remarked, that his intrepidity encreased in proportion as he acquired experience: as he grew old he evinced greater courage than he seemed to possess in early life. The contrary was observable in Condé, who displayed so much dauntless valour at the commencement of his career.

Now that I am alluding to Turenne, Condé, and other distinguished men, I may mention, as a curious fact, that I never, by any chance, heard Napoleon utter the name of Frederick the Great. Yet many circumstances prove that Frederick held a high rank in Napoleon's regard. The large silver watch, or kind of morning-bell, which hangs by the fire-place in the Emperor's apartment at Saint-Helena;—the eagerness with which Napoleon, on his entrance into Potzdam, seized the sword of the Prussian hero, exclaiming, "Let those who will seek other spoil; I "value this beyond millions!"—finally, his long and silent contemplation of the tomb of Frederick—sufficiently attest the deep interest which Napoleon attached to every thing connected with that prince.

In the Dictionary of Sieges and Battles, which the Emperor was looking over to-day, he found his name mentioned in every page; but connected with anecdotes either totally false, or at

Digitized by Google

least misstated. This led him to exclaim against the whole swarm of inferior writers, and their unworthy abuse of the pen. "Literature," he said, "had become the food of the vulgar, while it "ought to have been reserved exclusively for "people of refined taste.

"For example," said the Emperor, "it is "affirmed that when at Arcola, I one night took "the post of a sentinel who had fallen asleep. "This idea was doubtless conceived by a citi- "zen, by a lawyer perhaps; but certainly not "by a soldier. The author evidently wishes to "represent me in a favourable point of view; and "he of course imagined that nothing could reflect "greater credit on me than the story he has "invented. He certainly wrote it with the view "of doing me honour; but he knew not that I "was totally incapable of the action he de- "scribes. I was much too fatigued for any "such thing; and it is very probable that I "should myself have fallen asleep before the "sentinel."

We then enumerated about fifty or sixty great battles that had been fought by the Emperor. Some one present having asked which was the greatest, the Emperor replied that it was difficult to answer that question, since it was first necessary to inquire what was meant by the greatest battle. "Mine," continued he, "can- "not be judged of detachedly. They had no

Digitized by Google

"unity of place, action, or design. They formed "merely a portion of extensive plans. They can "therefore only be judged by their results. The "battle of Marengo, which was so long undecided, "procured for us the dominion of all Italy; Ulm "annihilated a whole army; Jena threw the whole "Prussian monarchy into our hands; Friedland "opened to us the Russian empire; and Eckmuhl "decided the fate of a war. The battle of Moscow "was one in which the greatest talent was dis- "played, and in which the fewest results were "obtained. Waterloo, where every thing failed, "would, had every thing succeeded, have saved "France, and re-established Europe," &c.

Madame de Montholon having asked what troops might be accounted the best; "Those "who gain victories, Madam," replied the Emperor. "But," added he, "soldiers are capricious "and inconstant, like you ladies. The best "troops were the Carthaginians under Hannibal; "the Romans under the Scipios; the Macedo- "nians under Alexander; and the Prussians "under Frederick." He thought, however, he might safely affirm that the French troops were, of all others, those who could most easily be rendered the best, and preserved so.

"With my complete guard of forty or fifty "thousand men, I would have pledged myself to "march through all Europe. It may, perhaps, "be possible to produce troops as good as those

Digitized by Google

" who composed my army of Italy and Austerlitz;
" but certainly nothing can ever surpass them."

The Emperor, who had dwelt for a considerable time on this subject, which was so interesting to him, suddenly recollecting himself, asked what it was o'clock. He was informed it was eleven. —" Well," said he, rising, " we at least have the " merit of having got through our evening without " the help of either tragedy or comedy."

Madame de Cottin's Mathilde, &c.—All Frenchmen interested in Napoleon.—Desaix and Napoleon at Marengo.—Sir Sidney Smith.—Cause of General Bonaparte's return to France.—Account of his voyage.—Instances of the caprice of Fortune.

29th.—About two o'clock the Emperor desired me to attend him in his chamber, and he gave me some private orders. . . . . .

. . . . . .

At four o'clock I rejoined him. I found him sitting under the tent, surrounded by all his suite; he was swinging backward and forward on his chair, laughing, talking, and making every effort to be cheerful, while, at the same time, he continually repeated that he felt dull and languid. He rose and took a drive in the calash.

After dinner the conversation turned on romance writing. Some one mentioned Madame Cottin's Mathilde, the scene of which is laid in Syria. The Emperor asked the individual who

Digitized by Google

had alluded to the work, whether he had ever seen Madame Cottin, whether she liked him (Napoleon), whether her work was favourable to him, &c.; but as he did not receive a ready answer he thus continued: "But every body "has loved me, and hated me: every one has "been for me and against me by turns. I may "truly say there is not a single Frenchman in "whom I have not excited interest. All must "have loved me, from Collot d'Herbois (had he "lived) to the Prince de Condé; only not all at "the same time, but at different intervals and "periods. I was like the sun crossing the equator "in his course through the ecliptic. According "as my influence was felt in each different cli-"mate, all hopes expanded, and I was blessed "and adored; but when I had departed, when "I was no longer understood, unfavourable sen-"timents arose."

Egypt next became the subject of conversation; and the Emperor again sketched the characters of Kleber and Desaix. The latter joined the First Consul on the eve of the battle of Marengo. Napoleon asked him how he could have thought of signing the capitulation of Egypt; since the army was sufficiently numerous to maintain possession of it. "We ought not to have lost Egypt," he observed.—"That's very true," replied Desaix, "and the army was certainly numerous enough "to enable us to retain possession of the country.

Digitized by Google

"But the General-in-chief left us; and at that "distance from home, the General-in-chief is not "a single man in the army; he is the half, the "three-fourths, the five-sixths of it. I had no "alternative but to resign the possession of the "country. I doubt whether I could have suc- "ceeded had I acted otherwise: besides, it "would have been criminal to make the attempt, "for in such a case it is a soldier's duty to obey, "and I did so."

Desaix, immediately after his arrival at Marengo, obtained the command of the reserve. Towards the end of the battle, and amidst the greatest apparent disorder, Napoleon came up to him:—"Well," said Desaix, "affairs are going "on very badly, the battle is lost. I can only "secure the retreat. Is it not so?"—"Quite the "contrary," said the First Consul; "to me the re- "sult of the battle was never for a moment doubt- "ful. Those masses which you see in disorder "on the right and left, are marching to form "themselves in your rear. The battle is gained. "Order your column to advance: you have but "to reap the glory of the victory."

The Emperor afterwards spoke of Sir Sidney Smith. He had, he said, just read in the Moniteur, the documents relating to the convention of El-Arish, in which he remarked that Sir Sidney had evinced a great share of intelligence and integrity. The Emperor said he be-

Digitized by Google

wildered Kleber by the stories which he made him believe. But when Sir Sidney received intelligence of the refusal of the English Government to ratify the treaty, he was very much dissatisfied, and behaved very honourably to the French army. "After all," said the Emperor, "Sir Sidney Smith is not a bad man. I now "entertain a better opinion of him than I did; "particularly after what I daily witness in the "conduct of his confederates."

It was Sir Sidney Smith, who, by communicating the European journals to Napoleon, brought about the departure of the General-in-chief, and consequently the *dénouement* of Brumaire. The French, on their return from St. Jean d'Acre, were totally ignorant of all that had taken place in Europe for several months. Napoleon, eager to obtain intelligence, sent a flag of truce on board the Turkish admiral's ship, under the pretence of treating for the ransom of the prisoners whom he had taken at Abookir, not doubting but the envoy would be stopped by Sir Sidney Smith, who carefully prevented all direct communication between the French and the Turks. Accordingly the French flag of truce received directions from Sir Sidney to go on board his ship. He experienced the handsomest treatment; and the English commander having among other things ascertained that the disasters of Italy were quite unknown to Napoleon, he in-

Digitized by Google

dulged in the malicious pleasure of sending him a file of newspapers.

Napoleon spent the whole night in his tent, perusing the papers; and he came to the determination of immediately proceeding to Europe, to repair the disasters of France, and, if possible, to save her from destruction.

Admiral Ganthaume, who brought Napoleon from Egypt in the frigate *Le Muiron*, frequently related to me the details of his voyage. The Admiral remained at head-quarters after the destruction of the fleet at Abookir.

Shortly after the return from Syria, and immediately after a communication with the English squadron, the General-in-chief directed Ganthaume to proceed forthwith to Alexandria, to fit out secretly, and with all possible speed, one of the Venetian frigates that were lying off that port, and to let him know when the vessel was ready to sail.

These orders were executed. The General-in-chief, who was making a tour of inspection, proceeded to an unfrequented part of the coast, with a party of his guides. Boats were in readiness to receive them, and they were conveyed to the frigate without going near Alexandria.

The frigate sailed that very evening, in order to get out of sight of the English cruisers, and the fleet that was anchored at Abookir, before daylight. Unfortunately a calm ensued while

Digitized by Google

the vessel was still within sight of the coast, and from the mast-tops the English ships at Abookir were still discernible.

The utmost alarm prevailed on board the frigate. It was proposed to return by Alexandria; but Napoleon opposed this suggestion. The die was cast; and happily they soon got beyond the reach of observation.

The voyage was very long and very unfavourable. The idea of being overtaken by the English frequently occasioned alarm. Though no one knew the intentions of the General, each formed his own conjectures, and the utmost anxiety prevailed. Napoleon alone was calm and undisturbed. During the greater part of the day he used to shut himself up in his cabin, where, as Ganthaume informed me, he employed himself in reading sometimes the Bible, and sometimes the Koran. Whenever he appeared on deck he displayed the most cheerful and easy air, and conversed on the most indifferent subjects.

General Menou was the last person to whom Napoleon spoke on shore. He said to him, "My dear General, you must take care of your-"selves here. If I have the happiness to reach "France, the reign of ranting shall be at an "end."

On a perusal of the papers furnished by Sir Sidney Smith, Napoleon formed such an idea of

Digitized by Google

the disasters of France, that he concluded the enemy had crossed the Alps, and was already in possession of several of our Southern Departments. Thus when the frigate approached the shores of Europe, Napoleon directed the Admiral to make for Collioure and Port-Vendre, situated at the extremity of the Gulf of Lyons. A gale of wind drove them upon the coast of Corsica. They then entered Ajaccio, where they obtained intelligence of the state of affairs in France.

Ganthaume informed me, that he saw at Ajaccio, the house that was occupied by Napoleon's family, the patrimonial abode. The arrival of their celebrated countryman immediately set all the inhabitants of the island in motion. A crowd of cousins came to welcome him, and the streets were thronged with people.

Napoleon again set sail, and the frigate now steered towards Marseilles and Toulon. However, just as they were on the point of reaching the place of their destination, a new source of alarm arose. At sunset, on the larboard of the frigate, and precisely in the sun's rays, they observed thirty sail making towards them with the wind abaft. Ganthaume proposed that the long boat of the frigate should be manned with the best sailors, and that the General should get on board, and, by favour of the night, endeavour to gain the shore. But Napoleon declined this pro-

Digitized by Google

position, observing that there would always be time enough for that mode of escape; and he directed the captain to continue his course as though nothing had occurred. Meanwhile night set in, and the enemy's signals were heard, at a distance, and right astern: thus it appeared that the frigate had not been observed. Next day they anchored at Frejus. The rest is well known.

The Emperor concluded the evening's conversation, by relating to us three curious instances of the caprice of fortune, which took place in the same quarter of the world, and about the same period.

A corporal, who deserted from one of the regiments of the army of Egypt, joined the Mamelukes, and was made a Bey. After his elevation, he wrote a letter to his former General.

A fat suttler's wife who had followed the French army, became the favourite of the Pasha of Jerusalem. She could not write, but she sent a messenger with her compliments to her old friends, assuring them, that she would never forget her country, but would always afford protection to the French and the Christians. "She "was," said the Emperor, "the Zaira of the "day."

A young peasant-girl of Cape Corso, being seized in a fishing-boat by corsairs, was conveyed to Barbary, and subsequently became the

Digitized by Google

ruling favourite of the King of Morocco. The Emperor, after some diplomatic communications, caused the brother of this young girl to be brought from Corsica to Paris, and, after having him suitably fitted out, sent him to his sister; but he never afterwards heard of them.

It was late when the Emperor retired to rest; he had spent upwards of three hours in conversation.

30th.—I attended the Emperor at four o'clock. He had been engaged in dictating under the tent. The Governor had returned answers to the letters which M. de Montholon addressed to him by the Emperor's orders.

To the first communication, containing the protest against the treaty of the 2d of August, and various other complaints, no answer was returned, except that the Governor wished to be informed what letter he had kept back. This we could not tell him, since we had not seen the letters. We had asked *him* that question; and he was the only person capable of answering it.

To the second letter, which stated that the Emperor would not receive strangers at Longwood unless they were admitted by the Grand Marshal's passes, as was usual in the time of Admiral Cockburn, the Governor replied, that he had been sorry to see General Bonaparte troubled by intrusive visitors at Longwood, and that he wished to prevent such importunity for

Digitized by Google

the future. This was a most revolting piece of irony, considering the situation in which the Emperor was placed, and the tenor of M. de Montholon's letter.

After dinner the Emperor retired to the drawing-room, and desired us all to seat ourselves round the table, to form, as he said, an academic sitting. He began to dictate to us on some subjects; but when the parts that had been written were read over to him, he resolved to cancel them. Conversation was then resumed, and was kept up for a considerable time, partly in a serious, and partly in a lively strain. It was near one o'clock when the Emperor retired. For some time past we have sat up later than we used to do. This is a good sign: the Emperor feels better, and he is more cheerful and talkative than he lately was.

Historical Doubts.—The Regency of the Duke of Orleans.—Madame de Maintenon.—Her marriage with Louis XIV.

31.—The Emperor rose very early, and took a turn round the park alone. On his return, not wishing to have any one disturbed, he desired my son, who had risen, to sit down under the tent, and write to his dictation: in this manner he employed himself for two hours. We all breakfasted with him.

We took an airing in the calash. The conversation turned on the doubts that were attached

Digitized by Google

to various points of history. The Emperor made some very curious remarks on this subject, and concluded by alluding to the period of the Regency. "If," said he, "Louis XV. had died in "his childhood, and nothing was more possible, "who would have doubted but that the Duke of "Orleans had poisoned the whole royal family? "Who would have ventured to defend him? Had "not one child survived, that prince could not "have had justice rendered to him." The Emperor then alluded to the character of the Duke of Orleans, and particularly to his errors in the affair of the legitimated princes. "There he degraded "himself," said Napoleon; "not to say, how-"ever, that their cause was good. Louis XIV. "usurped a right in nominating them to the suc-"cession. On the extinction of the Royal House, "the choice of a sovereign is unquestionably the "prerogative of the nation. The act of Louis XIV. "was, doubtless, an error into which that monarch "was betrayed by his own greatness. He con-"ceived, that every thing emanating from him "must necessarily be great. Yet he seemed "to entertain a suspicion that the world might "not be exactly of his opinion; for he took pre-"cautions to consolidate his work by giving his "natural children in marriage to the legitimate "princes and princesses of the royal family. "As to the regency, it is very certain that it de-"volved by right on the Duke of Orleans. Louis

Digitized by Google

" XIV.'s will was a piece of downright absurdity: " it was a violation of our fundamental laws. " France was a monarchy, and he gave us a " republic for a regency."

The Emperor then mentioned Madame de Maintenon, whose career, he said, was most extraordinary. She was, he observed, the Bianca Capello* of her age; but less romantic, and not quite so amusing. Pursuing his historical doubts, he said a great deal on the subject of Madame de Maintenon's marriage with Louis XIV. He declared that he was sometimes inclined to regard the circumstance as very problematical, in spite of all that was said about it in the memoirs of the time.

" The fact is," observed he, " that there does " not, and never did, exist any official and au- " thentic proof of the marriage. What could be " Louis XIV.'s object in keeping the measure so " strictly secret, both from his contemporaries " and posterity? and how happened it that the

* A noble Venetian lady of great beauty, whose adventures form a truly romantic and dramatic history. She eloped from her father's house to follow a young Florentine pedlar, and was reduced to the greatest wretchedness. She subsequently became Grand Duchess of Tuscany, and she closed her career by coolly poisoning herself at table, in a fit of vexation at seeing the Grand Duke, her husband, partake of a poisoned dish, which she had prepared for her brother-in-law, Cardinal de Medicis, who, on his part, obstinately abstained from tasting it.

Digitized by Google

" Noailles family, to whom Madame de Main-
" tenon was related, suffered nothing to tran-
" spire on the subject? This was the more sin-
" gular, considering that Madame de Maintenon
" survived Louis XIV."

The Emperor, feeling somewhat fatigued this evening, retired to rest early. He seemed indisposed and low-spirited.

The French Ministers, &c. — Anecdote of M. Daru. — Faded finery at Saint-Helena.

Sunday, September 1st.—The Emperor went out about three o'clock: he said he had felt feeble, languid, and dull throughout the whole of the day. We all felt indisposed in the same way: it was the effect of the weather. We strolled out to the great path of the wood, while the calash was preparing; but we had no sooner reached the extremity of the path, than a shower of rain came on. It was so heavy that the Emperor was obliged to take refuge at the foot of a gum-tree, the scanty foliage of which, however, afforded but little shelter. The calash soon arrived to take us up; and we were returning home with all speed, when we perceived the Governor at some distance, making towards us. The Emperor immediately ordered the coachman to turn, observing, that of two evils he would choose the least; and we took a circuitous route homewards, in spite of the

Digitized by Google

wind and rain. We, however, escaped Sir Hudson Lowe: that was an advantage.

Before dinner, the Emperor, in his chamber, took a review of the individuals who had been attached to his household, the council of state, and the different ministerial departments. Alluding to M. Daru, he observed, that he was a man distinguished for probity, and for his indefatigable application to business. At the retreat from Moscow, M. Daru's firmness and presence of mind were remarkable, and the Emperor often afterwards said, that he laboured like an ox, while he displayed the courage of a lion.

Business seemed to be M. Daru's element; he was incessantly occupied. Soon after he was appointed Secretary of State, one of his friends was expressing a fear that the immense business in which he would thenceforth be absorbed might prove too much for him; "On the contrary," replied Daru, "I assure you that since I have "entered upon my new functions, I seem to have "absolutely nothing to do." On one occasion only was his vigour ever known to relax. The Emperor called him up, after midnight, to write to his dictation: M. Daru was so completely overcome by fatigue, that he scarcely knew what he was writing; at length he could hold out no longer, and he fell asleep over his paper. After enjoying a sound nap, he awoke, and, to his astonishment, perceived the Emperor by his

Digitized by Google

side quietly engaged in writing. The shortness of the candles informed him that his slumber had been of tolerable duration. While he sat for a few moments overwhelmed with confusion, his eyes met those of the Emperor, who said to him: "Well, Sir, you see I have been doing your "work, since you would not do it yourself. I "suppose you have eaten a hearty supper, and "passed a pleasant evening; but business must "not be neglected."—"I pass a pleasant even-"ing, Sire!" said M. Daru. "I have been for "several nights without sleep, and closely en-"gaged. Of this your Majesty now sees the "consequence, and I am exceedingly sorry for "it."—"Why did you not inform me of this?" said the Emperor, "I do not want to kill you. Go to "bed. Good night, M. Daru." This was certainly a characteristic trait, and one that was well calculated to remove the false notions which were generally entertained respecting Napoleon's harshness of temper. But I know not by what fatality facts of this kind were concealed from our knowledge, while any absurd inventions unfavourable to the Emperor, were so actively circulated. Was it because the courtiers reserved their flattery for the interior of the palace, and sought to create a sort of counterpoise, by assuming elsewhere an air of opposition and independence? Be this as it may, had any individual related traits of the

Digitized by Google

above kind in the saloons of Paris, he would probably have been told that he had invented them, or would have been looked upon as a fool for giving credit to them.

The Grand Marshal and his lady came to dine at Longwood, which they were accustomed to do every Sunday.

During dinner the Emperor jokingly alluded to the faded finery of the ladies. He said, their dresses would soon resemble the gay trappings of those old misers who purchase their wardrobes from the dealers in second-hand clothes; they no longer displayed the freshness and elegance that characterized the millinery of Leroi, Despeaux, Herbault, &c. The ladies craved indulgence for Saint-Helena; and their husbands reminded the Emperor of his fastidiousness with regard to female dress at the Tuileries, which, it was remarked, had proved the ruin of some families. At this the Emperor laughed, and said that the idea of his scrupulous taste in dress was a mere invention of the ladies of the Court, who made it a pretence, or an excuse, for their extravagance. The conversation then turned on our splendour at Saint-Helena. The Emperor said that he had told Marchand he would wear every day the hunting-coat which he then had on, until it should be past the possibility of being worn any longer: it was already very far gone.

Digitized by Google

Both before and after dinner the Emperor played a few games at chess: he felt low-spirited and nervous, and retired to bed early.

The Campaign of Saxony in 1813.—Reflections.—Analysis.—Battles of Lutzen and Wurchen.—Negotiations.—Battles of Dresden, Leipsick, Hanau, &c.

2.—To-day there was some horse-racing at the camp, at which one of the Emperor's suite was present.

The Emperor did not go out until late, and he walked to the calash. The wind blew very hard, and he renounced his intention of taking a drive. He sat down beneath the tent; but finding it not very pleasant without doors, he retired to his library, where he took up the Letters of Madame de Chateauroux, looked through the Expedition to Bohemia, and analysed the Life of Marshal de Belle-Isle. He again went out to take a walk in the garden; but he returned almost immediately, and directed me to follow him.

He took up a book relating to our last campaigns, and after perusing it for some time, he threw it down, saying, "It is a downright rhapsody—a mere tissue of contradictions and absurdities." He conversed for a considerable time on the too celebrated campaign of Saxony: his observations were principally moral, and few or none military; I noted down the following as the most remarkable:—"That memorable cam-

Digitized by Google

" paign," said he, " will be regarded as the " triumph of courage in the youth of France; of " intrigue and cunning in English diplomacy; of " intelligence on the part of the Russians; and " of effrontery in the Austrian Cabinet. It will " mark the period of the disorganization of poli- " tical societies—the great separation of subjects " from their sovereigns: finally, the decay of the " first military virtues; viz. fidelity, loyalty, and " honour. It will be in vain to write and com- " ment, to invent falsehoods and suppositions; " we must always arrive at this odious and mor- " tifying result: time will develope both its truth " and its consequences.

" But it is a remarkable circumstance, in this " case, that all discredit is equally removed from " sovereigns, soldiers, and people. It was en- " tirely the work of a few military intriguers " and headlong politicians, who, under the spe- " cious pretext of shaking off the foreign yoke " and recovering the national independence, pur- " posely sold their own rulers to envious rival " Cabinets. The results soon became manifest: " the King of Saxony forfeited half his posses- " sions, and the King of Bavaria was compelled " to make valuable restitutions. What did the " traitors care for that? They enjoyed their " rewards and their wealth, and those who had " proved themselves most upright and innocent, " were visited with the severest punishment.

Digitized by Google

"The King of Saxony, the most honest man who "ever wielded a sceptre, was stripped of half "his provinces; and the King of Denmark, so "faithful to all his engagements, was deprived "of his crown! This, however, was affirmed to "be the restoration and the triumph of mo- "rality! . . . . . Such is the distributive justice of "this world! . . .

"To the honour of human nature, and even to "the honour of Kings, I must once more declare "that never was more virtue manifested than "amidst the baseness which marked this period. "I never for a moment had cause to complain in- "dividually of the Princes our allies. The good "King of Saxony continued faithful to the last; "the King of Bavaria loyally avowed to me, that "he was no longer his own master; the generosity "of the King of Wurtemberg was particularly re- "markable; the Prince of Baden yielded only to "force, and at the very last extremity. All, I must "render them this justice, gave me due notice of "the storm that was gathering, in order that I "might adopt the necessary precautions. But, on "the other hand, how odious was the conduct "of subaltern agents! Can military parade ob- "literate the infamy of the Saxons, who return- "ed to our ranks for the purpose of destroying "us? Their treachery became proverbial among "the troops, who still use the term *Saxonner* to "designate a soldier who assassinates another.

Digitized by Google

" To crown all, it was a Frenchman, a man for " whom French blood purchased a crown, a " nurseling of France, who gave the finishing " stroke to our disasters!

" But in the situation in which I was placed, " the circumstance which served to fill up the " measure of my distress, was, that I beheld the " decisive hour gradually approach. The star " grew dim; I felt the reins slip from my hands, " and yet I could do nothing. Only a sudden " turn of fortune could save us: to treat for, or " to conclude any compact, would have been to " yield like a fool to the enemy. I was con- " vinced of this, and the event sufficiently proved " that I was not mistaken. We had, therefore, " no alternative but to fight; and every day by " some fatality or other our chances diminished. " Treason began to penetrate our ranks. Great " numbers of our troops sank under the effects of " fatigue and discouragement. My lieutenants " became disspirited, and consequently unfortu- " nate. They were no longer the same men, who " figured at the commencement of the Revolution, " or who had distinguished themselves in the " brilliant moments of my success. I have been " informed, that some presumed to allege in " their defence, that at first they fought for the Re- " public, and for their country; while afterwards " they fought only for a single man, for his indi- " vidual interests and his ambition.

Digitized by Google

"Base subterfuge!—Ask the young and brave "soldiers, and the officers of intermediate rank "in the French army, whether such a calcu- "lation ever entered their thoughts;—whether "they ever saw before them any thing but the "enemy, or behind them any thing, save the ho- "nour, glory, and triumph of France! These "men never fought better than at the period "alluded to. Why dissemble? Why not make "a candid avowal? The truth is, that, generally "speaking, the officers of high rank had gained "every object of their ambition. They were "sated with wealth and honours. They had "drunk of the cup of pleasure, and they hence- "forth wished for repose, which they would have "purchased at any price. The sacred flame was "extinguished; they were willing to sink to the "level of Louis XV.'s marshals."

If the words above quoted require any comment; if the sense here, or in other similar passages of my journal, should be found to be incomplete, I must not be held responsible. I have literally noted down what Napoleon uttered, and I am accountable for nothing more. I have already several times mentioned that when the Emperor spoke, I never ventured to interrupt him by questions or remarks. On the subject of the celebrated campaign of 1813, I may mention, that, from various detached conversations of Napoleon, which I have not noted down at the

Digitized by Google

time when they occurred, he was far from being deceived as to the crisis which threatened France, and he correctly estimated the full extent of the risk by which he was surrounded in the opening of the campaign. On his return from Moscow, he saw the danger, and endeavoured to avert it. From that moment he resolved on making the greatest sacrifices; but the choice of the proper moment for proclaiming these sacrifices was the difficult point, and that which chiefly occupied his consideration. If the influence of material power be great, he said, the power of opinion is still greater; it is magical in its effects. His object was to preserve it; and a false step, a word inadvertently uttered, might for ever have destroyed the illusion. He found it indispensable to exert the greatest circumspection, and to manifest the utmost apparent confidence in his own strength. It was, above all, necessary to look forward to the future.

His great fault, his fundamental error, was in supposing that his adversaries always had as much judgment and knowledge of their own interests as he himself possessed. From the first, he said, he suspected that Austria would avail herself of the difficulties in which he was placed, in order to secure great advantages to herself; but he never could have believed that the monarch was so blind, or his advisers so treacherous, as to wish to bring about his (Napoleon's) downfall,

Digitized by Google

and thereby leave their own country henceforth at the mercy of the uncontrolled power of Russia. The Emperor pursued the same train of reasoning with regard to the Confederation of the Rhine, which, he admitted, might, perhaps, have cause to be dissatisfied with him; but which, he concluded, must still more dread the idea of falling into the power of Austria and Prussia. Napoleon conceived that the same arguments were not inapplicable even to Prussia; which, he presumed, could not wish entirely to destroy a counterpoise that was necessary to her independence and her very existence. Napoleon made full allowance for the hatred of his enemies, and for the dissatisfaction and malevolence which, perhaps, existed among his allies; but he could not suppose that either wished for his destruction, since he felt himself to be so necessary to all; and he acted accordingly.

Such was Napoleon's ruling idea throughout the whole of this important period. It was the key of his whole conduct to the very last hour, and even to the moment of his fall. It must be carefully borne in mind, for it serves to explain many things, perhaps all—his hostile attitude, his haughty language, his refusal to conclude arrangements, his determination to continue the contest, &c.

If he should be successful, he thought he could then make honourable sacrifices, and a glorious

Digitized by Google

peace; while the illusion of his superiority would remain undiminished. If, on the contrary, he should experience reverses, it would still be time enough to make concessions; and he concluded that the interest of the Austrians, and all true Germans, must secure to him the support of their arms, or their diplomacy; for he supposed they were convinced, as he himself was, that his power had henceforth become indispensable to the structure, repose, security, and existence of Europe. But that of which he entertained doubts proved most prosperous: victory continued faithful to him; his first successes were admirable, and almost incredible. On the other hand, that which he believed to be infallible was precisely that which failed:—his natural allies betrayed him, and hastened his downfall.

In support of what I have just alleged, and with the view of throwing light on the Emperor's remarks above quoted, I shall here insert a brief recapitulation of the events of that fatal campaign. In France, at the time, we were made acquainted only with its results; the bulletins gave us but little information, and we received no foreign publications. Besides, the period is now distant, and so many important events have since occurred to occupy public attention, that these details may be partly forgotten by those who once knew them. They are here arranged in chronological order.

Digitized by Google

I extract this recapitulation from a work written by M. de Montveran, which was published in 1820. The author has bestowed great care on the collection of official and authentic documents; and he has availed himself of the information furnished by preceding writers. I am therefore of opinion that this work is unquestionably the best that has been written on the subject. M. de Montveran is far from being favourable to Napoleon; however, it is but just to admit, that he maintains a tone of impartiality which does credit to his character, while, at the same time, it enhances the merit of his work.

EVENTS.—" On the 2d of May, Napoleon opened the campaign of Saxony by the victory of Lutzen, a most surprising event, and one which reflects immortal honour on the conquerors. A newly embodied army, without cavalry, marched to face the veteran bands of Russia and Prussia; but the genius of the Chief, and the valour of the young troops whom he commanded, made amends for all. The French had no cavalry; but bodies of infantry advanced in squares, flanked by an immense mass of artillery, presenting the appearance of so many moving fortresses. Eighty-four thousand infantry, consisting of French troops, or troops of the Confederation, with only 4000 cavalry, beat 107,000 Russians or Prussians, with more than 20,000 cavalry. Alexander and the

Digitized by Google

King of Prussia witnessed the conflict in person. Their celebrated guards could not maintain their ground against our young conscripts. The enemy lost 18,000 men; our loss amounted to 12,000, and our want of cavalry prevented us from reaping the usual fruit of our conquests. However, the moral result of the victory was immense. The enthusiasm of our troops resumed its ascendancy, and the Emperor recovered the full influence of opinion. The Allies retreated before him without venturing the chances of another battle *.

"On the 9th, Napoleon entered Dresden as a conqueror, conducting back to his capital the King of Saxony, who, from the consciousness of his own interests, as well as the wish to remain faithful to his engagements, had retired on the approach of the Allies, whose proposals he had constantly rejected.

"On the 21st and 22d, Napoleon again tri-

* At the victory of Lutzen the Emperor sustained a severe loss by the death of the brave and loyal Marshal Bessières, Duke of Istria, who was so sincerely devoted to Napoleon. The King of Saxony raised a monument to his memory on the very spot where he received his death-blow. By a singular approximation of glory, the monument is similar to that of Gustavus Adolphus, and is erected not far distant from it. It consists of a simple stone surrounded by poplars. This is not the only instance in which foreigners have rendered that homage to the memory of brave Frenchmen, which their own countrymen have neglected.

Digitized by Google

umphed at Wurchen and Bautzen. The Allies had chosen their ground, which the brilliant campaigns of Frederick had rendered classic. They had intrenched themselves, and they thought their position impregnable: but every thing yielded to the grand views and well-conducted plans of the French general, who, at the very commencement of the conflict, declared himself to be certain of the victory.

"The Allies lost 18,000 or 20,000 men. They were unable to retain their position, and they retired in disorder. The Emperor pursued them. He had already passed through Lusatia, crossed Silesia, and had reached the Oder, when the Allies demanded an armistice to treat for peace; and Napoleon, thinking the favourable moment had arrived, granted it.

"On the 4th of June, the armistice of Pleissvitz was entered into. This event had the most decisive influence in producing our misfortunes; it was the fatal knot to which were attached all the chances and destinies of the campaign.

"Should the Emperor have granted this armistice, or have followed up his advantages? This was, at the moment, a problem which time, and the events that have proved so fatal to us, solved when too late. The Emperor, crowned with victory, halted before his fallen enemies, to whom he could now make concessions without compromising his dignity; his sacrifices could be

Digitized by Google

regarded only as moderation. Austria, hitherto uncertain as to what course she should pursue, struck with our success, rejoined us. Napoleon now reasonably hoped to see the ratification of a peace which he wished for, and he would not let slip so favourable an opportunity, to incur the risk of a check that might have lost all, and which was the more likely to take place since his army had marched forward in haste and in the utmost disorder, and his rear was uncovered and crossed by the enemy. He conceived that the armistice, at all events, afforded him an opportunity of concentrating and organizing his forces, and opening his communications with France, by which means he would be enabled to receive immense reinforcements, and to create a corps of cavalry."

Unfortunately, in spite of all the Emperor's calculations, this fatal armistice proved advantageous only to our enemies: it was maintained for nearly three months, and it served only to bring about their triumph and our destruction. Austria, who was still our ally, by a deception, which history will justly characterize, availed herself of that title to oppose us with the greater advantage. Requiring delay, she obtained it. The Russians, who were waiting for reinforcements, received them; the Prussians doubled their numbers; the English subsidies arrived, and the Swedish army rejoined. Secret associations were put in full activity; a general in-

Digitized by Google

surrection of the whole German population was excited; while, at the same time, the defection of the Cabinets of the Rhenish Confederation, and the corruption of the Allied officers, were successfully effected. Treason also began to creep into the superior ranks. General Jomini, the Chief of the Staff of one of our army corps, went over to the enemy with all the information he had been able to collect respecting the plans of the campaign, &c.

The result sufficiently proved to the Emperor all the errors of the armistice, and convinced him that he would have done better had he obstinately pressed forward; for had he continued successful, the Allies, alarmed at finding themselves deprived of the aid of Austria, with whom they could no longer have maintained intelligence, cut off from the Prince of Sweden, who would have remained behind, seeing the fortresses of the Oder unblockaded, and the war carried back to Poland, to the gates of Dantzick, amidst a people ready to rise in a mass—the Allies, I say, would infallibly have concluded a treaty. If, on the other hand, we had sustained a reverse, the consequences could not have been more fatal than those which were actually experienced. The wise calculations of the Emperor ruined him: that which he might have regarded as inconsiderateness and temerity would probably have saved him.

Digitized by Google

Congress of Prague on the 29th of July.—"After two months of difficulties and obstacles, the Congress opened under the mediation of Austria; if, indeed, the term Congress can be properly applied to an assembly in which no deliberations took place, and of which one party had determined beforehand that none should be held.

"The mediator and the adversaries were equally our enemies: all concurred in their hostility to us, and they had already decided on the war. Why then did they wait? Because Austria still possessed a shade of modesty, and she wished, in the debates, to gain a pretence for declaring war against us. Prussia and Russia, on their part, thought it necessary to preserve their credit in Europe by this false manifestation of their desire and their efforts to preserve peace. All were merely affixing the seal to their Machiavellic system.

"To them the real Congress was not the assembly at Prague; it had already taken place two months before. Time has since thrown into our hands the authentic records of the intrigues, machinations, and even treaties, in which they were engaged during that interval. It is now evident that the armistice was resorted to by pretended friends and avowed enemies, only for the sake of artfully cementing the union that was to effect the overthrow of Napoleon, and

Digitized by Google

creating the triumvirate which was destined to oppress Europe while it pretended to deliver her.

"Austria had, from interested motives, long delayed the opening of the Congress of Prague. Resolved to repair her losses at any price, she did not hesitate to sacrifice her honour, the better to ensure her success. She masked her perfidy under the disguise of friendship. Declaring herself our ally, and eagerly complimenting us on every new triumph, she insisted, with an air of the warmest interest, on being our mediatress, when she had already entered into an agreement to make common cause with our enemies. Her propositions were accepted. But she wished to gain time for her preparations; and thus every day fresh obstacles were started, while the utmost tardiness was evinced in settling them.

"Austria at first offered her services as a mediatress, but, changing her tone in proportion as her warlike preparations advanced, she soon signified her wish to become an arbitress, at the same time intimating that she expected great advantages in return for the services she might render. At length, after an armistice of two months, when Austria thought herself perfectly prepared, and when every thing was agreed upon among the coalesced powers, they opened the Congress, not to treat of peace, and to establish amicable relations, but to develope their real sentiments, and to insult us unreservedly. The Russians,

Digitized by Google

in particular, behaved with unusual ill grace. They were no longer the Russians who anxiously solicited an armistice after the routs of Lutzen, Wurchen, and Bautzen. They now looked upon themselves as the dictators of Europe, which, indeed, they have since really become, by the spirit of their diplomacy, the blindness of their allies, their geographical situation, and finally by the force of things. But whom did Alexander select as his minister to this Congress? Precisely one who, by personal circumstances, was, according to the laws of France, unqualified for such a post;—one who was by birth a Frenchman. Certainly it would have been difficult to offer a more personal and direct insult. Napoleon felt it; but he concealed his resentment.

"Under such circumstances much could not be expected from the Congress: during the few days of its sitting, our enemies merely drew up a series of notes more or less acrimonious, while the conduct of Austria was marked by the most odious partiality.

"On the 10th of August, only two days after the first meeting of the negotiators, the Russians and Prussians haughtily withdrew; and on the 12th, Austria, that faithful ally, that obsequious and devoted friend, who had shewn herself so eager to become our mediatress and arbitress, suddenly laid aside those titles to declare war.

Digitized by Google

against us, allowing no interval save that required for the signature of the manifesto, which she had been for two months secretly concerting with her new allies, and which will ever be a record of her shame and degradation, since it acknowledges the sacrifice of an Archduchess, to the necessity of crouching before a detested ally. History will decide on these acts. However, to the honour of the throne and of morality, there is reason to believe that most of these transactions, and in particular the real course of affairs, was unknown to the Emperor Francis, who is reputed to be the most gentle, upright, moral, and pious of princes. It has been affirmed that many of these acts were determined on without his knowledge, and that others were represented to him under a totally false colouring. The whole of these disgraceful proceedings must be attributed to British gold, to the *finesse* of Russian diplomacy, and to the passions of the Austrian aristocracy, excited by the English faction which at that time ruled Europe.

"The Congress broke up with mutual feelings of irritation. The Emperor then expressed his sentiments in official and public documents, in the most forcible language, and in a tone of the highest superiority. But this he did with the view of creating a favourable impression on the public mind; for he remained so far master of

Digitized by Google

himself, that though hastening to take up arms, he nevertheless demanded a renewal of the negotiations, which were resumed at Prague. He deemed it advisable not to lose the advantages of constant communications: Austria would be easily detached if we obtained advantages, and she would be easily convinced if we sustained reverses. Such was the Congress of Prague.

"It will perhaps be asked whether Napoleon was duped by this Congress, and the circumstances arising out of it. The answer is, that he was not, or at least not entirely. If he had not a knowledge of every fact, he was never for a moment mistaken as to the intentions and sentiments that were really entertained.

"Napoleon, from the moment of his first victory at Lutzen, had authentically proposed a general congress. This he conceived to be the only means of treating for universal peace, insuring the independence of France and the guarantee of the modern system. Every other mode of negotiation appeared to him merely a lure; and if he seemed to depart from this principle, in accepting the mediation of Austria, and agreeing to the conferences of Prague, it was because, in proportion as time advanced, affairs became more complicated. The defeat of Vittoria, the evacuation of Spain, and the

Digitized by Google

spirit of the French people, which was declining, had considerably diminished his prosperity. He could accurately guess the result of the negotiations: but he wished to gain time in his turn, and to await the course of events. He was not deceived as to the part which Austria would act; and without knowing precisely how far she would carry her deception, he could well discern, from her mysterious conduct and delays, what was likely to be her determination. At Dresden he had even had personal conversations with the first negotiator of the Austrian government, who had sufficiently indicated the line of conduct he intended to pursue. The Emperor having remarked that he had after all eight hundred thousand men to oppose the enemy, the negotiator eagerly added, 'Your Majesty may say twelve hundred thousand; for you may, if you please, join our force to your own.' But what was to be the price of this advantage? Nothing less than the restitution of Illyria, the cessions of the Duchy of Warsaw, the frontiers of the Inn, &c. 'And after all,' said the Emperor, 'what should I have gained by this? 'Had we made all these concessions, should we 'not have been humbling ourselves for nothing, 'and furnishing Austria with the means of making 'farther demands, and afterwards opposing us 'with greater advantage?' He never relin-

Digitized by Google

quished the idea that the true interests of Austria being closely connected with our danger, we should be more certain of regaining her by our misfortunes, than of securing her by our concessions. Napoleon was therefore deaf to every demand; but he had so little doubt of the engagements which Austria had already entered into with our enemies, that he is described as having said, half good-humouredly and half indignantly, to the Austrian negotiator: 'Come 'now, confess: tell me how much they have 'paid you for this.'"

How severely did Napoleon suffer on this occasion! What trials of patience did he not undergo! And yet he was accused at the time of not wishing for peace! "How was I per-"plexed," said he, "when conversing on this "subject, to find myself the only one to judge "of the extent of our danger and to adopt means "to avert it. I was harassed on the one hand by "the coalesced powers, who threatened our very "existence, and on the other by the spirit of my "own subjects, who in their blindness, seemed "to make common cause with them; by our "enemies, who were labouring for my destruc-"tion, and by the importunities of my people "and even my ministers, who urged me to throw "myself on the mercy of foreigners. And I was "obliged to maintain a good appearance in this "embarrassing situation: to reply haughtily to

Digitized by Google

"some, and sharply to rebuff others who created "difficulties in my rear, encouraged the mistaken "course of public opinion, instead of seeking "to give it a proper direction, and suffered me "to be tormented by demands for peace, when "they ought to have proved that the only "means of obtaining it was to urge me ostensibly "to war.

"However, my determination was fixed. I "awaited the result of events, firmly resolved to "enter into no concessions or treaties, which "could present only a temporary reparation, "and would inevitably have been attended by "fatal consequences. Any middle course must "have been dangerous; there was no safety ex- "cept in victory, which would have preserved "my power, or in some catastrophe, which "would have brought back my allies."

I beg to call the reader's attention to this last idea, which I have already noticed on a former occasion. It will perhaps be thought I attach great importance to it; but this is because I feel the necessity of rendering it intelligible. Though I now enter into it completely, yet it was long before I understood it, and it appeared to me paradoxical and subtle.

"In what a situation was I placed!" continued the Emperor. "I saw that France, her "destinies, her principles, depended on me "alone!"—"Sire!" I ventured to observe,

Digitized by Google

"this was the opinion generally entertained; "and yet some parties reproached you for it, "exclaiming with bitterness, Why would he "connect every thing with himself personally?" —"That was a vulgar accusation," resumed the Emperor warmly. "My situation was not one "of my own choosing, nor did it arise out of "any fault of mine; it was produced entirely "by the nature and force of circumstances—by "the conflict of two opposite orders of things. "Would the individuals who held this language, "if indeed they were sincere, have preferred to "go back to the period preceding Brumaire, "when our internal dissolution was complete, "foreign invasion certain, and the destruction of "France inevitable? From the moment when "we decided on the concentration of power, "which could alone save us; when we deter- "mined on the unity of doctrines and resources "which rendered us a mighty nation, the des- "tinies of France depended solely on the cha- "racter, the measures, and the principles of him "who had been invested with this accidental "dictatorship: from that moment the public "interest, *the State, was myself.* These words, "which I addressed to men who were capable "of understanding them, were strongly censured "by the narrow-minded and ill-disposed; but "the enemy felt the full force of them, and "therefore his first object was to effect my over-

Digitized by Google

" throw. The same outcry was raised against " other words which I uttered in the sincerity of " my heart: when I said that *France stood more* " *in need of me than I stood in need of her*, this " solid truth was declared to be merely excess of " vanity. But, my dear Las Cases, you now see " that I can relinquish every thing; and as to " what I endure here, my suffering cannot be " long. My life is limited; but the existence of " France . . . . !" Then, resuming his former idea, he said: " The circumstances in which we " were placed were extraordinary and totally " new; it would be vain to seek for any parallel " to them. I was myself the key-stone of an " edifice totally new, and raised on a slight foun- " dation! Its stability depended on each of my " battles! Had I been conquered at Marengo, " France would have encountered all the disas- " ters of 1814 and 1815, without those prodigies " of glory which succeeded, and which will be " immortal. It was the same at Austerlitz and " Jena, and again at Eylau and elsewhere. The " vulgar failed not to blame my ambition as the " cause of all these wars. But they were not " of my choosing; they were produced by the " nature and force of events; they arose out of " that conflict between the past and the future— " that constant and permanent coalition of our " enemies, which obliged us to subdue under " pain of being subdued."

Digitized by Google

But to return to the negotiations of 1813. On a reference to the documents and manifestos published at the time by the two parties, whether because we can now peruse them with more impartiality, or because our eyes have been opened by the conduct of those who triumphed, it is impossible to avoid feeling astonished at the twofold error which led the Germans to rise so furiously against him from whose yoke they pretended to free themselves, and in favour of those whom they might believe to be their regenerators!

Renewal of hostilities—Battle of Dresden—26th and 27th of August.—"The hostile powers again presented themselves on the field of battle. The French, with a force of 300,000, of which 40,000 were cavalry, occupied the heart of Saxony, on the left bank of the Elbe; and the Allies, with 500,000 men, of whom 100,000 were cavalry, threatened them in three different directions, from Berlin, Silesia, and Bohemia, on Dresden. This prodigious disproportion of numbers had no effect on Napoleon; he concentrated his forces, and boldly assumed the offensive. Having fortified the line of the Elbe, which had now become his *point d'appui*, and, protecting his extreme right by the mountains of Bohemia, he directed one of his masses on Berlin against Bernadotte, who commanded an army of Prussians and Swedes, while another marched upon Silesia, against Blucher, who commanded a corps composed of

Digitized by Google

Prussians and Russians, and a third was stationed at Dresden, as the key of the position, to observe the great Austrian and Russian army in Bohemia. Finally, a fourth mass was placed as a reserve, at Zittau, with the threefold object:—1st, to penetrate into Bohemia, in case we should gain advantages over Blucher; 2d, to keep the great body of the allied force confined in Bohemia, through the fear of being attacked on their rear, should they attempt to debouch by the banks of the Elbe; 3d, to assist, if necessary, in assailing Blucher, or in the defence of Dresden; in case that city should be attacked.

"The Emperor, who had already made a rapid movement against Blucher, was keeping him in action before him, when he was suddenly called away for the defence of Dresden, where 65,000 French troops found themselves opposed to 180,000 of the allied forces. Prince Schwartzenberg, the General-in-chief, had on the 26th made a faint attack upon Dresden, instead of making a precipitate and decided assault; which, it was affirmed, was the intention of the deserter Jomini, who so well understood the real state of things. Napoleon came up with the rapidity of lightning; and he combined a force of 100,000 French troops to oppose the 180,000 allies. The affair was not for a moment doubtful; and to his sagacity and penetration the whole success must be attributed. The enemy was overwhelmed; he lost 40,000

Digitized by Google

men, and was for some time threatened with total destruction. The Emperor Alexander was present at the battle, and Moreau was killed by one of the first balls that were fired by our imperial guard, only a short time after he had spoken with the Russian Emperor.*

The happy chance, so anxiously looked for by Napoleon, which was expected to re-establish our affairs, to procure peace, and to save France, had at length arrived! Accordingly, on the ensuing day, Austria despatched an agent to the Emperor with amicable propositions. But such is the uncertainty of human destiny! From that moment, by an unexampled fatality, Napoleon had to encounter a chain of disasters. At every point, except that at which he was himself present, we sustained reverses. Our army in Silesia lost 25,000 men in opposing Blucher; the force which attacked Berlin was defeated by the Prince of Sweden with great loss; and finally, nearly the whole of Vandamme's corps, which, after the victory of Dresden, was sent into Bohemia with the view of assailing the enemy's rear, and accomplishing his destruction, being abandoned to itself, and the temerity of its chief, was cut to pieces

* The death of the celebrated Moreau, while fighting under the Russian banner, and opposed to a French army, was and will ever continue to be a source of affliction to his sincerest friends and warmest partizans.

Digitized by Google

by that part of the Allied army which was precipitately falling back. This fatal disaster and the safety of the Austrians, was occasioned by a sudden indisposition of Napoleon, who, for a moment, was supposed to have been poisoned. His presence no longer excited the ardour of the different corps in maintaining the pursuit; indecision and dejection ensued; Vandamme's force was destroyed, and all the fruit of the splendid victory of Dresden was lost!

After these repeated checks the spell was broken; the spirit of the French troops became depressed, while that of the Allies was the more highly excited. The hostile forces were now to be estimated only by their numerical value; and a catastrophe seemed to be at hand. Napoleon, in despair, exerted vain efforts; he hastened to every threatened point, and was immediately called away by some new disaster. Wherever he appeared, the Allies retreated before him; and they advanced again as soon as his back was turned. Meanwhile all the enemy's masses were constantly gaining ground; they had effected communications with each other, and they now formed a semicircle, which was gradually closing round the French, who were now driven back upon the Elbe, and threatened completely to surround them. On the other hand, our rear, which was uncovered, was assailed by detached parties. The kingdom of Westphalia was in open insur-

Digitized by Google

rection; our convoys were intercepted, and we could no longer maintain free communications with France.

It was in this state of things that the negotiators of Prague submitted to the Emperor the result of their new conferences. In addition to numerous restitutions required from Napoleon and his allies, two propositions were made: 1st, the surrender of all the influence and acquisitions of France in Italy; 2d, the resignation of the French influence and acquisitions in Germany. Napoleon was to take his choice of one of these two divisions of power; but the other was to be consigned to the allies, to be entirely at their disposal, without any interference on his part. Neither friends nor enemies entertained a doubt but that Napoleon would eagerly accept these proposals. "For," said those about him, "if you "choose Italy, you remain at the gates of Vienna, "and the Allies will soon dispute among themselves respecting the division of Germany. If, "on the contrary, you prefer the surrender of "Italy, you will thereby secure the friendship of "Austria, to whose share it will fall, and you will "remain in the heart of Germany. In either "case you will soon reappear in the character "of a mediator, or a ruler." Napoleon, however, was not of this opinion: he rejected the propositions, and persisted in following up his own ideas.

Digitized by Google

Certainly, said he, such proposals in themselves, and in the natural course of things, are most acceptable; but where is the guarantee of their sincerity? He saw plainly that the Allies were only endeavouring to lure him into the snare. They determined henceforth to abide neither by faith nor law. They did not conceive themselves bound by any law of nations, or any rule of integrity in their conduct towards us. In opposition to the suggestions of his counsellors, Napoleon said, "If I relinquish Germany, Austria "will but contend the more perseveringly until "she obtain Italy. If, on the other hand, I sur- "render Italy to her, she will, in order to se- "cure the possession of it, endeavour to expel "me from Germany. Thus, one concession "granted, will only serve as an inducement for "seeking or enforcing new ones. The first stone "of the edifice being removed, the downfall of "the whole will inevitably ensue. I shall be "urged on from one concession to another, until "I am driven back to the castle of the Tuileries, "whence the French people, enraged at my "weakness, and blaming me for their disasters, "will doubtless banish me, and perhaps justly. "though they may themselves immediately be- "come the prey of foreigners."

May not this be regarded as the literal prediction of the events which succeeded the insidious

Digitized by Google

declaration of Frankfort, the propositions of Chatillon, &c.?

"It would be a thousand times better to perish "in battle amidst the fury of the enemy's tri- "umph," continued the Emperor; "for even "defeats leave behind them the respect due to "adversity, when they are attended by magna- "nimous perseverance. I therefore prefer to "give battle; for if I should be conquered, we "still have with us the true political interests of "the majority of our enemies. But, if I should "be victorious, I may save all. I have still "chances in my favour—I am far from despair- "ing."

Intended movement on Berlin.—"In this state of things, the King of Bavaria, the chief of the Confederation of the Rhine, wrote to the Emperor, assuring him, confidentially, that he would continue his alliance for six weeks longer. "This was long enough," said Napoleon, "to render it very probable that "he would no longer find it necessary to aban- "don us." He determined immediately to attempt a great movement, which he had long contemplated, and which plainly indicates the resources of his enterprising mind. Pressed upon the Elbe, the right bank of which was already lined by the great mass of the Allied force, and nearly turned on his rear, he conceived the bold

Digitized by Google

idea of changing positions with the enemy, place for place. He determined to penetrate the enemy's line, forming himself in his rear, and compelling him, in his turn, to transfer his whole force to the left bank of the river. If, in this situation, he abandoned his communications with France, he would have in his rear the enemy's territory, a tract of country not yet ravaged by war, and which was capable of maintaining his troops. He would recover the cities of Berlin, Brandenburgh, and Mecklenburgh, with their immense garrisons, the separation and the loss of which were to be accounted so great a fault after a reverse of fortune, and would have been regarded as resources of genius in case of triumph. Napoleon now looked forward to a new line of combinations, and a new prospect of future success: he beheld before him only the errors, the astonishment, and the stupor of his enemies, and the brilliancy of his own enterprise and his hopes.

Battles of Leipsic, (16th, 18th, and 19th Oct.) —"At first fortune seemed to smile on the Emperor. But soon a letter from the King of Wurtemberg informed him that the Bavarian army, seduced by the intrigues and the prevailing spirit of the moment, had joined the Austrians, against whom it was intended to be opposed; that it was marching on the Rhine to cut off the communication with France; and that the King

Digitized by Google

of Wurtemberg was himself under the necessity of yielding to circumstances. This unexpected event obliged Napoleon to suspend his preparations, and to fall back, in order to secure his retreat. This complication of false movements proved serviceable to the Allies, who pressed and surrounded us: a great battle seemed inevitable. Napoleon assembled his forces in the plains of Leipsic. His army consisted of 157,000 men, and six hundred pieces of artillery; but the Allies possessed 1000 pieces of artillery, and 350,000 men. During the first day the action was furiously maintained: the French remained triumphant, and the victory would have been decisive, if one of the corps stationed at Dresden had taken part in the battle, as the Emperor hoped it would. General Merfeld was made prisoner, but was liberated on parole, with the announcement that the Emperor was at length willing to accept the condition of the renunciation of Germany. But the Allies, who were encouraged by the arrival of an immense reinforcement, resumed the engagement on the following day; and they were now so numerous, that when their troops were exhausted, they were regularly relieved by fresh corps, as on the parade. The most ineonceivable fatality was now combined with inequality of numbers; treason broke out in our ranks; the Saxons, our allies, deserted us, went over to the enemy, and turned

Digitized by Google

their artillery against us. Still, however, the presence of mind, energy, and skill of the French general, together with the courage of our troops, made amends for all, and we again remained masters of the field.

"These two terrible engagements, which history may fairly record as giants' battles, cost the enemy 150,000 of his best troops, 50,000 of whom lay dead on the field of battle. Our loss amounted only to 50,000. Thus the difference of our forces was considerably diminished: and a third engagement presented itself, with changes much more favourable. But our ammunition was exhausted; our parks contained no more than 16,000 charges; we had fired 220,000 during the two preceding days. We were compelled to make arrangements for our retreat, which commenced during the night, on Leipsic. At day-break the Allies assailed us; they entered Leipsic along with us; and an engagement commenced in the streets of the city. Our rear-guard was defending itself valiantly and without sustaining great loss, when a fatal occurrence ruined all: the only bridge across the Elster, by which our retreat could be effected, was, by some accident or misunderstanding, blown up. Thus all our forces on the Leipsic bank of the river were lost, and all on the opposite bank marched in haste and disorder upon Mentz. At

Digitized by Google

Hanau we were compelled to force a passage through 50,000 Bavarian troops. Only the wrecks of our army returned to France; and, to render the misfortune complete, they brought contagion with them."

Such was the fatal campaign of Saxony, our last national effort, the tomb of our gigantic power, Opposed to the united efforts of all the forces of Europe, and in spite of all the chances that were accumulated against us, the genius of a single man had, in course of this campaign, been four times on the point of restoring our ascendancy, and cementing it by peace: after the victories of Lutzen and Bautzen, after the battle of Dresden, at the time of the last movement on Berlin, and finally on the plains of Leipsic.

Napoleon failed only by a complication of fatalities and perfidies, of which history furnishes no example. I here note down only those which occur to me on a retrospective view of the events of this period.

Fatalities.

(A.) Sudden indisposition of Napoleon.

(B.) Unexpected overflow of the Bober.

(C.) Confidential letter from the King of Bavaria.

(D.) Orders not transmitted to the corps at Dresden.

Digitized by Google

(E.) Deficiency of ammunition after the two battles of Leipsic.

(F.) Explosion of the bridge across the Elster.

Perfidies.

(G.) Machinations and bad faith of Austria, the first and true cause of our disasters.

(H.) Violation of the armistice of Pleisswitz, relative to our blockaded fortresses.

(I.) Desertion of the chief of the staff of the 3d corps.

(K.) Defection of the Bavarian government.

(L.) Treachery of the Saxons.

(M.) Violation of the capitulation of Dresden, &c.

The following are a few lines of explanation :—

(A.) After the victory of Dresden, some one complimented Napoleon on his great success. "Oh! this is nothing," observed he, while his countenance beamed with satisfaction; "Vandamme is on their rear, it is there that we must "look for the great result." The Emperor was proceeding in person to assist in accomplishing this decisive operation, when, unfortunately, after one of his meals he was seized with so violent a retching, that he was supposed to have been poisoned, and it was found necessary to convey him back to Dresden. Thus the operations were

Digitized by Google

interrupted. The fatal consequences that ensued are well known. How trivial was the cause, and how calamitous were the results!

(B.) A sudden overflow of the Bober in Silesia was the principal cause of the disasters of Marshal Macdonald. His corps, while in full operation, were overtaken by the flood, which impeded their operations, and caused the terrible losses which have been above described.

(C.) About the end of September the King of Bavaria addressed a confidential letter to Napoleon, stating that he would maintain his alliance with him for six weeks or two months longer; and that during that interval he would obstinately refuse every advantage that might be held out to him. The Emperor, who was placed in a most critical situation, and who, but for this circumstance, might perhaps, have lent an ear to the propositions that were made to him, now no longer hesitated, but immediately determined on the bold movement which he had contemplated on Berlin. He conceived that six weeks would be sufficient to change the state of affairs, and remove the fears of his allies. Unfortunately, military intrigues proved more powerful than the wishes of the King of Bavaria. Napoleon was forced to suspend his movement, and to give battle at Leipsic with disadvantage. The consequences have already been seen.

(D.) Napoleon, in making his arrangements for

Digitized by Google

the battles of Leipsic, had relied on a diversion of the army corps which he had left in Dresden. Their co-operation might have rendered the victory decisive, and have given a new turn to affairs. But, unfortunately, the enemy's force was so numerous, and we were so completely surrounded, that the Emperor's orders could not be transmitted to Dresden.

(F.) After the two terrible engagements at Leipsic, the French were effecting their retreat across the Elster by a single bridge. An officer who was stationed to guard it, was ordered to blow it up if the enemy should present himself in pursuit of our rear-guard. Unluckily this officer was by some mistake or other informed that the Emperor wanted him. He immediately obeyed the summons, and in his absence a corporal of sappers, at the first sight of some detached Russian corps, fired the train and blew up the bridge, thus dooming to perdition that portion of our force which still remained on the Leipsic bank of the river. The whole of our rear-guard and baggage, two hundred pieces of artillery, and thirty thousand prisoners, (stragglers, wounded and sick,) fell into the hands of the enemy.

On the publication of the bulletins containing this intelligence, a general outcry was raised by the discontented party in Paris. It was asserted that the whole was a fabrication, and that the Emperor himself had ordered the blowing up

Digitized by Google

of the bridge with the view of ensuring his own safety at the expense of the rest of the army. It was in vain to refer to the statement of the officer, who confirmed the fact while he attempted to justify himself. This was declared to be another fabrication or a piece of complaisance on the part of the officer. Such was the language of the time.*

(G.) The duplicity and bad faith of Austria, the numerous contradictions between her acts and her professions, have already been mentioned. Unmindful of the generosity of which she had been the object after the battles of Leoben, Austerlitz, and Wagram, she discharged her debt of gratitude according to the rules of policy, and by eagerly seizing the opportunity of repairing her losses at any price.

---

* When I visited London in 1814, public attention was occupied by the recent events of the Continent, and the battle of Leipsic was the general topic of conversation. It was related that, at the moment of the defeat, Napoleon's presence of mind completely forsook him. He wandered about the city, and lost his way in a private street. Though on horseback, faintness obliged him to support himself against a wall, and in this situation he inquired his way of an old woman, and asked her for a glass of water. The explosion of the bridge was not forgotten, and the story was related precisely as at Paris. These details, which were echoed in the drawing-rooms, and circulated about the streets, were credited among the higher ranks as well as by the vulgar. Prints, representing the different events of the battle, were exhibited in the shop-windows. The subject of one of

Digitized by Google

She ruined us by making us consent to the armistice of Pleisswitz; and her conduct was the more odious, as she was determined to make war against us; and a few days afterwards, though still our friend and ally, and offering herself as a mediator, she entered into engagements hostile to us. Her participation in the conventions of Rechembach about the middle of June, and in the conferences of Trachenberg, at the commencement of July, are now well known. The necessity of maintaining a certain appearance of decorum occasioned these matters to be kept secret for about a month after the commencement of hostilities. They were at first proposed to Francis merely as eventual and precautionary measures; and he was induced to affix his signature to them only by the representations of his ministers, who described Napoleon as the scourge of mankind, and attributed to him the delays in the opening of the Congress, which were in reality occasioned by themselves. (*Montveran*, vol. vi. p. 262.)

But in spite of the conduct of Austria, Napoleon still cherished the hope of seeing her resume her alliance with him; not that he could

---

these engravings was the above described incident in the street of Leipsic. Such a multitude of absurdities was circulated, that people of common sense had no resource but to shrug up their shoulders and patiently endure all that they heard.

Digitized by Google

calculate on any misunderstanding between her and the other coalesced powers, but because he supposed her to be sufficiently clear-sighted with respect to her own interests. This idea never forsook him until the moment of signing his abdication.*

(H.) The fortresses occupied by French troops in those places which were in the possession of the Allied forces, were to have a clear circuit of one league, and to receive supplies of provisions every five days; but this article was not honestly fulfilled.

When the armistice was prolonged, the French commissaries demanded that officers of their army should be sent to the commanders of the fortresses; but the Russian General-in-chief objected to this, and circumstances were such that we were obliged to give up the point. (*Montveran*, vol. vi. p. 270.)

---

* This supposition was not altogether ill-founded; for it still remains doubtful whether the consent of Austria to the dethronement of the Emperor, was constrained or voluntary. By one of those fatalities which attended the close of Napoleon's career, a momentary success separated the Austrians and the Russians, and the order for marching upon Paris, as well as the famous declaration proscribing Napoleon and his family, proceeded solely from Alexander. When Francis presented himself, he had no alternative but to give his assent to measures which were already determined on; but many circumstances induce the belief that he did so with great repugnance and dissatisfaction.

Digitized by Google

(I.) The chief of the staff of the 3d corps, a Swiss by birth, but educated in our ranks, went over to the enemy a few days before the renewal of hostilities, taking with him all the information he could collect. For this service the Emperor of Russia rewarded him with particular favour and made him one of his aides-de-camp. It has been said that this officer, who was possessed of great talent, had reason to complain of some injustice; but can any thing palliate such an act, or remove the disgrace attending it?

(K.) Part of Napoleon's plan of campaign was that the Bavarian army, stationed on the Danube, should act in concert with the army of Italy stationed in Illyria, and that their combined efforts should be directed upon Vienna. The important effect which these measures must have produced on the fate of the campaign may be easily conceived. But the chief of the Bavarian army, under some pretence or other, but in reality because he had entered into an understanding with the enemy, remained constantly inactive, and thus paralyzed the efforts of the Vice King, who had to oppose the great bulk of the Austrian force. It has already been stated that the open defection of the Bavarians at the most critical moment of the campaign, mainly contributed to bring about our disasters.

(L.) But nothing equalled the infamous and

Digitized by Google

disgraceful treachery of the Saxons, who, though they were then serving in our ranks and were our companions in danger and glory, suddenly turned to fight against us. Whatever might be the fatal effects of their desertion, the disgrace attached to themselves is greater than all the mischief they occasioned to us.

The conduct of Napoleon during this period, when he was described as a monster of deception and bad faith, presents, on the contrary, an example of singular magnanimity.

He had added a corps of Saxons to his Imperial guard; but, on the desertion of their countrymen, he ranged them round their sovereign, whom he left at Leipsic *, releasing him from all his engagements. There were also some Bavarians in his army, and he wrote to their chief, informing him that Bavaria having disloyally declared war against him, this circumstance would authorize him in disarming and detaining prisoners all the Bavarians in his service; but that such a measure would destroy the confidence which Napoleon wished that the troops under his orders

* The venerable and faithful King of Saxony followed his ally Napoleon, at whose head-quarters he established himself. The coalesced powers, on their entrance into Leipsic, seized the person of the King, and announced their design of disposing of his states. His misfortunes are known throughout Europe; they excited a deep interest in every generous heart.

Digitized by Google

should repose in him. He therefore ordered them to be supplied with provisions, and dismissed.*

(M.) I have before me the notes of a distinguished officer relative to the capitulation of Dresden. Estimating the number of troops which we had left behind us in the fortresses from which we were separated, he concludes that they must have amounted altogether to 177,000. The Emperor had but 157,000 men at Leipsic. How different, therefore, might have been our fate, had those masses, or even a portion of them, been at his disposal in this decisive event. But this unfortunate dispersion was occasioned by extraordinary circumstances, and was not the result of any regular system. The following particulars, relative to the violation of the capitulation of Dresden, are literally quoted from the notes above alluded to:—

"Above all, it is necessary to understand, that it was determined in the plan of the coalition against France, of which Prince Schwartzenberg had the credit, that according as offers were made for the capitulation of each of our numerous garrisons, the conditions should be fairly and honour-

* Amidst the general disloyalty, the conduct of the King of Wurtemberg presents an honourable exception. That prince, though already at war with us, broke his brigade of cavalry, and the corps of his infantry, who went over to the enemy, and at the same time withdrew the decoration of his Order from their officers.

Digitized by Google

ably granted, but without any intention of fulfilling them. This point being established, the reason of the refusal of the capitulation signed at Dresden by Marshal Saint-Cyr, and Generals Tolstoy and Klenau, was, that Prince Schwartzenberg could not ratify it, because the Count de Lobau, Napoleon's aide-de-camp, who was shut up in Dresden with the Marshal, had protested against the capitulation. Some time after, the capitulation of Dantzick, which was signed with General Rapp, was declined, under the odiously false pretence, that the garrison of Dresden, in spite of the conditions of its capitulation, had entered into service immediately on its arrival at Strasburg, and that, in consequence, the capitulation of Dantzick could not be approved without incurring the risk of similar inconveniences.

"The following is an additional proof of the bad faith of the Allies. The garrison of Dresden, which was composed of two army corps, forming altogether 45,000 men, capitulated on the 11th of November *.

* The determination to surrender had been far from unanimous in the garrison. Opinions were divided on this point. Some were for returning to France by means of a capitulation, which course was adopted; others were in favour of an enterprise of a much bolder nature. This was nothing less than to quit Dresden with the chosen troops of the garrison, to descend the Elbe by successively raising the blockades of Torgau, where there were 28,000 men; of Wittemberg, where there were 5000;

Digitized by Google

"According to the terms of the capitulation, the French were to evacuate the fortress in six columns and in six successive days, and were to repair to Strasburgh.

"This capitulation was fulfilled, so far at least as regarded our evacuation of the fortress and its occupation by the enemy; but our sixth column had scarcely made a day's march from the town when it was announced that the capitulation was

---

of Magdeburg, where there were 20,000, and to arrive at Hamburg where there were 32,000. The army thus assembled together, which would have amounted to 60 or 80,000 men, was to repair to France, forming a passage through the enemy's ranks, or compelling him to retrograde by manœuvring on his rear; while the levies in mass that might have advanced to assail our veteran bands would have been paralyzed. And even had this plan failed, the issue was not likely to be more fatal than the capitulation. This opinion was warmly advocated by the Count de Lobau, Generals Teste, Monton-Duvernet, and others. The design was grand, worthy of our glory, and quite in harmony with our past acts. It was the Emperor's intention to carry it into effect, and for this purpose he issued orders, which, however, did not reach the place of their destination. The despair occasioned by the thought of surrendering was such, that a portion of the troops urged the officer who was at the head of the opposing party to take the command upon himself. Respect for discipline at length prevailed over enthusiasm; but the officer above alluded to expressed himself in the most violent way in the council. It is said, that in his indignation he exclaimed to the General-in-chief:—"The Emperor will tell me, that, with the pistol in my hand, I ought to have taken the command upon myself."

Digitized by Google

declined and rejected by the General-in-chief, Prince Schwartzenberg, by an order of the 19th of November.

"When Marshal Saint-Cyr remonstrated against this conduct, it was proposed, by way of compensation for the injustice, that he should be permitted to re-enter Dresden with his troops, and be again placed in possession of all the means of defence which he had had before the capitulation: this was merely a piece of irony.

"In vain did the Marshal negotiate for the literal fulfilment of the articles agreed upon by Count Klenau, who had possessed full powers for so doing; the unfortunate garrison, broken up and dispersed, was under the necessity of repairing to the different cantonments that were assigned to it in Bohemia, instead of pursuing its march towards the Rhine.

"The Marshal, indignant at this flagrant breach of faith, despatched a superior officer to communicate the circumstance to Napoleon; but the Allies retarded his progress under various pretences, and he did not reach Paris until the 18th of December. Subsequent events had by this time rendered the evil past all remedy."

After the series of deceptions and perfidies which I have here disclosed, and which the Allies had established as a system, it is not surprising that Napoleon should have placed no reliance on the famous declaration of Frankfort, and that he

Digitized by Google

should have felt indignant at the blindness of our Legislative Body, the committee of which, either from evil designs or mistaken views, completed the ruin of affairs. Napoleon assured me that he was several times on the point of summoning the members of this committee before him, in order to consult with them confidentially and sincerely on the real state of things, and the imminent danger with which we were threatened. Sometimes he thought he should undoubtedly bring them back to a right sense of their duty; sometimes, on the contrary, he feared that obstinacy of opinion, or mischievous intention, might have involved the affair in controversy, which, considering the spirit of the moment, would have weakened our resources, and hastened our dissolution.

The Emperor frequently adverted to this critical point in the destinies of France; but I have hitherto refrained from entering upon the detail of a subject which presents nothing either agreeable or consolatory.

Benevolent actions performed by the Emperor.—His visit to Amsterdam.—Observations on the Dutch, &c.—The Massacres of the third of September.—Remarks on Revolutions in general.—Unhappy fate of Louis XVI.

3d. About three o'clock the Emperor sent for me to attend him in his chamber. He had just finished dressing; and as it was raining at the

Digitized by Google

time, he went into the drawing-room, where he communicated to me some very curious particulars, which, as may be supposed, concerned him, and in which I played a conspicuous part. . . . .

. . . . . .

Some time afterwards the Emperor took a turn on the lawn next his library; but, finding the wind very violent, he soon returned to the house and played at billiards, a thing which he very seldom thought of doing.

In the course of the day, the Emperor related, that as he was once travelling with the Empress, he stopped to breakfast in one of the islands of the Rhine. There was a small farm in the neighbourhood, and while he was at breakfast he sent for the peasant to whom it belonged, and desired him to ask boldly for whatever he thought would render him happy; and in order to inspire him with the greater confidence, the Emperor made him drink several glasses of wine. The peasant, who was more prudent and less circumscribed in his choice, than the man described in the story of the three wishes, without hesitation specified the object which he was ambitious to possess. The Emperor commanded the prefect of the district immediately to provide him with what he had made choice of, and the expense attending the gratification of his wish did not exceed 6 or 7000 francs.

Napoleon added, that on another occasion,

Digitized by Google

when he was sailing in a yacht in Holland, he entered into conversation with the steersman, and asked him how much his vessel was worth. "My vessel!" said the man, "it is not mine; I "should be too happy if it were, it would make "my fortune."—"Well, then," said the Emperor, "I make you a present of it;" a favour for which the man seemed not particularly grateful. His indifference was imputed to the phlegmatic temperament natural to his countrymen; but this was not the case. "What benefit has he con- "ferred on me?" said he to one of his comrades who was congratulating him; "he has spoken to "me, and that is all; he has given me what was "not his own to give—a fine present truly!" In the mean time Duroc had purchased the vessel of the owner, and the receipt was put into the hands of the steersman, who, no longer doubting the reality of his good fortune, indulged in the most extravagant demonstrations of joy. The expense of this purchase was about the same as that attending the present made to the countryman. "Thus," said the Emperor, "it is evident that hu- "man wishes are not so immoderate as they are "generally supposed, and that it is not so very "difficult to render people happy! These two "men undoubtedly enjoyed perfect happiness."

When the Emperor visited Amsterdam, the people, he said, were very hostile to him; but he soon completely ingratiated himself in the public

Digitized by Google

favour. He declined being attended by any other guard than the guard of honour belonging to the city; and this mark of confidence immediately gained him the esteem of the Dutch. He constantly appeared among every class of citizens. On one occasion he addressed a crowd of people in the following blunt manner:—"It is said that "you are discontented—but why? France has "not conquered, but adopted you: you are ex- "cluded from no benefits which are enjoyed by "the French; you are a portion of the same "family, and participate in all its advantages. "Consider now: I have selected my Prefects, "Chamberlains, and Counsellors of State from "amongst you in a just proportion to the amount "of your population, and I have augmented my "guard with your Dutch guard. You complain "of distress; but, in this respect, France has "still greater reason to be dissatisfied. We all "suffer, and we must continue to do so until the "common enemy, the tyrant of the sea, the "vampire of your trade, shall be brought to "reason. You complain of the sacrifices you "have made; but come to France and see all "that you still possess beyond what we do, and "then, perhaps, you will deem yourselves less "unfortunate. . . . . Why not "rather congratulate yourselves on the circum- "stances that have brought about your union "with France. In the present state of Europe,

Digitized by Google

"what would you be, if left to yourselves?—"The slaves of all the world. Instead of which, "identified as you are with France, you will one "day possess the whole trade of the great Em-"pire." Then assuming a tone of gaiety, he said:—"I have done every thing in my power to "please you. Have I not sent you as a Gover-"nor precisely the man who suits you—the good "and pacific Lebrun. You condole with him, "he condoles with you: you bewail your dis-"tresses together. What more could I do for "you?" At these words the assembly burst into a loud fit of laughter. The Emperor had secured the good graces of the multitude.—"However," said he, "let us hope that the "present state of things will not last long. "Believe me, I am as anxious for a change as "you can be. Every man of discernment among "you must be aware that it is neither my wish, "nor for my interest, that matters should remain "as they now are."

The Emperor left the people of Amsterdam full of enthusiasm for him; and he, on his part, carried away impressions decidedly in their favour. Previously to his journey he had often complained, that whosoever he sent to Holland, immediately became a Dutchman. After his return, that circumstance occurred to his recollection in the Council of State, and he said that he had himself become a Dutchman. One day, when

Digitized by Google

a member of the Council spoke slightingly of the Dutch, the Emperor said, "Gentlemen, you may "be more agreeable than they; but I can wish "you nothing better than to be possessed of their "moral qualities."

After dinner, on the 3d of September, some one happened to mention the date of the day; upon which the Emperor made some very remarkable observations; among which were the following:— "This," said he, "is the anniversary of horrid "and appalling executions, of a re-action, in mi- "niature, of Saint-Bartholomew's day: less dis- "graceful, certainly, because fewer victims were "sacrificed, and because the atrocities were not "committed under the sanction of the Govern- "ment, which, on the contrary, used its endea- "vours to punish the crime. It was committed "by the mob of Paris; an unbridled power, "which rivalled, and even controlled, the Legis- "lature.

"The atrocities of the 3d of September were "the result of fanaticism rather than of absolute "brutality: the authors of the massacres put to "death one of their own party, for having com- "mitted theft during the executions. This "dreadful event," continued the Emperor, "arose "out of the force of circumstances, and the spirit "of the moment. No political change ever "takes place unattended by popular fury; the "people are never exposed to danger, with-

Digitized by Google

" out committing disorders and sacrificing vic-
" tims. The Prussians entered the French terri-
" tory; and the people, before they advanced to
" meet them, resolved to take revenge on their
" adherents in Paris. Probably, this circum-
" stance was not without its influence on the
" safety of France. Who can doubt that if,
" during recent events, the friends of the invaders
" had been the victims of similar horrors, France
" would have fallen under the yoke of fo-
" reigners? But this could not have happened,
" for we had become legitimate. The duration
" of authority, our victories, our treaties, the re-
" establishment of our old manners, had rendered
" our government regular. We could not plunge
" into the same horrors, as had been committed
" by the mob: for my part, I neither could nor
" would become a King of the *Jacquerie*.

" No social revolution ever takes place unac-
" companied by violence. Every revolution of
" this kind is at first merely a revolt. Time and
" success alone can exalt and legitimatize it; but
" still it can never be brought about unattended
" by outrage. If people enjoying authority and
" fortune are required to relinquish these advan-
" tages, they of course resist: force is then re-
" sorted to; they are compelled to yield. In
" France this point was gained by the lanthern
" and public executions. The reign of terror
" commenced on the 4th of August, with the

Digitized by Google

" abolition of titles of nobility, tithes, and feudal " rights, the wrecks of which were scattered " among the multitude, who then, for the first " time, understood and felt really interested in " the Revolution. Before this period there was " so much of dependance and religious spirit " among the people, that many doubted whether " the harvest could be gathered in without the " King and the tithes.

" A revolution," concluded the Emperor, " is " one of the greatest evils by which mankind can " be visited. It is the scourge of the generation " by whom it is brought about; and all the ad- " vantages it procures cannot make amends for " the misery with which it embitters the lives of " those who participate in it. It enriches the " poor, who still remain dissatisfied; and it im- " poverishes the rich, who cannot forget their " downfall. It subverts every thing; and, at its " commencement, brings misery to all and hap- " piness to none.

" Beyond a doubt, true social happiness con- " sists in the harmony and the peaceful posses- " sion of the relative enjoyments of each class of " people. In regular and tranquil times, every " individual has his share of felicity: the cobler " in his stall is as content as the king on his " throne; the soldier is not less happy than the " general. The best-founded revolutions, at the " outset, bring universal destruction in their

Digitized by Google

" train; the advantages they may produce are " reserved for a future age. Ours seems to have " been an irresistible fatality: it was a moral " eruption, which could no more be prevented " than a physical eruption. When the chemical " combinations necessary to produce the latter " are complete, it bursts forth: in France the " moral combinations which produce a revolution " had arrived at maturity, and the explosion ac- " cordingly took place."

We asked the Emperor, whether he thought it would have been possible to suppress the Revolution in its birth; and he replied, that, if not impossible, the attempt would at least have been difficult. " Perhaps," said he, " the storm might " have been laid or averted by some great Ma- " chiavellian act; by striking with one hand the " great ringleaders, and with the other making " concessions to the nation, granting freely the " reformation required by the age, part of which " had already been mentioned in the famous royal " sitting. And yet, after all," he observed, " this " would only have been to guidé and direct the " Revolution." He thought that some other plan of the same kind might perhaps have succeeded on the 10th of August, if the King had remained triumphant. " These two periods," he said, " were the only ones which afforded any chance, " however desperate; for at the affair of Ver- " sailles the people had not yet entirely shaken

Digitized by Google

" off their allegiance, and on the 10th of August " they were already beginning to be tired of dis- " order. But the individuals who were chiefly " interested in quelling the revolutionary spirit " were not adequate to encounter the difficulties " of the moment."

The Emperor then took a rapid glance at the series of errors committed during this period. " The line of conduct then pursued," said he, " was truly pitiable. Louis XVI. should have " had a prime minister, and M. Necker in the " finance department. Prime ministers seem to " have been invented for the last reigns of the " French monarchy; and yet the prevailing false " notions and vanity of the time caused them to " be dispensed with."

A great deal was said respecting the equivocal conduct of several great personages during this critical period, and the Emperor said: "We con- " demn Louis XVI.; but, independently of his " weakness, he was placed in peculiar circum- " stances. He was the first monarch on whom " the experiment of modern principles was tried. " His education, his innate opinions, led him to " believe that all that he defended, either openly " or secretly, belonged to him of right. There " might be a sort of honesty even in his want of " faith, if I may be permitted to say so. At a " subsequent period, the same conduct would " have been inexcusable, and even reprehensible.

Digitized by Google

"Add to all this, that Louis XVI. had every one "against him, and one may form an idea of "the innumerable difficulties which fate had "accumulated on that unhappy prince. The "misfortunes of the Stuarts, which have excited "such deep interest, were not more severe."

The Body Guard of the King of France.—A Deserter in the Emperor's suite.

4th.—The Emperor sent for me after he had finished his breakfast. He was stretched on a sofa, with several books scattered about him. He wore his night-cap, and he looked pale. "Las-Cases," said he, "I am unwell. I have been looking "over a great many books, but I can find nothing "to interest me. I feel wearied." He fixed his eye on me; that eye, naturally so animated, was now dim, and its expression told me more than his tongue had uttered. "Sit down," said he, pointing to a chair that was beside him loaded with books, "and let us converse a little." He spoke of the Island of Elba, of the life he had led there, of some visits which he had received, &c. He then put some questions to me concerning Paris and the French court during the corresponding period. The conversation having led to the mention of the King's body-guard, some one present remarked, as a curious circumstance, that there was a deserter from the guard in Napoleon's

Digitized by Google

suite at Saint-Helena. "How? explain yourself," said the Emperor.—"Sire," continued the individual who had just spoken, "at the time of the "restoration, one of the captains of the guard, for "whom I entertained great friendship, and who, "in spite of the difference of our opinions, had "always evinced a high regard for me, proposed to "enter my son in his company, assuring me that "he would treat him as though he were his own. "I replied, that he was too young, and that the "appointment might retard the progress of his "education; but my friend silenced all my ob-"jections. I however requested some time to "consider of the matter; and on my mention-"ing it to some persons of my acquaintance, "they were astonished that I should have declined "so good an offer, and assured me that in a "short time my son might attain great advance-"ment, without any interruption of his educa-"tion. I then waited on the captain of the guard, "and acknowledged that I had not shewn my-"self sufficiently grateful for his offer; and he "replied that he was fully aware I had not "understood the extent of the advantage he "proposed to me. However, by one circum-"stance or another, your Majesty returned before "my son had the honour of being presented to "his colonel, and as I took him from his Lyceum "on our departure for Saint-Helena, he is clearly "and truly a deserter." The Emperor laughed

Digitized by Google

heartily and said: "This is another effect of re-
"volutions! What new interests, connexions,
"and opinions do they create! It is fortunate
"when they do not disunite families, and set the
"best friends at variance with each other." He
then began to question me concerning my family,
and concluded by saying, "I saw in Alphonse
"de Beauchamp's work, your name mentioned
"among the individuals, who, on the 30th of
"March, endeavoured to excite demonstra-
"tions in favour of the royal family in the
"Place Louis XV. I know it was not you; I
"think you once explained the matter to me,
"but I have forgotten the particulars."—"Sire,"
said I, "it was a cousin of mine, of the same
"name. The circumstance vexed me a good
"deal at the time; I inserted contradictions
"in the journals; and it was rather droll that
"my cousin, on his part, addressed letters to the
"public prints, desiring that he might be parti-
"cularly specified as the individual alluded to.
"I believe that the general way in which the
"name was introduced, in Alphonse de Beau-
"champ's work, was kindly meant on the part of
"the author, who wished, by this means, to af-
"ford me an opportunity of ingratiating my-
"self in the favour of the ruling party, if I had a
"mind to do so. I must do my cousin the justice
"to say, that when I obtained an appointment
"about your Majesty's person, I several times
"offered to solicit for him a post in your house-

Digitized by Google

"hold or elsewhere; but this he constantly de-
"clined. I wish he may now enjoy the reward of
"his fidelity." The Emperor again repeated that all private interests were subverted by revolutions. "And it is these private wounds," said he, "which occasion the general ferment, and "render the shocks so acute and violent."

The weather was so bad throughout the whole of the day, that it was impossible to go out. The Emperor dismissed me, and sent for General Gourgaud, to whom he dictated in his library, from two to six o'clock, almost the whole of Moreau's campaign during the Consulate. After dinner he read to us Madame de Maintenon's celebrated sumptuary letter to her brother, in which she fixes her household-expenditure at six francs a-year. The Emperor had several volumes of the *Grands Hommes* brought to him, and after perusing some articles, he amused himself by looking at the outline portraits that are at the end of each volume.

Napoleon's Reproofs, &c.—The Governor bargains for our Existence.

5th.—To-day, in the course of my morning conversation with the Emperor, I happened to mention some acts of oppression and injustice, which excited dissatisfaction in the public mind, and rendered him unpopular, because they were executed in his name, and were by many supposed to emanate from him. "But how?" said he, "was "there no one among the multitude that sur-

Digitized by Google

"rounded me, none of my chamberlains, who "had sufficient spirit and independence to com- "plain and bring these matters to my know- "ledge? I would have rendered justice where- "ever it had been withheld."—"Sire, few would "have ventured to call your attention to these "things."—"Did you really stand so much in "awe of me? I suppose you dreaded my sharp "rebuffs; but you ought to have known that I "always lent a ready ear to every one, and that "I never refused to administer justice. You "should have balanced the reward of the good "action, with the danger of the reprimand. After "all, I confess, that my reproofs were in most in- "stances the result of calculation. They were "frequently the only means I possessed of learn- "ing a man's temper, of discovering, by stealth, "the different shades of his character. I had little "time for inquiry; and a reprimand was one of "my experiments. For example, I lately gave "you a repulse, and this enabled me to discover "that you were somewhat headstrong, extremely "susceptible, sufficiently candid, but sullen; and, "I may say, too sensitive," he added, pinching my ear. "I was," continued he, "obliged to "surround myself, as it were, with a halo of "fear; otherwise, having risen as I did from "amidst the multitude, many would have made "free to eat out of my hand, or to pat me on the "shoulder. We are naturally inclined to fami- "liarity."

Digitized by Google

The weather continued very bad, and the Emperor spent the chief part of the day in writing, as he did yesterday.

The Governor has renewed his cavilling on the subject of our supplies, descending into petty details about a few bottles of wine, or a few pounds of meat. Instead of eight thousand pounds, the sum fixed by Government, he now applied for an allowance of twelve thousand, which he himself declared to be indispensable; but he insisted on having the surplus delivered into his own hands, or subjecting us to great retrenchments. He bargained for our existence. When this was mentioned to the Emperor, he replied, that the Governor might do as he pleased; but he desired, at all events, that he might not be troubled about the business.

In the evening the conversation again turned on Madame de Maintenon, and the Emperor made many remarks on her letters, her character, her influence on the affairs of her time, &c. He asked for the Historical Dictionary to read the articles on the Noailles family; and he retired to rest at eleven o'clock.

Confidential conversation.—The Letters of Madame de Maintenon and Sevigné.

6th.—The weather proved as bad as it had been on the preceding day. After finishing his toilette, the Emperor retired to his library, attended by

Digitized by Google

one of his suite, with whom he held a long confidential conversation on a topic intimately concerning us.

"We have now," said he, "been at Saint-"Helena more than a year, and with regard to "certain points we remain just as we were on "the first day of our arrival. I must confess "that I have hitherto come to no determination "in my own mind upon these subjects. This is "very unlike me; but how many mortifications "have I to encounter? A victim to the perse-"cutions of Fate and man, I am assailed on "every side, and at all hands. Even you, my "faithful friends and consolers, help to lacerate "the wound. I am vexed and distressed by "your jealousies and dissensions."—"Sire," replied the individual to whom he addressed himself, "these things should remain unnoticed by "your Majesty. In all that concerns you, our "jealousy is merely emulation; and all our dis-"sension ceases on the expression of your slight-"est wish. We live only for you, and will al-"ways be ready to obey you. To us you are "the *Old Man of the Mountain;* you may com-"mand us in all things, except crime."—"Well," said the Emperor, "I will think seriously of the "subject I have just alluded to, and each shall "have his own particular task." He dictated a few notes; and afterwards went down to the gar-

Digitized by Google

den, where he walked about for a short time alone, and then withdrew to his own apartment.

The Emperor did not quit his chamber until the moment dinner was announced. He resumed his remarks on Madame de Maintenon, whose letters he had been reading. "I am charmed," said he, "with her style, her grace, and the purity "of her language. If I am violently offended "by what is bad, I am at the same time exqui- "sitely sensible to what is good. I think I pre- "fer Madame de Maintenon's letters to those of "Madame de Sevigné: they tell more. Madame "de Sevigné will certainly always remain the "true model of the epistolary style; she has a "thousand charms and graces, but there is this "defect in her writings, that one may read a "great deal of them without retaining any im- "pression of what one has read. They are like "a dish of egg snow-balls, of which a man may "eat till he is tired without overcharging his "stomach."

The Emperor then made some observations on grammar. He asked for the grammar of Domairon, who had been our professor at the military school at Paris. He glanced through it with evident pleasure. "Such is the influence "of youthful impressions," said he; "I suspect "that Domairon's is not the best of grammars, "yet to me it will always be the most agreeable.

Digitized by Google

"I shall never open it without experiencing a "certain pleasure."

Errors of the English ministers.—Means of which England might have availed herself for the liquidation of her debt.—The Governor's reductions.

7th.—The Emperor remained within doors the whole of the day. The Governor appeared on the grounds accompanied by a numerous group; but we fled at his approach. Several vessels have been observed out at sea.

I was summoned to attend the Emperor, and I found him engaged in perusing a work on the state of England. This became the subject of conversation; the Emperor said a great deal respecting the enormous national debt of England, the disadvantageous peace she had concluded, and the different means by which she might have extricated herself from her difficulties.

Napoleón possesses in an eminent degree the instinct of order and harmony. I once knew a man, who, being much engaged in arithmetical calculations, confessed that he could not enter a drawing-room without being led irresistibly to count the people who were in it; and that when he sat down to table he could not help summing up the number of plates, glasses, &c. Napoleon, though in a more elevated sphere, has also an irresistible habit of his own, which is to develope the grand and the beautiful in every subject that

Digitized by Google

comes under his attention. If he happens to converse about a city, he immediately suggests improvements and embellishments; if a nation be the object of his consideration, he expatiates on the means of promoting her glory, prosperity, useful institutions, &c. Many of his observations, that have already been noted down, must have rendered this fact obvious to the reader.

Either the contents of the journals and other publications of the day, or the nature of our situation here, occasioned the Emperor's attention to be constantly directed to the state of England. He frequently adverted to what she ought to have done, as well as to that which she still had to do, and which might render her future condition more prosperous. I subjoin here a few of the observations on this subject, which escaped him at various times:—

"The Colonial system," said he one day, "is "now at an end for all; for England, who pos- "sesses every colony, and for the other powers, "who possess none. The empire of the seas "now belongs indisputably to England; and "why should she, in a new situation, wish to "continue the old routine course? Why does she "not adopt plans that would be more profitable "to her? She must look forward to a sort of "emancipation of her colonies. In course of "time many will doubtless escape from her do- "minion, and she should therefore avail herself

Digitized by Google

" of the present moment to obtain new securities " and more advantageous connexions. Why does " she not propose that the majority of her co- " lonies shall purchase their emancipation by " taking upon themselves a portion of the gene- " ral debt, which would thus become specially " theirs. The mother-country would by this " means relieve herself of her burthens, and " would nevertheless preserve all her advan- " tages. She would retain, as pledges, the faith " of treaties, reciprocal interests, similitude of " language, and the force of habit; she might " moreover reserve, by way of guarantee, a single " fortified point, a harbour for her ships, after " the manner of the factories on the coast of " Africa. . . . What would she lose? Nothing; " and she would spare herself the trouble and " expense of an administration which, too often, " serves only to render her odious. Her minis- " ters, it is true, would have fewer places to " give away; but the nation would certainly be " no loser.

" I doubt not," added he, " that, with a tho- " rough knowledge of the subject, some useful " result might be derived from the ideas which " I have just thrown out, however erroneous they " may be in their first hasty conception. Even " with regard to India, great advantages might be " obtained by the adoption of new systems. The " English who are here, assure me that England

Digitized by Google

" derives nothing from India in the balance of " her trade: the expenses swallow up or even " exceed the profits. It is therefore merely a " source of individual advantage, and of a few " private fortunes of colossal magnitude; but " these are so much food for ministerial patron- " age, and therefore good care is taken not to " meddle with them. Those nabobs, as they " are styled, on their return to England, are use- " ful recruits to the aristocracy. It signifies not " that they bear the disgrace of having acquired " fortunes by rapine and plunder, or that they " exercise a baneful influence on public morals " by exciting in others the wish to gain the " same wealth by the same means: the present " ministers are not so scrupulous as to bestow " a thought on such matters. These men give " them their votes; and the more corrupt they " are, the more easily are they controlled. In " this state of things, where is the hope of re- " form? Thus, on the least proposition of amend- " ment, what an outcry is raised! The English " aristocracy is daily taking a stride in advance; " but as soon as there is any proposal for retro- " grading, were it only for the space of an inch, " a general explosion takes place. If the mi- " nutest details be touched, the whole edifice " begins to totter. This is very natural. If you " attempt to deprive a glutton of his mouthful, " he will defend himself like a hero."

Digitized by Google

On another occasion the Emperor said:— "After a twenty years' war, after the blood and "treasures that were lavished in the common "cause, after a triumph beyond all hope, what "sort of peace has England concluded? Lord "Castlereagh had the whole Continent at his "disposal, and yet what advantage, what indem- "nity has he secured to his own country? He "has signed just such a peace as he would have "signed had he been conquered. I should not have "required him to make greater sacrifices had I "been victorious. But, perhaps, England thought "herself sufficiently happy in having effected my "overthrow; . . . in that case, hatred has avenged "me! During our contest, England was animated "by two powerful sentiments; her national inte- "rest and her hatred of me. In the moment of "triumph, the violence of the one caused her to "lose sight of the other. She has paid dearly for "that moment of passion!" He developed his idea, glancing at the different measures which shewed the errors committed by Castlereagh, and the many advantages he had neglected. "Thou- "sands of years will roll away," said he, "before "there occurs such another opportunity of secur- "ing the welfare and real glory of England. Was "it ignorance, or corruption, on the part of Cas- "tlereagh? He distributed the spoil generously, "as he seemed to think, among the Sovereigns of "the Continent, and reserved nothing for his own

Digitized by Google

" country; but, in so doing, did he not fear the " reproach of being considered as the agent " rather than the partner of the Holy Allies? He " gave away immense territories; Russia, Prussia, " and Austria acquired millions of population. " Where is the equivalent to England? She, " who was the soul of all this success, and who " paid so dearly for it, now reaps the fruit of the " *gratitude* of the Continent, and of the errors " or treachery of her negotiator. My continental " system is continued; and the produce of her " manufactures is excluded. Why not have edged " round the Continent with free and independent " maritime towns, such, for example, as Dantzic, " Hamburgh, Antwerp, Dunkirk, Genoa, &c. " which would of necessity have become the " staples of her manufactures, and would have " scattered them over Europe, in spite of all the " duties in the world. England possessed the " right of doing this, and her circumstances re- " quired it; her decisions would have been just, " and who would have opposed them at the mo- " ment of the liberation? Why did she create " to herself a difficulty, and in course of time a na- " tural enemy, by uniting Belgium to Holland, in- " stead of securing two immense resources for her " trade, by keeping them separate? Holland, which " has no manufactures of her own, would have " been the natural depôt for English goods; and " Belgium, which might have become an English

Digitized by Google

" colony governed by an English Prince, would
" have been the channel for dispersing these goods
" over France and Germany. Why not have
" bound down Spain and Portugal by a commer-
" cial treaty of long duration, which would have
" repaid all the expenses incurred for their de-
" liverance, and which might have been obtained
" under pain of the enfranchisement of their colo-
" nies, the trade of which, in either case, Eng-
" land would have commanded? Why not have
" stipulated for some advantages in the Baltic and
" the States of Italy? These would have been
" but the regular privileges attached to the do-
" minion of the seas. After so long a contest in
" support of this right, how happened its advan-
" tages to be neglected at the moment when it
" was really secured? Did England, while she
" sanctioned usurpation in others, fear that any
" opposition would have been offered to hers?
" and by whom could it have been offered?
" Probably England repents now, when it is too
" late; the opportunity cannot be recovered; she
" suffered the favourable moment to escape her!
" . . . How many *whys* and *wherefores* might I not
" multiply! . . . . None but Lord Castlereagh
" would have acted thus: he made himself the
" man of the Holy Alliance, and in course of time
" he will be the object of execration. The Lau-
" derdales, the Grenvilles, and the Wellesleys,

Digitized by Google

"would have pursued a very different course; "they would at least have acted like English- "men."

At another time the Emperor said:—"The na- "tional debt is the worm that preys on England; "it is the chain of all her difficulties. It occa- "sions the enormity of taxation, and this in its "turn raises the price of provisions. Hence the "distress of the people, the high price of labour "and of manufactured articles, which are not "disposed of with equal advantage in the con- "tinental markets. England then ought at all "hazards to contend against this devouring "monster; she should assail it on all sides, and "at once subdue it *negatively* and *positively*, that "is to say, by the reduction of her expenditure "and the increase of her capital.

"Can she not reduce the interest of her debt, "the high salaries, the sinecures, and the various "expenses attending her army establishment, "and renounce the latter, in order to confine her- "self to her navy. In short, many things might "be done which I cannot now enter into. With "regard to the increase of her capital, can she not "enrich herself with the ecclesiastical property, "which is immense, and which she would acquire "by a salutary reform, and by the extinction of "titular dignities which would give offence to no "one. But if a word be uttered on this subject,

Digitized by Google

" the whole aristocracy is up in arms, and suc-
" ceeds in putting down the opposition; for in
" England it is the aristocracy that governs, and
" for which the Government acts. They repeat
" the favourite adage, that if the least stone of the
" old foundation be touched, the whole fabric
" will fall to the ground. This is devoutly re-
" echoed by the multitude; consequently reform
" is stopped, and abuses are suffered to increase
" and multiply.

" It is but just to acknowledge that in spite of
" a compound of odious, antiquated, and mean
" details, the English constitution presents the
" singular phenomenon of a happy and grand re-
" sult; and the advantages arising out of it secure
" the attachment of the multitude, who are fear-
" ful of losing any of the blessings they enjoy.
" But is it to the objectionable nature of the
" details that this result must be attributed? On
" the contrary, it would shine with increased
" lustre if the grand and beautiful machine were
" freed from its mischievous appendages.

" England," continued the Emperor, " presents
" an example of the dangerous effects of the bor-
" rowing system. I would never listen to any
" hints for the adoption of that system in France;
" I was always a firm opposer of it. It was said
" at the time, that I contracted no loans for
" want of credit, and because I could find no one

Digitized by Google

"willing to lend; but this was false. Those who "know any thing of mankind and the spirit of "stock-jobbing, will be convinced that loans "may always be raised by holding out the chance "of gain and the attraction of speculation. But "this was no part of my system, and by a spe- "cial law, I fixed the amount of the public debt "at what had generally been supposed to be "conducive to the general prosperity, namely, "at eighty millions for France in her utmost ex- "tent, and after the union with Holland, which "in itself produced an augmentation of twenty "millions. This sum was reasonable and proper; "a greater one would have been attended by "mischievous consequences. What was the "result of this system? What resources have "I left behind me? France, after so many gi- "gantic efforts and terrible disasters, is now "more prosperous than ever! Her finances are "the first in Europe! To whom and to what "are these advantages to be attributed? So far "was I from wishing to swallow up the future, "that I had resolved to leave a treasury behind "me. I had even formed one, the funds of "which I lent to different banking-houses, em- "barrassed families, and the individuals who were "about my person.

"I should not only have carefully preserved "the sinking fund, but I calculated on having, "in course of time, surpluses which would have

Digitized by Google

" been constantly increasing, and which might " have been actively applied for the furtherance " of public works and improvements. I should " have had the fund of the Empire for general " works; the fund of the departments for local " works, and the fund of the communes for mu- " nicipal works, &c."

In the course of another conversation, the Emperor observed:—" England is said to traffic " in every thing: why, then, does she not sell " liberty, for which she might get a high price, " and without any fear of exhausting her own " stock; for modern liberty is essentially moral, " and does not betray its engagements. For " example, what would not the poor Spaniards " give her to free them from the yoke to which " they have been again subjected? I am con- " fident they would willingly pay any price to " recover their freedom. It was I who inspired " them with this sentiment; and the error into " which I fell, might, at least, be turned to " good account by another government. As to " the Italians, I have planted in their hearts prin- " ciples that never can be rooted out. What " can England do better than to promote and " assist the noble impulses of modern regene- " ration? Sooner or later, this regeneration " must be accomplished. Sovereigns and old " aristocratic institutions may exert their efforts " to oppose it, but in vain. They are dooming

Digitized by Google

" themselves to the punishment of Sisyphus;
" but, sooner or later, some arm will tire of re-
" sistance, and then the whole system will fall
" to nothing. Would it not be better to yield
" with a good grace?—this was my intention.
" Why does England refuse to avail herself
" of the glory and advantage she might derive
" from this course of proceeding? Every thing
" passes away in England as well as elsewhere.
" Castlereagh's administration will pass away,
" and that which may succeed it, and which is
" doomed to inherit the fruit of so many errors,
" may become great by only discontinuing the
" system that has hitherto been pursued. He
" who may happen to be placed at the head of
" the English cabinet, has merely to allow things
" to take their course, and to obey the winds that
" blow. By becoming the leader of liberal prin-
" ciples, instead of leaguing with absolute power,
" like Castlereagh, he will render himself the
" object of universal benediction, and England
" will forget her wrongs. Fox was capable of
" so acting, but Pitt was not: the reason is,
" that, in Fox, the heart warmed the genius;
" while, in Pitt, the genius withered the heart.
" But it may be asked, why I, all-powerful as I
" was, did not pursue the course I have here
" traced out?—how, since I can speak so well, I
" could have acted so ill? I reply to those who
" make this inquiry with sincerity, that there is

Digitized by Google

" no comparison between my situation and that " of the English government. England may " work on a soil which extends to the very " bowels of the earth; while I could labour " only on a sandy surface. England reigns over " an established order of things; while I had to " take upon myself the great charge, the im- " mense difficulty of consolidating and esta- " blishing. I purified a revolution, in spite of " hostile factions. I combined together all the " scattered benefits that could be preserved; but " I was obliged to protect them with a nervous " arm, against the attacks of all parties; and in " this situation it may truly be said, that the " public interest, *the State, was myself.*

" Our principles were attacked from without; " and in the name of these very principles, I was " assailed in the opposite sense at home. Had " I relaxed but ever so little, we should soon have " been brought back to the time of the Directory; " I should have been the object, and France the " infallible victim, of a *counter Brumaire.* We " are in our nature so restless and inconsiderate! " If twenty revolutions were to ensue, we should " have twenty constitutions. This is one of the " subjects that are studied most, and observed the " least. We have much need to grow older in " this great and glorious path; for here our great " men have all shewn themselves to be mere " children. May the present generation profit

Digitized by Google

"by the faults that have hitherto been com-
"mitted, and prove as wise as it is enthu-
"siastic!"

To-day the Governor commenced his grand reductions, and it was thought proper to deprive us of eight English domestics, who had formerly been granted to us. To the servants this was a subject of deep regret, and it was gratifying to ourselves to observe, that we won the regard of all who were permitted to approach us. We are now absolutely in want of daily necessaries, to supply which the Emperor proposes to dispose of his plate; this is his only resource.

After dinner the Emperor read the *Cercle*, and retired immediately, although it was very early in the evening. He was indisposed, and could not fall asleep. He sent for me about midnight. By chance I had not retired to rest, and I remained in conversation with him for the space of two hours. . . . . .

The Emperor's Court at the Tuileries.—The presentation of the Ladies.—On women's ages.—Manuscript of the Island of Elba.

8th.—The Emperor sent for me very early: he was just finishing his toilette. He had had no sleep during the night, and he seemed much fatigued. The weather had become somewhat tolerable,

Digitized by Google

and he desired to have his breakfast under the tent. While it was preparing, he took a few turns about the garden, and resumed the conversation he had had with me on the preceding night. . . .

He invited Madame de Montholon to breakfast, and afterwards we took a drive in the calash, of which the Emperor had made no use for a considerable time. He had scarcely inhaled the fresh air for several days.

The conversation once more turned on the subject of the Emperor's Court at the Tuileries, the multitude of individuals composing it, the spirit and address with which Napoleon went through the ceremony of the presentations, &c. I pass over many of the observations that were made, for the sake of avoiding repetition.

"It is more difficult than is generally sup-
"posed," said the Emperor, "to speak to every
"body in a crowded assemblage, and yet say
"nothing to any one; to seem to know a multi-
"tude of people, nine-tenths of whom are total
"strangers to one."

Again, when alluding to the period when he was in the plenitude of his power, he observed, that it was at once easy and difficult to approach him, to communicate with him, and to be appreciated by him; and that it depended on the merest chance in the world whether his courtiers made or missed their fortunes. "Now that I am "myself entirely out of the question," said he,

Digitized by Google

"now that I am reduced to the level of a mere pri-
"vate individual, and can reflect philosophically
"on the time when I was called to execute the
"designs of Providence, without, however, ceas-
"ing to be a man, I see how much the fate of
"those I governed really depended upon chance;
"and how often favour and credit were purely
"accidental. Intrigue is so dextrous, and merit
"often so *maladroit*, these extremes approximate
"so closely to each other, that with the best in-
"tentions in the world, I find that my benefits
"were distributed like prizes in a lottery. And
"yet could I have done better? Was I faulty in
"my intentions, or remiss in my exertions? Have
"other sovereigns done better than I did? It is
"only thus that I can be judged. The fault
"was in the nature of my situation, and in the
"force of things."

We then spoke of the presentation of the ladies at Court, their embarrassment, and the plans, views, and hopes that were formed by some of them. Madame de Montholon revealed the secrets of several of her acquaintance, by which it appeared that if in the saloons of Paris some were heard to exclaim against the Emperor's coarseness of manners, harshness of expression, and ugliness of person, others, who were better disposed, better informed, and differently affected, extolled the sweetness of his voice, the grace of his manners, the delicacy of his smile, and, above

Digitized by Google

all, his celebrated hand, which was said to be ridiculously beautiful.

These advantages, it was observed, combined with great power and still greater glory, were naturally calculated to excite and to give rise to certain romantic stories. Thus at the Tuileries how many endeavoured to render themselves pleasing to the sovereign! How many sought to inspire a sentiment which it is probable they themselves really felt!

The Emperor smiled at our remarks and conjectures; and he confessed that, notwithstanding the mass of business and the cloud of flattery in which he was enveloped, he had oftener than once observed the sentiments to which we alluded. A few of the least timid among his admirers had, he said, even solicited and obtained interviews. We now laughed in our turn, and said that at the time these stories had been the subject of a great deal of gaiety. But the Emperor seriously protested that they were void of foundation. In a more private conversation at the Briars, during one of our walks by moonlight, the Emperor, as I have stated in a former part of my journal, made the same assertion, and contradicted every report of this nature, except one.

Our next subject of conversation was the repugnance of women to let their age be known. The Emperor made some very lively and entertaining remarks. An instance was mentioned of

Digitized by Google

a woman who preferred losing an important law-suit to confessing her age. The case would have been decided in her favour, had she produced the register of her baptism, but this she could not be prevailed on to do.

Another anecdote of the same kind was mentioned. A certain lady was much attached to a gentleman, and was convinced that her union with him would render her happy; but she could not marry without proving the date of her birth, and she preferred remaining single.

The Emperor informed us that a distinguished lady, at the time of her marriage, had deceived her husband, and represented herself to be five or six years younger than she really was, by producing the baptismal register of her younger sister, who had been dead some time. "However," said the Emperor, "in so doing, poor Jo-"sephine exposed herself to some risk. This "might really have proved a case of nullity of "marriage." These words furnished us with the key to certain dates, which, at the Tuileries, were the subject of jesting and ridicule, and which we then attributed wholly to the gallantry and extreme complaisance of the Imperial Almanack.

About four o'clock the Emperor took a short walk. I did not accompany him. On his return, he informed us that he had visited the Company's garden, where he had met several very

Digitized by Google

pretty women. "But I had not my interpreter "with me," he added, pointing to me. "The "rogue left me, and nothing could be more pro- "voking, for I never felt more inclined to avail "myself of his assistance." This little walk, however, did the Emperor no good, for he was presently seized with a severe toothache.

A vessel which had come from the Cape some time ago, sailed for Europe this day. Several English military officers, who were passengers on board this ship, had not been permitted to wait on the Emperor, in spite of their repeated solicitations. This was a new instance of the Governor's malevolence. These officers were men of distinction, and their reports on their return home might have had some influence. The Governor, in defiance of all truth, informed them that Napoleon had determined to receive no one.

The Emperor some time ago analyzed to us a subject which he said he intended to dictate in fourteen chapters, and which had forcibly struck me by its truth, its force, its just reasoning, and its dignity. I frequently alluded to it when I happened to be alone with him; and he laughed more than once at the perseverance I evinced, which, he said, was not usual with me. To-day he informed me that he had at length produced something, though not in fourteen chapters, nor on the promised subject; but that I must be con-

Digitized by Google

tent with it. I have read it; and it is certainly a very remarkable fragment. I do not believe that the revolution has produced any thing more comprehensive and energetic on the governments of the last twenty-five years in France, namely, the Republic, the Consulate, and the Empire.

The exposition and developement of the ten chapters which compose this work may be regarded as a perfect outline of the subject. The style is remarkably simple and nervous. Each chapter is full and forcible, and the whole, which consists of fifty pages, is struck off and finished with a masterly hand. I have understood that the groundwork of these ideas should have been the Emperor's manifesto at the time of his landing from Elba.

Since my return to Europe, this little work has been published, under the title of *Manuscrit de l'Ile d'Elbe;* though I have reason to believe that at first another title was intended for it. Be this as it may, since the work is but little known, and as those who have read it may be ignorant of its real origin, I here transcribe almost literally several chapters, which will serve to prove its source and its authority.

Chap. I.—In the sixteenth century, the Pope, Spain, and the Sixteen, attempt in vain to raise a fourth dynasty to the throne of France. Henry IV. succeeds to Henry III. without an interregnum: he conquers the League; but finds that

Digitized by Google

the only means of securing himself on the throne, is by sincerely joining the party which constitutes the majority of the nation.

" Henry IV. was proclaimed King at St. Cloud, on the day on which Henry III. died. His sovereignty was acknowledged by all the Protestant churches, and by a part of the Catholic nobility. The Holy League which had been formed against Henry III., in hatred of the Protestants, and to avenge the death of the Duke de Guise, was master of Paris, and commanded five-sixths of the kingdom. The leaguers refused to acknowledge Henry IV., but they proclaimed no other sovereign. The Duke of Mentz, the chief of the League, exercised authority under the title of Lieutenant-general of the kingdom. The accession of Henry IV. produced no change in the forms adopted by the League for exercising its power: each town was governed, as in disturbed and factious times, by local or military authorities. At no period, not even on the day succeeding his entrance into Paris, did Henry IV. acknowledge the acts of the League, and the latter never set up any pretensions that he should do so. No law, no regulation, emanated from the League. The Parliament of Paris was divided into two parties; one for the leaguers, which sat at Paris, and the other for Henry IV. which assembled at Tours. But these parliaments drew up and registered none but judiciary acts. The provinces

Digitized by Google

retained their own organization and privileges, and were governed by their own common laws. It has already been observed that the League had not proclaimed any other sovereign; but it acknowledged for a moment as King, Cardinal de Bourbon, Henry's uncle. The Cardinal, however, did not consent to second the designs of the enemies of his house. Besides, Henry had seized his person; no act emanated from him, and the League continued subject to the authority of the Duke of Mentz, the Lieutenant-general. There was therefore no interregnum between Henry III. and Henry IV.

"The League was divided by several parties. The Sorbonne had decided that the rights of birth could confer no right to the crown on a prince who was an enemy to the Church. The Pope had declared that Henry IV. having relapsed, had forfeited his rights for ever; and that he could not recover them, even though he should return to the bosom of the Church. Henry IV. King of Navarre was born a Protestant; but, at the time of the events of St. Bartholomew, he was compelled to marry Margaret de Valois, and to abjure the reformed religion. However, as soon as he withdrew from the Court, and found himself amidst the Protestants on the left bank of the Loire, he declared that his abjuration had been wholly compulsory, and he again embraced the Protestant faith. This step caused him to be

Digitized by Google

characterized as an obstinate renegado; but the majority of the League were of opinion that it would be proper to summon Henry to return to the bosom of the Catholic, Apostolic, and Roman Church; and acknowledge him as sovereign, as soon as he should abjure Protestantism, and receive absolution from the bishops.

"The leaguers convoked the States-general of the kingdom at Paris. The Spanish ambassadors now unmasked the designs of their sovereign, and urged the States to establish a fourth dynasty on the throne of France, on the ground that Henry and Condé, by their apostacy, having forfeited their rights to the crown, the male line of the Capets was extinct. They accordingly set forth the claims of the Infanta of Spain, the daughter of Henry II. of France, who was the first in the female line. Even supposing that, by the extinction of the male line of descent, the nation possessed the right of disposing of the crown, they still insisted that its choice ought to fall on the Infanta, for two reasons: first, because it was impossible to select a princess of more illustrious family; and secondly, because France was indebted to Philip II. for his exertions in supporting the cause of the League. The Infanta was to marry a French prince, and mention was even made of the Duke de Guise, the son of the Duke who had been assassinated at Blois. There was already a body of Spanish

Digitized by Google

troops in Paris, commanded by the Duke of Mentz; and it was proposed that an army of 50,000 Spaniards should be maintained in Paris by the Court of Madrid, which would devote its whole power and resources to ensure the triumph of this fourth dynasty. The Sixteen supported these propositions, which were sanctioned by the Court of Rome, and seconded by the utmost efforts of the Legate. But all was vain; public spirit was roused at the idea of a foreign nation disposing of the throne of France. That part of the Parliament which sat at Paris addressed remonstrances to the Duke of Mentz, the Lieutenant-general of the kingdom, and urged him to enforce the observance of the fundamental laws of the monarchy, and of the Salic law in particular. Had the designs of the Spanish faction succeeded; had the States-general declared the crown to have been forfeited by the descendants of Hugues Capet; had a fourth dynasty been raised to the throne, accepted by the nation, and sanctioned by the religion acknowledged among the powers of Europe, the rights of the third dynasty would have been extinct.

"Henry conquered the League at Arques and on the plains of Ivry, and he then besieged Paris. However, he was convinced of the impossibility of reigning in France, unless he joined the national party. He had conquered with an army composed entirely of French troops: if he had

Digitized by Google

under his command a small corps of English, the leaguers had a still more considerable number of Spaniards and Italians. On both sides, therefore, the contest had been maintained by Frenchmen against Frenchmen; the foreigners were merely auxiliaries; the national honour and independence could not be compromised, whichever party might be declared victorious. *Ventre Saint-gris! Paris vaut bien une messe!* were the exclamations by which Henry used to sound the opinion of the Huguenots; and when, at the Council of Beauvais, he assembled the principal leaders of the Protestant party to deliberate on the resolution which it was most advisable he should adopt, the majority, and in particular the most intelligent individuals among them, advised the king to abjure his faith and to join the national party. Henry pronounced his abjuration at Saint-Denis, and received absolution from the Bishops; the gates of Paris were thrown open to him, and his authority was acknowledged by the whole kingdom. He now frankly espoused the national party. Almost all the public posts were occupied by the leaguers. The Protestants, those who had constantly served the King, and to whom he was indebted for his victories, frequently raised their complaints against him, and taxed him with ingratitude. Still however, in spite of all the dis-

Digitized by Google

cretion that was observed, the nation continued long to mistrust the secret intentions of Henry. It was remarked that *what is bred in the bone will never be out of the flesh.*

Chap. II.—The Republic consecrated by the will of the people, by religion, by victory, and by all the Powers of Europe.

Hugues Capet ascended the throne by the choice of the Parliament, consisting of Lords and Bishops, which two classes then constituted the nation. The French monarchy was never absolute; the intervention of the States General has always been necessary for sanctioning the principal acts of the legislature, and for levying new taxes. Subsequently the French parliaments, under the pretence of being States General on a small scale, and seconded by the court, usurped the rights of the nation. It 1788, the parliaments were the first to acknowledge them. Louis XVI. convoked the States General in 1789, and the nation exercised a portion of the sovereignty. The Constituent Assembly framed a new constitution for the state, which was sanctioned by the approval of the whole French people, and which Louis XVI. accepted and swore to maintain. The Legislative Assembly suspended the King. The Convention, which consisted of the deputies of all the primary assemblies in the Kingdom, and which was invested with special powers,

Digitized by Google

proclaimed the abolition of the monarchy and the establishment of the Republic. The adherents of the royal party fled from France, and solicited the aid of foreign arms. Austria and Prussia signed the convention of Pilnitz; and Austrian and Prussian armies, joined by the French royalist forces, commenced the war of the first coalition to subdue the French people. The whole nation took up arms; and the Austrians and Prussians were conquered. The second coalition was afterwards formed by Austria, England, and Russia; but this was destroyed like the first, and all the Powers in Europe acknowledged the French Republic.

1st.—The Republic of Genoa, by an extraordinary embassy, on the 15th of June, 1792.

2d.—The Porte, by a declaration, on the 27th of March, 1793.

3d.—Tuscany, by the treaty of the 9th of February, 1795.

4th.—Holland, by the treaty of the 16th of May, 1795.

5th.—The Venetian Republic, by an extraordinary embassy, on the 30th of December, 1795.

6th.—The King of Prussia, by the treaty signed at Bâle, on the 5th of April, 1795.

7th.—The King of Spain, by the treaty signed at Bâle, on the 22nd of July, 1795.

8th.—Hesse-Cassel, by the treaty of the 28th of July, 1795.

Digitized by Google

9th.—Switzerland, by the treaty of the 19th of August, 1795.

10th.—Denmark, by a declaration, on the 18th of August, 1795.

11th.—Sweden, by an embassy, on the 23d of April, 1795.

12th.—Sardinia, by the treaty of Paris, on the 28th of April, 1796.

13th.—America, by an extraordinary embassy, on the 30th of December, 1796.

14th.—Naples, by the treaty of the 10th of October, 1796.

15th.—Parma, by the treaty of the 5th of November, 1796.

16th.—Wurtemberg, by the treaty of the 7th of August, 1796.

17th.—Baden, by the treaty of the 22d of August, 1796.

18th.—Bavaria, by the treaty of the 24th of July, 1797.

19th.—Portugal, by the treaty of the 19th of August, 1797.

20th.—The Pope, by the treaty signed at Tolentino on the 19th of February, 1797.

21st.—The Emperor of Germany, by the treaty of Campo-Formio, on the 7th of October, 1797.

22d.—The Emperor of Russia, by a treaty signed on the 8th of October, 1801.

23d.—The King of England, by the treaty signed at Amiens on the 27th of March, 1802.

Digitized by Google

The government of the Republic sent ambassadors to all the Powers of Europe, and received envoys from those powers in return. The tricoloured flag was acknowledged in every sea, and throughout the world. At Tolentino, the Pope had treated with the Republic as a temporal sovereign; but he acknowledged and treated with it as head of the Catholic religion, by the Concordate which was signed at Paris on the 18th of April, 1802. Most of the bishops, who had followed the Royalist party abroad, now submitted to the Republican government, and those who refused, forfeited their sees. In short, the French Republic, which was sanctioned by the citizens, and victorious by its armies, was acknowledged by every sovereign, every power, and every religion in the world, and in particular by the Catholic Church.

Not only was the Republic acknowledged by all the powers in the world, after the death of Louis XVI., but none of these powers ever acknowledged a successor to him. In the year 1800, therefore, the third dynasty was ended as completely as the first and second. The rights and titles of the Merovingians were extinguished by the rights and titles of the Carlovingians; the rights and titles of the Carlovingians were extinguished by the rights and titles of the Capetians; and the rights of the Capetians were, in like

Digitized by Google

manner, extinguished by the Republic. Every legitimate government supersedes the rights and the legitimacy of the governments that have preceded it. The Republic was a government, in fact and in right, rendered legitimate by the will of the nation, sanctioned by the Church, and by the adherence of all the powers in the world.

Chap. III.—The Revolution rendered France a new nation:—it emancipated the Gauls from the tyranny of the Franks: it created new interests, and a new order of things conformable with the welfare and rights of the people, and the justice and knowledge of the age.

The French Revolution was not produced by the jarring interests of two families disputing the possession of the throne; it was a general rising of the mass of the nation against the privileged classes. The French nobility, like that of every country in Europe, dates its origin from the incursion of the barbarians, who divided among themselves the possession of the Roman Empire. In France the nobles represented the Franks and the Burgundians, and the rest of the nation the Gauls. The feudal system that was introduced established the principle that all land should have a lord. All political privileges were exercised by the priests and nobles; the peasants were slaves, and in part attached to the glebe. The progress of civilization and knowledge emancipated the people. This new state of things promoted in-

Digitized by Google

dustry and trade. The chief portion of the land, wealth, and information, fell to the share of the people in the eighteenth century. The nobles, however, still continued to be a privileged class: they were empowered to administer justice, and they possessed feudal rights under various denominations and forms: they were exempt from contributing to support any of the burthens of the state, and enjoyed exclusive possession of the most honourable posts. These abuses roused the indignation of the citizens. The principal object of the revolution was to destroy all privileges; to abolish signiorial jurisdictions, justice being an inseparable attribute of sovereign authority; to suppress feudal rights, as being a remnant of the old slavery of the people; to oblige all citizens and all property, equally and without distinction, to contribute to maintain the burthens of the state. In short, the Revolution proclaimed equality of rights. A citizen might attain any public employment, according to his talent and the chances of fortune. The kingdom was composed of provinces which had been united to the crown at various periods: they had no natural limits, and were differently divided, unequal in extent and in population. They possessed many laws of their own, civil as well as criminal: they were more or less privileged, and very unequally taxed, both with respect to the amount and the nature of the con-

Digitized by Google

tributions, which rendered it necessary to detach them from each other by lines of custom-houses. France was not a state, but a combination of several states, connected together without amalgamation. The whole had been determined by chance and by the events of past ages. The Revolution, guided by the principle of equality both with respect to the citizens and the different portions of the territory, destroyed all these small nations: there was no longer a Brittany, a Normandy, a Burgundy, a Champaign, a Provence, or a Lorraine; but the whole formed a France. A division of homogeneous territory, prescribed by local circumstances, confounded the limits of all the provinces. They possessed the same judiciary and administrative organization, the same civil and criminal laws, and the same system of taxation. The dreams of the upright men of all ages were realized. The opposition which the court, the clergy, and the nobility, set up against the Revolution, occasioned the war of foreign powers, and produced the law of emigration and the sequestration of emigrant property, which subsequently it was found necessary to sell, to assist in supporting the charges of the war. A great portion of the French nobility enrolled themselves under the banner of the princes of the Bourbon family, and formed an army which marched in junction with the Austrian, Prussian, and English forces. Gentlemen who

Digitized by Google

had been brought up in the enjoyment of competency served as private soldiers: numbers were cut off by fatigue and the sword; others perished of want in foreign countries; and the wars of La Vendée and of the Chouans, and the revolutionary tribunals, swept away thousands. Three-fourths of the French nobility were thus destroyed; and all posts, civil, judicial, or military, were filled by citizens who had risen from the common mass of the people. The change produced in persons and property, by the events of the Revolution, was no less remarkable than that which was effected by the principles of the Revolution. A new church was created; the dioceses of Vienna, Narbonne, Frejus, Sisteron, Rheims, &c. were superseded by sixty new dioceses, the boundaries of which were circumscribed, in the Concordate, by new Bulls applicable to the present state of the French territory. The suppression of religious orders, the sale of convents and of all ecclesiastical property, were sanctioned, and the clergy were pensioned by the state. Every thing that was the result of the events which had succeeded since the time of Clovis, ceased to exist. All these changes were so advantageous to the people, that they were effected with the utmost facility, and, in 1800, there no longer remained any recollection of the old privileges and sovereigns of the provinces,

Digitized by Google

the old parliaments and bailiwicks, or the old dioceses; and to trace back the origin of all that existed, it was sufficient to refer to the new law by which it had been established. One-half of the land had changed its proprietors; the peasantry and the citizens were enriched. The advancement of agriculture and manufactures exceeded the most sanguine hopes. France presented the imposing spectacle of upwards of thirty millions of inhabitants, circumscribed within their natural limits, and composing only a single class of citizens, governed by one law, one rule, and one order. All these changes were conformable with the welfare and rights of the nation, and with the justice and intelligence of the age.

Chap. IV.—The French people establish the Imperial throne, to consolidate the new interests of the nation. The fourth dynasty did not immediately succeed the third; it succeeded the Republic. Napoleon is crowned by the Pope, and acknowledged by the Powers of Europe. He creates kings, and the armies of all the Continental Powers march under his command.

The five members of the Directory were divided. Enemies to the Republic crept into the councils; and thus men, hostile to the rights of the people, became connected with the government. This state of things kept the country in a fermentation; and the great interests which the French people had acquired by the Revolution

Digitized by Google

were incessantly compromised. A unanimous voice, issuing from the plains of France and from the bosom of her cities and her camps, demanded the preservation of all the principles of the Republic, or the establishment of an hereditary system in the government, which would place the principles and interests of the Revolution beyond the reach of factions and the influence of foreigners. By the constitution of the year VIII. the First Consul of the Republic became Consul for ten years, and the nation afterwards prolonged his magistracy for life: the people subsequently raised him to the throne, which it rendered hereditary in his family. The principles of the sovereignty of the people, of liberty and equality, of the destruction of the feudal system, of the irrevocability of the sale of national domains, and the freedom of religious worship, were now established. The government of France, under the fourth dynasty, was founded on the same principles as the Republic. It was a moderate and constitutional monarchy. There was as much difference betwixt the government of France under the fourth dynasty and the third, as betwixt the latter and the Republic. The fourth dynasty succeeded the Republic, or, more properly speaking, it was merely a modification of it.

No prince ever ascended a throne with rights more legitimate than those of Napoleon. The

Digitized by Google

crown was not presented to him by a few bishops and nobles; but he was raised to the Imperial throne by the unanimous consent of the citizens, three times solemnly confirmed. Pope Pius VII. the head of the Catholic religion, the religion of the majority of the French people, crossed the Alps to anoint the Emperor with his own hands, in the presence of the bishops of France, the cardinals of the Roman Church, and the deputies from all the districts of the Empire. The sovereigns of Europe eagerly acknowledged Napoleon: all beheld with pleasure the modification of the Republic which placed France on a footing of harmony with the rest of Europe, and which at once confirmed the constitution and the happiness of that great nation. Ambassadors from Austria, Russia, Prussia, Spain, Portugal, Turkey, and America, in fine, from all the Powers of Europe, came to congratulate the Emperor. England alone sent no ambassador: she had violated the treaty of Amiens, and had consequently again declared war against France; but even England approved the change. Lord Whitworth, in the secret negotiations which took place through the medium of Count Malouet, and which preceded the rupture of the peace of Amiens, proposed, on the part of the English government, to acknowledge Napoleon as King of France, on condition of his agreeing to the

Digitized by Google

cession of Malta. The First Consul replied, that if ever the welfare of France required that he should ascend the throne, it would only be by the free and spontaneous will of the French people. In 1806, when Lord Lauderdale came to Paris to negotiate peace between the King of England and the Emperor, he exchanged his powers, as is proved by the protocol of the negotiations, and he treated with the Emperor's plenipotentiary. The death of Fox broke up the negotiations of Lord Lauderdale. The English Minister had it in his power to obviate the Prussian campaign*, to prevent the battle of Jena.

* While Lord Lauderdale was in Paris, and negotiating with the Emperor's plenipotentiaries, Prussia took up arms and assumed a hostile attitude. Lord Lauderdale seemed to disapprove of this conduct, and to consider the contest very unequal. Being informed that Napoleon intended to march at the head of the army, he enquired whether the Emperor would consent to defer his departure, and to enter into arrangements with Prussia, if England would accept the basis of the negotiations, that is to say, the *uti possidetis* on both sides, including Hanover. The discussion was maintained on the subject of Hanover, which England wished to recover independently of this basis. By the reply of the Cabinet of St. James's Lord Lauderdale was recalled. The Emperor set out, and the battle of Jena took place; Fox was then dead.

We were, at this period, eye-witnesses to the regret and repugnance which Napoleon evinced at the necessity of going to war with Prussia. He was disposed to leave Hanover in the possession of that power, and to recognize a confederation of the North of Germany. He felt that Prussia having never been

Digitized by Google

When, in 1814, the Allies presented an *ultimatum* at Chaumont, Lord Castlereagh, in signing this *ultimatum*, again acknowledged the existence of the Empire in the person and the family of Napoleon. If the latter did not accept the propositions of the Congress of Chatillon, it was because he did not conceive himself at liberty to cede a portion of the Empire, the integrity of which he had, at his coronation, sworn to maintain.

The Electors of Bavaria, Wurtemberg, and Saxony, were created Kings by Napoleon.

The armies of Saxony, Bavaria, Wurtemberg, Baden, and Hesse, fought in conjunction with the French armies; and the Russian and French troops fought together in 1809, in the war against Austria. In 1812, the Emperor of Austria concluded at Paris an alliance with Napoleon, and Prince Schwartzenberg commanded, under his orders, the Austrian contingent in the Russian campaign, in which he attained the rank of Field Marshal, on the application of the French Emperor. A similar treaty of alliance was concluded at Berlin, and the Prussian army also fought with the French in the campaign of Russia.

---

beaten or humbled by France, and her power being still unimpaired, she could have no interests hostile to his; but that, if once she were subdued, she must be destroyed.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor healed the wounds which the Revolution had inflicted: the emigrants returned, and the list of proscription was obliterated. Napoleon enjoyed the glory most gratifying to a monarch, by recalling and re-establishing in their homes upwards of 20,000 families: their unsold property was restored to them; and the veil of oblivion being thrown over the past, individuals of every class, whatever line of conduct they might previously have pursued, were admitted to all public employments. Families who had distinguished themselves by the services they had rendered to the Bourbons, those who had shewn themselves most devoted to the Royal Family, filled places about the court, and in the ministry, and held commissions in the army. All party denominations were forgotten: aristocrats and Jacobins were no longer spoken of; and the institution of the Legion of Honour, which was at once the reward of military, civil, and judicial services, placed on a footing of unity the soldier, the man of science, the artist, the prelate, and the magistrate; it became the token of concord among all classes and parties.

Chap. V.—The blood of the Imperial dynasty mingled with that of all the monarchical Houses in Europe; with those of Russia, Prussia, England, and Austria.

The Imperial House of France contracted alliances with all the sovereign families of Europe.

Digitized by Google

Prince Eugène Napoleon, the adopted son of the Emperor, married the eldest daughter of the King of Bavaria, a princess distinguished for her beauty and her virtues. This alliance, which was contracted at Munich on the 14th of January, 1806, afforded the highest satisfaction to the Bavarian nation. The Hereditary Prince of Baden, the brother-in-law of the Emperor of Russia, solicited the hand of Princess Stephanie, the adopted daughter of the Emperor Napoleon: this marriage was celebrated at Paris on the 7th of April, 1806. On the 22d of August, 1807, Prince Jerome Napoleon married the eldest daughter of the King of Wurtemberg, cousin-german of the Emperor of Russia, the King of England, and the King of Prussia. Other alliances of this nature were contracted with sovereign princes of Germany, of the House of Hohenzollern. These marriages have proved happy, and all have given birth to princes and princesses who will transmit to future generations the recollection of the Imperial government of France.

When the interests of France and the Empire induced the Emperor and the Empress Josephine to break bonds which were equally dear to them both, the greatest sovereigns in Europe courted the alliance of Napoleon. Had it not been for religious scruples, and the delays occasioned by distance, it is probable that a Russian princess

Digitized by Google

would have occupied the throne of France. The Archduchess Maria Louisa, who was married to the Emperor by procuration granted to Prince Charles, at Vienna, on the 11th of March, 1810, and at Paris on the 2d of April following, ascended the throne of France. As soon as the Emperor of Austria learned that Napoleon's marriage was in agitation, he expressed his surprise that an alliance with the House of Austria had not been thought of. The choice was hitherto divided between a Russian and a Saxon princess: Francis explained his sentiments on this subject to the Count de Narbonne, the Governor of Trieste, who was then at Vienna; and, in consequence, instructions were forwarded to the Prince of Schwartzenberg, the Austrian ambassador at Paris. In February, 1810, a Privy Council was convoked at the Tuileries: the Minister for Foreign Affairs submitted to the Council the despatches of the Duke of Vicenza, the French ambassador at the Court of Russia. These communications shewed that the Emperor Alexander was very much disposed to give his sister, the Grand-duchess Anne, in marriage to Napoleon; but he seemed to make it a point of importance that the Princess should be allowed the public exercise of her religious worship, and a chapel appropriated to the Greek rites. The despatches from Vienna developed the insinuations and the wishes of the Austrian

Digitized by Google

Court. There was a division of opinions in the French Council: the Russian, the Saxon, and the Austrian alliance, all found supporters; but the majority voted for the choice of an Archduchess of Austria. As Prince Eugène had been the first to propose the Austrian alliance, the Emperor, breaking up the sitting at two in the morning, authorized him to commence overtures with Prince Schwartzenberg. He at the same time authorized the Minister for foreign affairs to sign, in the course of the day, the conventions of the marriage with the Austrian ambassador; and, to obviate all difficulties with respect to the details, he directed him to sign, word for word, the same contract as that which had been drawn up for the marriage of Louis XVI. and the Archduchess Maria-Antoinette. In the morning, Prince Eugène had an interview with Prince Schwartzenberg: the contract was signed the same day, and the courier who conveyed the intelligence to Austria agreeably surprised the Emperor Francis. The peculiar circumstances attending the signature of this marriage contract led the Emperor Alexander to suspect that he had been trifled with, and that the Court of the Tuileries had been conducting two negotiations at once. But this was a mistake: the negotiation with Vienna was begun and concluded in one day*.

* A report was pretty generally circulated, that the marriage

Digitized by Google

Never did the birth of any prince excite so much enthusiasm in a people, or produce so powerful a sensation throughout Europe, as the birth of the King of Rome. On the firing of the first gun, which announced the delivery of the Empress, the whole population of Paris were wrapt in the most anxious suspense. In the streets, the promenades, at the places of public amusement, and in the interior of the houses, all were eagerly intent on counting the number of guns. The twenty-second excited universal transport: it had been usual to discharge twenty-one guns on the birth of a princess, and a hundred and one

---

of the Archduchess Maria-Louisa with the Emperor Napoleon, was a secret article of the treaty of Vienna: this idea is void of foundation. The treaty of Vienna is dated Oct. 15, 1809, and the marriage contract was signed at Paris on the 7th of Feb. 1810.

Every individual who was present at the deliberations of the Privy Council, can attest that the circumstances of the marriage were such as they have been above described; that no idea of the Austrian alliance was entertained before the contents of the Count de Narbonne's despatches were made known; and that the marriage with the Archduchess Maria-Louisa was proposed, discussed, and determined on in the Council, and signed within the space of four-and-twenty hours.

The members of the Council were—the Emperor, the great dignitaries of the Empire, the high officers of the Crown, all the ministers, the presidents of the Senate and the Legislative Body, and the ministers of state, presidents of the sections of the Council of State; amounting, in all, to 25.

Digitized by Google

on the birth of a prince. All the European powers deputed the most distinguished noblemen of their Courts to present their congratulations to the Emperor. The Emperor of Russia sent his Minister of the interior; and the Emperor of Austria despatched Count Clary, one of his highest crown officers, who brought, as presents to the young king, the collars of all the orders of the Austrian Monarchy, set with diamonds. The baptism of the King of Rome was celebrated with the utmost pomp, in the presence of the French bishops, and deputies from all parts of the Empire. The Emperor of Austria was sponsor to the young king by proxy; he was represented by his brother, the Archduke Ferdinand, Grand-Duke of Tuscany.

Chap. VI.—Containing some account of the campaign of Saxony *, and shewing that the league of 1813 was in its object foreign to the Restoration.

The victories of Lutzen and Wurchen, on the 2d and 22d of May, 1813, had re-established the

* I did not choose to suppress this summary of the campaign in Saxony, although the same subject has already been particularly treated of at the commencement of this volume. If, however, some readers should consider it merely a repetition, others will find in it the means of comparing and verifying what has been before stated: one of the accounts is drawn up from documents published in Europe, whilst the other was dictated at Saint-Helena by Napoleon himself.

Digitized by Google

reputation of the French arms. The King of Saxony was brought back in triumph to his capital; the enemy was driven from Hamburgh; one of the corps of the grand army was at the gates of Berlin, and the imperial head-quarters were established at Breslau. The Russian and Prussian armies, disheartened by their defeats, had no alternative but to repass the Vistula, when Austria interfered and advised France to sign an armistice. Napoleon returned to Dresden, the Emperor of Austria quitted Vienna and repaired to Bohemia, and the Emperor of Russia and the King of Prussia established themselves at Schweidnitz. Communications took place between the different powers. Count Metternich proposed the congress of Prague, which was agreed on; but it was merely the shadow of a congress. The Court of Vienna had already entered into engagements with Russia and Prussia, and intended to declare itself in the month of May, when the unexpected success of the French army rendered greater circumspection necessary. Notwithstanding all the efforts which Austria had exerted, her army was still inconsiderable in number, badly organized, and ill prepared to enter upon a campaign. Count Metternich demanded, on the part of Austria, the surrender of the Illyrian Provinces, one half of the kingdom of Italy, (that is to say, Venice, as far as the Mincio,) and Poland. It was

Digitized by Google

moreover required that Napoleon should renounce the Protectorate of Germany, and the departments of the thirty-second military division. These extravagant propositions were advanced only that they might be rejected. The Duke of Vicenza proceeded to the Congress of Prague. The choice of Baron d'Austetten, as the Russian plenipotentiary, shewed that Russia wished not for peace, but was merely anxious to afford Austria time to complete her military preparations. The unfavourable augury, occasioned by the selection of Baron d'Austetten as a negotiator was confirmed: he declined entering upon any conference. Austria, who pretended to act as a mediatress, declared, when her army was in readiness, that she adhered to the coalition, though she did not even require the opening of a single sitting, or the drawing up of a single protocol. This system of bad faith, and of perpetual contradictions between words and acts, was unremittingly pursued, at this period, by the Court of Vienna. The war was resumed. The brilliant victory gained by the Emperor at Dresden, on the 27th of August, 1813, over the army commanded by the three Sovereigns, was immediately followed by the disasters which Macdonald, through his ill-concerted manœuvres, brought upon himself in Silesia, and by the destruction of Vandamme's force in Bohemia. However, the superiority was still on

Digitized by Google

the side of the French army, which supported itself on three points, viz: Torgau, Wittemberg, and Magdeburgh. Denmark had concluded a treaty of alliance, offensive and defensive, and her contingent augmented the army of Hamburgh.

In October, the Emperor quitted Dresden to proceed to Magdeburgh, by the left bank of the Elbe, in order to deceive the enemy. His intention was to recross the Elbe at Wittemberg and to march on Berlin. Several corps of the army had already arrived at Wittemberg, and the enemy's bridges at Dessau had been destroyed, when a letter from the King of Wurtemberg informed the Emperor that the King of Bavaria had suddenly gone over to the enemy; and that, without any declaration of war or any previous intimation, the Austrian and Bavarian forces, cantoned on the banks of the Inn, had formed themselves into one camp; that these forces, amounting to 80,000, under the orders of General Wrede, were marching on the Rhine; that he (the King of Wurtemberg), seeing the impossibility of his opposing this united force, had been obliged to add his contingent to it. The letter farther added that 100,000 men would soon surround Mentz, the Bavarians having made common cause with Austria. Upon receiving this unexpected intelligence, the Emperor found himself compelled to change the plan of the campaign which he had projected two months previously, and in pursuance

Digitized by Google

of which he had disposed of the fortresses and magazines. This plan had for its object to drive the Allies between the Elbe and the Saale; and, under the protection of the fortresses and magazines of Torgau, Wittemberg, Magdeburgh, and Hamburgh, to establish the seat of war between the Elbe and the Oder, (the French army being at that time in possession of the forts of Glogau, Custrin, and Stettin), and, according as circumstances might suggest, to raise the blockades from the fortresses of the Vistula, Dantzic, Thorn, and Modlin. It was anticipated that the success of this vast plan would have been the means of breaking up the coalition, and that, in consequence, all the German Princes would have been confirmed in their allegiance and their alliance with France. It was hoped that Bavaria would have delayed for a fortnight to change sides, and then it was certain that she would not have changed at all. The armies met on the plains of Leipsic, on the 16th of October. The French were victorious: the Austrians were beaten and driven from all their positions; and Count Meerfeld, who commanded one of the Austrian corps, was made prisoner. On the 18th, notwithstanding the check sustained by the Duke of Ragusa on the 16th, victory was still on the side of the French, when the whole of the Saxon army, with a battery of sixty guns, occupying one of the most important positions of the line, passed over to the enemy,

Digitized by Google

and turned its artillery on the French ranks. Such unlooked-for treachery was likely to cause the destruction of the French army, and to transfer all the glory of the day to the Allies. The Emperor galloped forward with half his guard, repulsed the Swedes and Saxons, and drove them from their positions. This day (the 18th) was now ended: the enemy made a retrograde movement along the whole of his line, and bivouacked in the rear of the field of battle, which remained in the possession of the French. In the night the French army made a movement, in order to take its position behind the Elster, and thus to be in direct communication with Erfurt, whence were expected the convoys of ammunition that were so much wanted. In the engagements of the 16th and 18th, the French army had fired more than 150,000 discharges of cannon. The treason of several of the German corps of the Confederation, who were seduced by the example of the Saxons on the preceding day, the destruction of the bridge of Leipsic, which was blown up by mistake, occasioned the French army, though victorious, to experience the losses which usually result from the most disastrous engagements. The French recrossed the Saale by the bridge of Weissenfeld: they intended to rally their forces, and await the arrival of the ammunition from Erfurt, which had abundant supplies. Intelligence was now received of the Austro-Bavarian army,

Digitized by Google

which by forced marches had reached the Maine. It was necessary therefore to repair thither, in order to come up with the Bavarians; and on the 30th of October the French fell in with them, ranged in order of battle before Hanau and intercepting the Frankfort high-road. The Bavarian force, though numerous and occupying fine positions, was completely routed, and driven beyond Hanau, which was in the possession of Count Bertrand. General Wrede was wounded. The French forces continued their movement with the view of falling back behind the Rhine, and they re-crossed the river on the 2nd of November. A parley ensued: Baron de Saint-Aignan repaired to Frankfort, where he had conferences with Counts Metternich and Nesselrode and Lord Aberdeen, and he arrived at Paris with proposals for peace on the following bases:—That the Emperor Napoleon should renounce the Protectorate of the Confederation of the Rhine, Poland, and the departments of the Elbe; but that France should retain her boundaries of the Alps and the Rhine, together with the possession of Holland, and that a frontier line in Italy should be determined upon, for separating France from the States of the House of Austria. The Emperor agreed to these bases; but the Congress of Frankfort, like that of Prague, was merely a stratagem designed in the hope that France would reject the terms which were proposed. It was

Digitized by Google

wished to have a new subject for a manifesto to operate on the public mind; for at the moment when these conciliatory propositions were made, the Allied army was violating the neutrality of the cantons, and entering Switzerland. However, the Allies at last developed their real intentions; they named Chatillon-sur-Seine, in Burgundy, as the seat of the Congress. The battles of Champ-Aubert, Montmirail, and Montereau, destroyed the armies of Blucher and Witgenstein. No negotiations took place at Chatillon; but the coalesced powers presented an *ultimatum*, the conditions of which were as follows:

1st, That France should surrender the whole of Italy, Belgium, Holland, and the departments of the Rhine; 2nd, that France should return to her limits as they existed previously to 1792. The Emperor rejected this *ultimatum*. He consented to sacrifice Holland and Italy to the circumstances in which France was then placed; but he refused to resign the limits of the Alps and the Rhine, or to surrender Belgium, and particularly Antwerp. Treason secured the triumph of the Allies, notwithstanding the victories of Arcis and Saint-Dizier. Hitherto the Allies had intimated no design of interfering in the internal affairs of France: this is proved by the *ultimatum* of Chatillon, signed by England, Austria, Russia, and Prussia. At length, however, some of the returned emigrants, excited by the presence of

Digitized by Google

the Austrian, Russian, and Prussian armies, in whose ranks they had long borne arms, imagined that the moment had arrived in which their dreams were to be realized: some mounted the white cockade, and others displayed the cross of Saint-Louis. This conduct was disapproved by the Allied Sovereigns; and it was even censured by Wellington at Bourdeaux, though in reality he secretly favoured all who endeavoured to raise the ensigns of the House of Bourbon. In the transactions which detached Prussia from her alliance with France, and bound her to Russia by the treaty of Kalisch; in the treaty which united Austria with the coalition; in the diplomatic proceedings public and private, which took place down to the treaty of Chatillon; and even in that which was made in France, in 1814, the Allies never made any reference to the Bourbons.

The VIIth, VIIIth, and IXth Chapters shew that the Bourbons after their return ought to have commenced a fifth dynasty, and not to have endeavoured to continue the third. The first course would have rendered all easy, the second has involved every thing in difficulty.

The Xth Chapter closes with a passage of a few lines which forcibly describes the magical effect of the Emperor's return on the 20th of March. These last chapters contain the most nervous and energetic writing, but the applications are direct, and indeed often personal. I have suppressed

Digitized by Google

the details because I wish not to afford any ground for my being accused of bringing forward a hostile statement. Time, which modifies all things, will render this work merely an historical document, which is the only light in which I wish it to be considered here, as well, indeed, as all works of a similar nature that I may think it necessary to quote. I have written in France and other countries, under different laws and circumstances, and I have always found the liberty of the press existing.

I hope to experience its influence on the present occasion, although my subject be one of a most delicate nature. I now look forward to the speedy termination of my voyage; the port is within sight, and I hope to reach it safely, in spite of all the shoals I may encounter.

My domestic affairs.—The Emperor's views in his munificence.

9th—10th. The Emperor passed a bad night. He made me be called early in the morning. When I went to him, he told me that he was half dead, that he had had no rest, and was feverish. He has continued very ill for these two days, and has reclined almost constantly on his couch, which in the evenings is drawn near the fire. He has been unable to eat, and has drunk nothing but warm lemonade. I have been in continual

Digitized by Google

attendance on him during these two days; he has enjoyed a little sleep at intervals, and the rest of the time he has spent in conversing with me upon various subjects. He spoke of the expense of giving parties in Paris; and passing from that subject to my domestic affairs, he expressed a wish that I should make him acquainted with the minutest details on that point.

I told him that my income had amounted to only 20,000 francs a year, 15,000 of which were derived from my own property, and 5,000 from my salary as a counsellor of state. On hearing this he exclaimed: "You must have been mad! "How could you venture to approach the "Tuileries with so straitened an income? The "expenses of attending the court were enor- "mous!"—"Sire," I replied, "I contrived to "keep up my dignity as well as the rest: and "yet I never solicited any thing from your Majes- "ty." The Emperor observed, "I do not say you "did; but you must have been ruined in less "than four or five years."—"No, Sire," I rejoined, "I had been an emigrant during the greater part "of my life; I had lived amidst privations, and "with a few exceptions I still subjected myself "to them. It is true that in spite of all my eco- "nomy I ran through 7 or 8000 francs of my ca- "pital every year. But I calculated thus:—it was "well known that every person about you must, "by dint of zeal and attention to their duties,

Digitized by Google

"sooner or later, attract your notice, and that "he who once gained your favour, might consider his fortune made. I had still four or five "years left to try this chance; at the expiration "of which, if fortune did not smile on me, I was "determined to renounce the illusions of the "world, and to retire from the capital with an income of ten or twelve thousand livres; poor "enough, to be sure, but, nevertheless, richer than "ever I had been in Paris."—"Well," said the Emperor, "your scheme was not a bad one, and "the moment had just arrived when you would "have been indemnified for all your losses. I was "just about to do something for you, and it was "wholly your own fault that you did not make "a more rapid and brilliant fortune. I believe I "have told you before, that you did not know "how to avail yourself of favourable opportunities "for securing your own advancement."

This conversation led us to speak of the enormous sums which the Emperor had lavished on the persons about him, and, gradually becoming animated, he said:—"It would be difficult to "estimate all that I bestowed in this way. I "might, on more than one occasion, have been "accused of profuseness, and I am grieved to see "that it has been of little use in any respect. "There must certainly have been some fatality "on my part, or some essential defect in the "individuals whom I favoured. What a diffi-

Digitized by Google

"culty was I placed in! It cannot be believed "that my extravagance was caused by personal "vanity. To act the part of an Asiatic monarch "was not a thing to my taste. I was not actu- "ated either by vanity or caprice; every thing "was with me a matter of calculation. Though "certain individuals might be favourites with "me, yet I did not lavish my bounty on them "merely because I liked them: I wished to "found, through them, great families, who might "form rallying points in great national crises. "The great officers of my household, as well as "all my ministers, independently of their enor- "mous salaries, often received from me handsome "gratifications,—sometimes complete services of "plate, &c. What was my object in this pro- "fuseness? I required that they should maintain "elegant establishments, give grand dinners and "brilliant balls!—And why did I wish this? "In order to amalgamate parties, to form new "unions, to smooth down old asperities, and to "give a character to French society and manners. "If I conceived good ideas, they miscarried in "the execution: for instance, none of my chief "courtiers ever kept up a suitable establish- "ment. If they gave dinners, they invited only "their party friends; and when I attended their "expensive balls, whom did I find there? All "the Court of the Tuileries: not a new face; "not one of those who were offended at the new

Digitized by Google

" system—those sullen malcontents, whom a little
" honey would have brought back to the hive.
" They could not enter into my views, or did not
" wish to do so. In vain I expressed displeasure,
" intreated and commanded: things still went
" on in the same way. I could not be every-
" where at once, and they knew that;—and yet
" it was affirmed that I ruled with a rod of iron.
" How, then, must things go under gentle sove-
" reigns?"

Removal of the Emperor's bed.—Anecdote of a Gascon soldier.—The Guards of the Eagle.

11th.—The Emperor continued unwell. I found him very low-spirited. He had ordered the situation of his bed to be changed—that bed, so long the constant companion of his victories, was now a couch of sickness. He complained that it was too small for him, that he could hardly turn himself in it; but his chamber would not have afforded room for a longer one. He ordered the camp-bed to be carried into his cabinet, and placed beside a couch; so that the two combined formed a bed of tolerable size. To what an extremity is he reduced! The Emperor stretched himself on his sofa, and entered into conversation, which revived him a little. Speaking of his accession to the Consulship, and of the dreadful disorders which he found existing in all the branches of the

Digitized by Google

public service, he said that he had been compelled to adopt numerous measures of reform, which caused a great outcry, but which had not a little contributed to strengthen the bonds of society. These measures extended to the army, among the officers, and even among the generals, who, he said, had become such, Heaven knows how. Here I took the liberty to relate an anecdote which had at one time afforded great amusement to the circle in which I moved. One of my friends, (who was as dissatisfied with the then existing government as I was myself,) travelling in one of the small Versailles diligences with a soldier of the guard, maliciously excited him to express his opinions. The man complained that every thing went wrong, because it was required that a soldier should know how to read and write before he could be advanced from the ranks. "So you see," he exclaimed, "the *tic* "*has returned again.*"* This phrase pleased us, and was often repeated among us. "Well," observed the Emperor, "what would your "soldier have said when I created the Guards "of the Eagle? That measure would, doubt- "less, have re-established me in his good "opinion. I appointed two sub-officers to "be the special guards of the eagle in every "regiment, one of whom was placed on either

* *Tic*, is the French term for any bad habit.

Digitized by Google

" side of the standard; and lest their ardour in " the midst of the conflict might cause them to " lose sight of the only object which they ought " to have in view, namely, the preservation of the " eagle, they were prohibited from using the " sabre or the sword: their only arms were a " few braces of pistols; their only duty was " coolly to blow out the brains of the enemy " who might attempt to lay hands on the eagle. " But, before a man could obtain this post, he " was required to prove that he could neither " read nor write, and of course you guess the rea- " son why." " No, Sire." " Why, simpleton! " Every man who has received education is sure " to rise in the army, but the soldier who has " not these advantages, never attains advance- " ment except by dint of courage and extraordi- " nary circumstances,"* &c.

As I was in the humour for gossiping, I related

* At the moment of submitting the present publication to press, I happened by chance to mention the circumstance stated above to two or three military men, who told me that they were not aware of the institution of the guards alluded to by the Emperor, without however pledging themselves that none such existed. I cannot take upon me to decide whether these individuals were ignorant of the fact, or whether I was myself mistaken in supposing the Emperor to have stated that he had actually done that which he merely declared his intention of doing. Such an error is, after all, but too probable, and I am far from wishing it to be supposed, that I have not committed many such errors. I have been careful to make known the

Digitized by Google

another anecdote, which had also produced merriment in the saloons of Paris. It was said that a regiment having lost its eagle, Napoleon harangued the men on the subject, and expressed great indignation at the dishonour they had brought upon themselves by suffering their eagle to be taken. "But we tricked the enemy," exclaimed a Gascon soldier, "they have only got the staff, for here is the *cuckoo* in my pocket;" and he produced the eagle. The Emperor laughed and said, "Well, I could not venture to affirm that "this circumstance, or something very like it, "did not actually take place. My soldiers were "very much at their ease and made very free "with me; often addressing me familiarly by the "pronoun *thou*."

I mentioned having heard that on the eve of the battle of Jena, or some other great engagement, as Napoleon was passing a particular station, accompanied by a very small escort, a soldier refused to let him pass, and, growing angry when the Emperor insisted on advancing, swore that he should not pass even though he were the *Little Corporal* himself. When the soldier ascertained that it was really the Little Corporal, he was not at all disconcerted. The Emperor observed, "That

---

nature of my materials, and the manner in which they have been collected, in order that the reader may be on his guard against mistakes; and the same reason induces me so frequently to allude to this subject.

Digitized by Google

" was because he felt the conviction of having " done his duty; and indeed the fact is, that I " passed for a terrible tyrant in the saloons, and " even among the officers of the army; but " not among the soldiers: they possessed the " instinct of truth and sympathy, they knew me " to be their protector, and, in case of need, their " avenger."

The Emperor continues unwell. — Horrible Provisions, execrable Wine, &c.

12th.—To-day the Emperor, although no better than he had been for some days past, determined, as he said, to nurse himself no longer. He dressed and repaired to the drawing-room, where he dictated, for two or three hours, to one of his suite. He had eaten nothing for three days: he had not yet been relieved by the crisis which he expected, and which is usually produced by the singular regimen which he prescribes to himself. He continued drinking warm lemonade. This circumstance led him to inquire how long a person might live without eating, and how far drink might supply the place of solid food. He sent for the *Encyclopedia Britannica*, in which he met with some very curious facts: for instance, he found that a woman had existed for fifty days without solid food, and drinking only twice. Another instance was mentioned of a person who had lived twenty days upon water alone.

Digitized by Google

Somebody observed, in reference to this subject, that Charles XII, out of pure contradiction to the opinions of the individuals who were round him, had abstained from eating for the space of five or six days, at the expiration of which, however, he devoured a turkey and a leg of mutton, at the hazard of bursting. Napoleon laughed at this anecdote, and assured us that he felt no wish to run to such extremes, however attractive the model might be in other respects.

The Emperor played a game at piquet with Madame de Montholon. The Grand Marshal having entered, he left off playing, and asked him how he thought he looked. Bertrand replied, "Only rather yellow;" which was indeed the case. The Emperor rose good-humouredly, and pursued Bertrand into the saloon, in order to catch him by the ear, exclaiming, "Rather "yellow, indeed! Do you intend to insult me, "Grand Marshal? Do you mean to say that "I am bilious, morose, atrabilarious, passionate, "unjust, tyrannical! Let me catch hold of your "ear, and I will take my revenge."

The dinner-hour arrived, and the Emperor for some time was undecided whether he would sit down to table with us, or dine alone in his own room. He decided upon the latter plan, lest, as he said, he should be tempted to imitate Charles XII, if he sat at the great table: but he would have found it difficult to do that. He

Digitized by Google

returned while we were at dinner, and, from the scanty way in which our table was served, he said he really pitied us, for in fact we had scarcely any thing to eat. This circumstance induced the Emperor to resort to a painful extremity: he instantly gave orders that a portion of his plate should be sold every month, to supply what was necessary for our table. The worst thing connected with our wretched dinner was the wine, which had for some days been execrable, and had made us all unwell. We were obliged to send for some to the camp, in the hope that that which had been furnished to us would be changed, as we could not drink it.

In course of a conversation which took place respecting the wine, the Emperor stated that he had received a great number of instructions and directions from chemists and physicians, all of whom had concurred in declaring that wine and coffee were the two things respecting which it was most necessary he should be on his guard. Every professional man had cautioned him to reject both wine and coffee if he experienced any unpleasant flavour in them. Wine, in particular, he was advised to abstain from, if he found any thing *uncommon* in the taste of it. He had always been in the habit of getting his wine from Chambertin, and had therefore, seldom occasion to find fault with it; but the case is different now, if he had refused wine whenever he found any thing

Digitized by Google

uncommon in it, he must have abstained from it for a considerable time past.

Criticism on Prince Lucien's poem of Charlemagne:—Homer.

13th.—The weather is very bad; and it has continued so for three weeks or a month. The Emperor sent for me before one o'clock: he was in his saloon; our Amphitryon had paid me a visit, and I took him to the Emperor, who spoke to him on matters of a private and personal nature.

Napoleon is much altered in his looks.—To-day he wished to set to work. I sent for my son, and he went over the chapters relating to the Pope and Tagliamento. He continued thus employed until five o'clock. He was very low-spirited, and appeared to be suffering much; he retired, saying he would try to eat a little.

Two ships came within sight, one was supposed to be the Eurydice, which was every moment expected to arrive from Europe, having touched at the Cape: they proved to be, however, one of the Company's ships and another vessel that was accidentally passing the island.

The Emperor came to us while we were at dinner; he said he had eaten enough for four persons, and that this had quite restored him.

He wanted something to read, and looked over his brother Lucien's poem of Charle-

Digitized by Google

magne. He analysed the firt canto, and afterwards glanced over a few others: he then examined the subject and the plan of the work, &c. "How much labour, ingenuity and time," he observed, "have been thrown away upon this "book; what a wreck of judgment and taste! "Here are twenty thousand verses, some of "which may be good, for aught I know; but "they are destitute of interest, design, or effect. "It might have been regarded as a compulsory "task, had it been written by a professed author. "Why did not Lucien, with all his good sense, "consider that Voltaire, master as he was of the "French language and the art of poetry, failed "in a similar attempt, though that attempt was "made in Paris, in the midst of the sanctuary. "How could Lucien suppose it was possible to "write a French poem when living at a distance "from the French capital? How could he pre-"tend to introduce a new metre? He has writ-"ten a history in verse, and not an epic poem. "An epic poem should not be the history of a "man, but of a passion or an event. And, then, "what a subject has Lucien chosen! What bar-"barous names has he introduced! Does he "think he has succeeded in raising up the re-"ligion which he conceived to be fallen? Is his "poem intended as a work of re-action? It "certainly bears the stamp of the soil on which "it was written: it is full of prayers, priests, the

Digitized by Google

" temporal authority of the Popes, &c. How " could he think of devoting twenty thousand " lines to absurdities which do not belong to " the present age, to prejudices which he could " not enter into, and opinions which he could " not entertain. What a misapplication of " talent! He might undoubtedly have produced " something more creditable to himself; for " he possesses judgment, facility, and industry. " He was in Rome amidst the richest materials, " and with the means of satisfying the deepest " research. He understands the Italian language; " and as we have no good history of Italy, he " might have written one. His talent, his situa- " tion, his knowledge of affairs, his rank, might " have enabled him to produce an excellent classic " work. It would have been a valuable acquisi- " tion to the literary world, and would have con- " ferred honour on its author. But what is Char- " lemagne? What reputation will it gain? It will " be buried in the dust of libraries, and its author " will obtain at most a few scanty and perhaps " ridiculous notices in biographical dictionaries. " If Lucien could not resist the temptation of " scribbling verses, he should have prepared a " splendid manuscript, embellished with elegant " designs and superb binding, with which he " might now and then have gratified the eyes of " the ladies, occasionally allowing a few quotations " from it to creep into publicity; and finally he

Digitized by Google

"should have left it to his heirs with a severe "prohibition against submitting it to the press. "One might then have been able to understand "his taste."

He laid the work aside, and said: "Let us "turn to the Iliad." My son went to fetch it, and the Emperor read a few cantos, stopping at various passages, in order, as he said, to admire them at his ease. His observations were copious and remarkable. He was so deeply interested in what he read, that it was half-past twelve before he retired to rest.

Scarcity of provisions.—Ridiculous allowance of wine.—Napoleon's return from Elba.

14th.—The terrible state of the weather still continued, and confined us to our miserable huts. We are all indisposed.

The Emperor dictated during a part of the day, and he felt himself much better.

At dinner we had literally scarcely any thing to eat. The Governor continued his successive reductions. The Emperor ordered some additional provisions to be purchased and paid for out of the produce of the sale of his plate.

The Governor intimated that the allowance of wine should continue fixed at one bottle for each individual, the Emperor included. Will it be credited? *One bottle for a mother and her children;* these were the words used in the note.

The Emperor retired to his own apartment, and

Digitized by Google

sent for me to attend him. "I am not inclined "to sleep," said he, "and I sent for you to "help me to keep my vigil; let us have a little "chat together." The turn of the conversation led us to speak of the Island of Elba, of the Emperor's occupations, sensations, and opinions while he continued there; finally, his return to France, and the brilliant success which attended him, and which, he said, he never for a moment doubted. Many observations were repeated, which I have already noted down at different times. At one moment he said: "They "may explain this as they will; but I assure you, "I never entertained any direct or personal ha- "tred of those whose power I subverted. To me "it was merely a political contest: I was asto- "nished myself to find my heart free of animosity, "and, I may add, animated by good will towards "my enemies. You saw how I released the Duke "d'Angoulême; and I would have done the "same by the King, and even have granted him "an asylum of his own choosing. The triumph "of the cause in no way depended on his person, "and I respected his age and his misfortunes. "Perhaps also I felt grateful for a certain degree "of consideration which he in particular had ob- "served towards me. It is true, that at the mo- "ment to which I am now alluding, he had, I "believe, outlawed me and set a price upon my "head; but I looked upon all this as belonging "to the *manifesto style*. The same kind of de-

Digitized by Google

"nunciations were also issued by the Austrian "government, without, however, giving me much "uneasiness; though I must confess that my "dear father-in-law was rather too severe on the "husband of his beloved daughter."

Since I have once more had occasion to mention the Emperor's return from the Island of Elba, this is, perhaps, the proper place to fulfil the promise I made in volumes 1st and 2d, of giving a narrative of the circumstances connected with that extraordinary event. Should the reader inquire the cause of this transposition, I reply that I considered the subject in itself as very delicate, and I had not, in the early part of my Journal, given those proofs of its real spirit which were necessary to banish every suspicion of my being actuated by malevolent motives. Now, however, every one must be convinced that my statements are purely philosophic, moral, and historical; and that, therefore, the task of correcting, or refuting any errors they contain, must be consigned to the historian and the critic. The account of Napoleon's return from Elba is contained in the journals and publications of every country. My narrative, therefore, cannot be expected to present much novelty, except that it was collected from the mouth of Napoleon. I here combine together the statements that fell from him at different times.

Napoleon was residing at the Island of Elba,

Digitized by Google

on the faith of treaties, when he learned that at the Congress of Vienna some idea was entertained of transporting him from Europe. None of the articles of the treaty of Fontainbleau were fulfilled. The public papers informed him of the state of feeling in France, and he accordingly formed his determination. He kept the secret until the last moment*; and, under one pretence or another, means were found for making the requisite preparations. It was not until they were all on board that the troops first conceived a suspicion of the Emperor's purpose: a thousand or twelve hundred men had set sail to regain possession of an empire containing a population of thirty millions!

There were nearly five or six hundred men on board the brig in which Napoleon embarked; this was as many as the crew of a seventy-four.

---

* I must take this opportunity of correcting an error which has occasioned considerable pain to an individual whom I greatly esteem. In the second part of this Journal it is mentioned that *eight days* before the Emperor quitted Elba, General Drouot communicated his intentions to the Princess Borghese, &c. General Drouot, however, affirms that he was not honoured with the Emperor's confidence until the *very last moment*, and that consequently he could not have divulged the secret at the time alluded to. General Drouot must of all others be the best informed, as well as most interested, with regard to these facts; for my own part I have only to observe, that in this instance I merely noted down a current report, which was repeated without any ill design, and which had never been contradicted.

Digitized by Google

They fell in with a French brig of war, with which they spoke. It was asserted that the captain of the French brig recognized them, and at parting exclaimed three times, "*A good voyage to you!*" At all events, the officer who commanded the Emperor's vessel proposed to pursue and capture the brig. The Emperor rejected the idea as absurd; such a proceeding could only have been excusable, had necessity demanded it. "Why," said he, "should I introduce this new "incident into my plan? What advantage "should I derive from its success? To what "risks would its failure expose me!"

After the check they experienced on landing, by the capture of twenty men who had been sent to summon Antibes, a variety of opinions was advanced, and urged with some warmth. Some proposed that they should make immediately an attack and carry Antibes, in order to obviate the evil consequences which might ensue from the resistance of that place and the imprisonment of the twenty men. The Emperor replied, that the taking of Antibes would be no step towards the conquest of France; that, during the brief interval that would be occupied in the execution of that project, a general alarm would be raised throughout the country; and that obstacles would be opposed to them in the only course which it was expedient they should pursue. He added, that time was valuable; and that the ill

Digitized by Google

consequences of the affair of Antibes might be effectually obviated, by marching forward with sufficient speed to anticipate the news. An officer of the guard indirectly hinted that it was not right thus to abandon the twenty men who had been made prisoners; but the Emperor merely observed that he had formed a poor idea of the magnitude of the enterprise; that, if half of his followers were in the same situation, he would not scruple to abandon them in the same manner; and that if they were all made prisoners, he would march forward alone*.

A few hours before nightfall, he landed at the gulf of Juan, where he bivouacked. Soon after, a postilion in splendid livery was conducted to him. It turned out that this man had formerly been in the Imperial household. He had been a domestic of the Empress Josephine, and was now in the service of the Prince of Monaco, who himself had been equerry to the Empress. The postilion, on being questioned by the Emperor, informed him, after expressing his great astonishment at finding him there, that he had just come from Paris, and that he was sure he would every

* It must not, however, be supposed that he shewed any unfeeling disregard of these men; for he directed the war commissioner, Charles Vautier, who was with him, to repair with all haste to Antibes, and to release the prisoners by carrying the garrison. When Vautier set out, he several times called after him, "Take care you do not get yourself made prisoner too."

Digitized by Google

where be joyfully greeted. He affirmed that all along the road, as far as Avignon, he had heard nothing but regret for the Emperor's absence; that his name was publicly echoed from mouth to mouth; and that, when once fairly through Provence, he would find the whole population ready to rally round him. The man added, that his splendid livery had frequently rendered him the object of odium and insult. This was the testimony of one of the common class of society: it was very gratifying to the Emperor, and entirely corresponded with his expectations. The Prince of Monaco himself, on being presented to Napoleon, was less explicit. Napoleon refrained from questioning him on political matters: there were persons present, and he did not wish to incur the risk of eliciting any detail which might create unfavourable impressions on those about him. The conversation therefore assumed a lively character, and turned entirely on the ladies of the Imperial court of the Tuileries, of whom Napoleon made the minutest inquiries.

As soon as the moon had risen, which was about one or two o'clock in the morning, the bivouack broke up, and Napoleon gave orders for proceeding to Grasse. There he expected to find a road which he had planned out during the Empire. However, the design had not been executed, and he was reduced to the necessity of passing through narrow defiles filled with snow.

Digitized by Google

He therefore left behind him, in the charge of the municipality of Grasse, his carriage and two pieces of cannon, which had been brought ashore: this was termed a capture in the bulletins of the time.

The municipality of Grasse was devoted to the royalist party; but the sudden appearance of the Emperor afforded but little time for hesitation, and they came to render their submission to him. The Emperor having passed through the town, halted on a little height at some distance beyond it, where he breakfasted. He was soon surrounded by the whole population of the town; and he treated the multitude as though he had been in the midst of his court circle at the Tuileries. He heard the same sentiments and the same prayers as before he quitted France. One complained of not having received his pension, another solicited an addition to his allowance, a third represented that his cross of the legion of honour had been withheld from him, a fourth prayed for promotion, &c. A number of petitions had already been drawn up and were presented to him, just as though he had come from Paris, and was making a tour through the departments.

Some enthusiastic patriots, who were well acquainted with the state of affairs, secretly informed Napoleon, that the authorities of the place were very hostile to him; but that the mass of the people were devoted to him, and that they only

Digitized by Google

waited until his back should be turned, in order to rid themselves of the *miscreants*. "Be not too "hasty," said the Emperor. "Let them have "the mortification of seeing our triumph, without "having any thing to reproach us with. Be tran- "quil and prudent."

The Emperor advanced with the rapidity of lightning. "Victory," said he, "depended on "my speed. To me France was in Grenoble. "That place was a hundred leagues distant, but "I and my companions reached it in five days,*

---

* March 1st. The Emperor landed at Cannes, at the Gulf of Juan.

2d. Entered Grasse.

3d. Slept at Barême.

4th. Dined at Digne, and slept at Maligeai.

5th. Slept at Gap.

6th. Slept at Corps, and a little beyond the town on the following day, the Emperor harangued and rallied the troops of the 5th. A few hours afterwards he was joined by Labédoyère, at the head of the 7th.

7th. Arrived at Grenoble and halted.

9th. Slept at Bourgoin.

10th. Reached Lyons, where he remained three days.

13th. Slept at Macon. Ney's famous proclamation issued.

14th. Slept at Châlons.

15th. Slept at Autun.

16th. At Avalon.

17th. At Auxeres, where he remained for a day, and was joined by the Prince of the Moskowa.

20th. Arrived at Fontainebleau, at four in the morning, and entered the Tuileries at nine in the evening.

Digitized by Google

" and with what roads and what weather! I en-
" tered the city just as the Count d'Artois, warned
" by the telegraph, was quitting the Tuileries."

Napoleon himself was so perfectly convinced of the state of affairs and of popular sentiment, that he knew his success in no way depended on the force he might bring with him. A piquet of gens-d'armerie, he said, was all that was necessary. Every thing turned out as he had calculated: victory advanced at a charging step, and the national eagle flew from steeple to steeple, till at length it perched on the towers of Notre Dame. The Emperor, however, admitted that at first he was not without some degree of alarm and uncertainty. As he advanced, it is true the whole population enthusiastically declared themselves in his favour; but he saw no soldiers: they were all carefully removed from the places through which he passed. It was not until he arrived between Mure and Vizille, within five or six leagues from Grenoble, and on the fifth day after his embarkation, that he met the first battalion. The commanding officer refused even to hold a parley. The Emperor, without hesitation, advanced alone, and one hundred of his grenadiers marched at some distance from him, with their arms reversed. The sight of Napoleon, his costume, and in particular his grey military great coat, produced a magical effect on the soldiers, and they stood motionless. Napoleon went straight up to a ve-

Digitized by Google

teran, whose arm was covered with *chevrons*, and very unceremoniously seizing him by the whisker, asked him whether he had the heart to fire upon his Emperor. The soldier, with his eyes moistened with tears, immediately thrust the ramrod into his musquet, to shew that it was not loaded, and exclaimed, " See, I could not have done any " harm: our musquets are all unloaded." Cries of *Vive l'Empereur!* resounded on every side. Napoleon ordered the battalion to make a semicircular movement to the right, and all marched on to Paris.

At a little distance from Grenoble, Colonel Labédoyère, at the head of his regiment, came to join the Emperor. The impulse was then confirmed, and the question was nearly decided.

The peasantry of Dauphiny lined the roadsides: they were transported and mad with joy. The first battalion, which has just been alluded to, still shewed some signs of hesitation; but thousands crowded on its rear, and by their shouts of *Vive l'Empereur!* endeavoured to urge the troops to decision; while others, who were in Napoleon's rear, excited his little troop to advance, by assuring them that they would meet with success.

In a valley through which they passed, a very affecting spectacle presented itself: many communes were assembled together, accompanied by their mayors and curates. Amidst the multitude

Digitized by Google

was observed a handsome young man, a grenadier of the Guard, who had been missing since the time of Napoleon's landing, and whose disappearance had given rise to suspicion. He now advanced to throw himself at the Emperor's feet: the tears glistened in his eyes, and he supported in his arms an old man of ninety years of age, whom he presented to the Emperor:—this was his father, in quest of whom he had set off as soon as he landed in France. The Emperor, after his arrival at the Tuileries, ordered a picture to be painted on this subject.

It was night when Napoleon arrived before the walls of Grenoble: his promptitude defeated all the measures that were to have been taken to oppose him. There was no time to cut down the bridges, nor even to put the troops in motion. He found the gates of the city closed, and the colonel commanding the fortress refused to open them. "A peculiar circumstance attending this "extraordinary revolution," said the Emperor, "was that the soldiers were not wanting, to a "certain degree, in discipline and obedience to "their commanding officers: their only resist-"ance was by inert force, of which they availed "themselves as of a right." Thus the first battalion performed all the movements that were ordered, retired and refused to communicate; but the men did not load their guns, and they would not have fired. When Napoleon arrived

Digitized by Google

before Grenoble, the whole garrison, assembled on the ramparts, shouted *Vive l'Empereur!* They shook hands with Napoleon's followers, through the wickets; but they would not open the gates, because the commander had forbidden them to do so. The Emperor found it necessary to force the gates; and this was done under the mouths of ten pieces of artillery, loaded with grape-shot. To complete this union of singular circumstances, the commander of the first battalion and the colonel, who had so openly opposed the Emperor, when asked by him whether he could depend on them, replied that he could;—that their troops had deserted them, but that they would never desert their troops; and that since the men had declared themselves for Napoleon, they also would be faithful to him. The Emperor retained these officers in his service.

In none of his battles did Napoleon ever imagine himself to be in so much danger as at his entrance into Grenoble. The soldiers seemed to turn upon him with furious gestures; for a moment it might have been supposed that they were about to tear him to pieces. But these were merely transports of love and joy. The Emperor and his horse were both borne along by the multitude; and he had scarcely had time to breathe in the inn where he alighted, when an increased tumult was heard in the streets: the inhabitants of

Digitized by Google

Grenoble came to offer him the gates of the city, since they could not present him with the keys.

"Being once established in Grenoble," said the Emperor, "and having attained a positive "power, I could have maintained hostilities had "it been necessary to do so."

Napoleon, at this time, very much regretted not having got his proclamations printed at the Island of Elba; but of course this could not have been done without the risk of promulgating his secret designs. He dictated his proclamations on board the brig, where every man who could write, was employed in copying them. It was found necessary to transcribe them over again during the Emperor's march to Paris, that they might be circulated on the road, so eager was the demand for them. They were then very scarce, often incorrect and even illegible; and yet the necessity of promulgating them was felt at every step, for wherever they were read they produced an immediate and powerful sensation. The events of the last twenty years have contributed in a high degree to enlighten the mass of the people; for, notwithstanding the joy they felt at the Emperor's return, they eagerly enquired what was his object. All were satisfied with the national sentiments contained in the proclamations; and the utmost joy was evinced when it was understood that Napoleon had brought no foreign troops

Digitized by Google

with him. His advance had been so rapid and his movements so unexpected, that a thousand reports had been circulated respecting the amount and nature of his forces. It was said that he was accompanied by Neapolitans, Austrians, and even Turks.

From Grenoble to Paris, Napoleon may be said to have made a triumphal march. During the four days of his stay at Lyons there were continually upwards of twenty thousand individuals assembled before his windows, and their acclamations were incessantly maintained. It would never have been supposed that the Emperor had for a moment been separated from his subjects. He signed decrees, issued orders, reviewed troops, &c.; all military corps, all public bodies, all classes of the citizens, eagerly came forward to offer him their homage and devotedness. Even the national horse guards, a corps composed of men who had shewn themselves most ardent in the Royalist cause, solicited the honour of forming his escort; but these were the only individuals whom the Emperor treated with coldness. "Gentlemen," said he, "I thank you for this offer of your services; "but your conduct towards the Count d'Artois "sufficiently proves how you would act by me, "were fortune to forsake me. I will not subject "you to this new trial." On quitting Lyons, the Count d'Artois, it is said, found only one of the guards willing to follow him to Paris. The Em-

Digitized by Google

peror, whose heart was so keenly alive to every generous sentiment, on hearing of the fidelity of this volunteer, ordered the decoration of the legion of honour to be presented to him.

At Lyons Napoleon issued orders, through the medium of proclamations, with all that precision, firmness, and confidence, which usually attend established and uninterrupted power. His conduct indicated no trace of the terrrible reverses he had so lately sustained, or the great risks he had yet to encounter. If it were possible to mention every circumstance that took place, I could relate a very pleasant private anecdote indicative of the calmness of mind evinced by Napoleon, during the great crisis which was about to change the face of France and to rouse all Europe.

As soon as the Emperor quitted Lyons, he wrote to inform Ney, who, with his army, was at Lons-le-Saunier, that he must immediately march with his forces to join him. Ney, amidst the general confusion, abandoned by his troops, confounded by the Emperor's proclamations, the addresses of Dauphiny, and the defection of the garrison of Lyons, overpowered by the enthusiasm of the people of the surrounding provinces —Ney, the child of the Revolution, yielded to the general impulse, and issued his famous order of the day. But the recollection of the events of Fontainebleau induced him to write to the Em-

Digitized by Google

peror, informing him, that in his recent conduct he had been guided principally by a view to the interests of his country; and that being convinced of having forfeited all claim to Napoleon's confidence, he solicited permission to retire from the service. The Emperor again wrote, desiring that he would immediately come and join him, and that he would receive him as he had done the day after the battle of Moscow. Ney, on presenting himself before the Emperor, was much embarrassed; and repeated, that if he had lost his confidence, he asked for nothing but to be reduced to the rank of one of his grenadiers. "Certainly," said the Emperor, "he had be-" haved very ill to me; but how could I forget " his brilliant courage, and the many acts of " heroism that had distinguished his past life! " I rushed forward to embrace him, calling him " the '*bravest of the brave*'—and from that mo-" ment we were reconciled."

The Emperor posted nearly all the way from Lyons to Paris. He no where experienced opposition, and no fighting took place. Literally speaking, his presence produced merely a theatrical change of scene. His advance guard was composed of the troops who happened to be before him on the road, and to whom couriers were sent forward. Thus Napoleon entered Paris, escorted by the very troops who in the morning had been sent out to oppose him.

Digitized by Google

A regiment posted at Montereau, spontaneously crossed the bridge, repaired to Melun and charged a party of the body guards who were stationed at the latter place: this circumstance, it is said, occasioned the sudden departure of the Royal family.

The Emperor frequently told us that if he had chosen, he might have brought with him to Paris two millions of peasants. On his approach the people every where rose in a mass; and he often repeated that there was no conspiracy except that of opinion.

On the day after Napoleon's arrival at the Tuileries, some one having remarked to him that his life was a succession of prodigies, but that the last surpassed all the rest, I heard him say in reply, that his only merit in this instance, consisted in having formed a just opinion of the state of affairs in France, and in having been able to penetrate into the hearts of Frenchmen. At another time he said to us, when conversing on this subject: "If I except Labédoyère, who "flew to me with enthusiasm and affection, and "another individual who freely rendered me im-"portant services, nearly all the other generals "whom I met on my route evinced hesitation "and uncertainty; they yielded only to the im-"pulse of their troops, if indeed they did not "manifest a hostile feeling towards me.

"It is now clear to every one," said he, "that

Digitized by Google

" Ney quitted Paris quite devoted to the King,
" and that, if he turned against him a few days
" afterwards, it was because he thought he could
" not do otherwise.

" I was so far from relying at all on Massena,
" that, on my landing in France, I felt it necessary
" to get past him with all speed; and on my
" asking him some time after, at Paris, how he
" would have acted, had I not left Provence so
" precipitately as I did, he was frank enough to
" reply that he should feel some embarrassment
" in answering me; but that the course I had
" pursued was, at all events, the safest, and the
" best.

" Saint-Cyr found himself in danger by at-
" tempting to restrain the soldiers under his
" command.

" Soult confessed to me that he had conceived
" a sincere regard for the King, so much he ad-
" mired his government; and he would not return
" to my service until after the *Champ de Mai*.

" Macdonald never made his appearance, and
" the Duke of Belluno followed the King to Ghent.
" Thus, " said he," if the Bourbons have reason to
" complain of the complete desertion of the sol-
" diers and the people, they certainly have no
" right to reproach with infidelity the chiefs of
" the army, those pupils or even leaders of the
" Revolution, who, in spite of five and twenty
" years' experience, proved themselves, in this

Digitized by Google

"instance, mere children in politics. They could "neither be looked upon as emigrants nor pa- "triots!"

Napoleon seemed instinctively attached to his grand principle of acting only on masses and by masses. Both at the commencement of the enterprise, and after his landing in France, he was repeatedly urged to treat with some of the authorities, but he constantly returned the same excellent answer: "If I still hold a place in the "hearts of the people, I need concern myself "but little about individuals in authority, and "if I could only rely on the latter, what service "could they render me in opposing the great "mass?"

The following fact will shew how little communication Napoleon had maintained with the capital. On the morning of his entry into Paris, after his return from the Isle of Elba, a hundred and fifty half-pay officers quitted Saint-Denis, where they had been stationed by the Princes, and marched to the capital, bringing with them four pieces of artillery. They were met on the road by some generals, who placed themselves at their head; and the little troop thus proceeded to the palace of the Tuileries, where they assembled together the heads of the different departments of the ministry, who all agreed to act in the name of the Emperor. Thus Paris was tranquilly governed that day by the torrent of opinion and

Digitized by Google

the transport of private affections. None of the great partisans of the Emperor, none of his former ministers having received any communication from him, dared to sign an order, or assume any responsibility. The public papers would not have appeared next day but for the zeal of private individuals, who spontaneously and without authority filled them with expressions of the feelings by which they were animated, and with the statements of passing events. In the same manner Lavalette took possession of the posts. Paris was that day without police and without government, and yet never did greater tranquillity prevail in the capital.

The Emperor entered the Tuileries about nine o'clock in the evening, with an escort of a hundred horse, just as if he had come from one of his country residences. On alighting, he was almost squeezed to death by a crowd of military officers and citizens, who thronged around him, and fairly carried him in their arms into his saloon. Here he found dinner ready, and he was just sitting down to table, when the officer who had been despatched in the morning to Vincennes to summon the fortress, arrived. He brought intelligence of the capitulation of the commandant, whose only conditions were, that he should receive a passport for himself and his family.

It is a very singular circumstance, that on the

Digitized by Google

morning after the Emperor's arrival at the Tuileries, while a messenger had gone out to procure a tri-coloured flag, one was formed at the pavilion Marsan, during the search that was made through the castle. This flag was immediately hoisted. It was quite new, and larger than the usual size. No one could guess how the standard had got into the Tuileries, and for what purpose it had been intended.

In fact, the more light there is thrown on the subject, the more evident it must be that there was no other conspiracy than that of the nature of things. Party-spirit alone can seek in the present age to raise a doubt on this point; history will have none.

A few days after Napoleon's removal to Longwood, his return from Elba became the subject of conversation among the officers who were presented to him, when one of these individuals observed that that astonishing event presented to the eyes of Europe the contrast of all that was most feeble and most sublime. The Bourbons abandoning a monarchy, and flying on the approach of a single man, who by his own individual efforts boldly undertook the conquest of an empire. "Sir," said the Emperor, "you are "mistaken, you have taken a wrong view of the "matter. The Bourbons were not wanting in "courage; they did all they could. The Count "d'Artois flew to Lyons; the Duchess d'Angou-

Digitized by Google

" leme proved herself an amazon in Bourdeaux, " and the Duke d'Angouleme offered as much " resistance as he could. If, in spite of all this, " they could attain no satisfactory object, the " fault must not be attributed to them, but to " the force of circumstances. The Bourbons, " individually, could do no more than they really " did; the contagion had spread in every di- " rection."

Poem of Charlemagne.—The brothers and sisters of the Emperor who have become authors.

15th.—To-day the Emperor took advantage of a short interval of fine weather to take a walk to the Company's garden. I was alone with him. I made certain representations to him, after which, I ventured to suggest some ideas, but he rejected them as absurd. " Go, my dear Las " Cases," said he; " you are a *simpleton*. But " be not offended at the epithet," he added, " I " do not apply it to every one; with me it is " nearly synonimous with an honest man."

After dinner, the Emperor attempted to read a part of the poem of Charlemagne, which he had taken up yesterday evening, and again laid aside. This evening, like the two preceding ones, was divided between Charlemagne and Homer. The latter the Emperor said he read for the sake of recruiting his spirits, and he again resumed his

Digitized by Google

censure on Prince Lucien, and his admiration of Homer.

Some one present informed the Emperor that Lucien had ready for the press another poem, similar to his Charlemagne, to be entitled "Charles Martel in Corsica." It was added that he had likewise written a dozen tragedies. "Why, the "devil's in him," exclaimed the Emperor.

He was then informed that his brother Louis was the author of a novel. "His work may pos- "sess spirit and grace," said he, "but it will "not be without a mixture of sentimental meta- "physics, and philosophic absurdity."

It was mentioned that Princess Eliza had likewise written a novel, and that even Princess Pauline had produced something in literature. "Yes," said the Emperor, "as a heroine perhaps, but not "as an authoress. At that rate," continued he, "all my brothers and sisters must be authors ex- "cept Caroline. The latter, indeed, in her child- "hood was regarded as the fool and the Cinderella "of the family; but she grew up to be a very "beautiful and a very clever woman."

Want of Provisions.—Gay Sophistry.—On Impossibilities.

16th.—In the morning my servant came to tell me that there was neither coffee, sugar, milk, nor bread, for breakfast. Yesterday, some hours before dinner, feeling hungry, I asked for a mouthful of bread, and was told that there was

Digitized by Google

none for me. Thus we are denied the very necessaries of life. This fact will scarcely be credited, and yet I have stated nothing but the truth. The weather has now become fine. For some time the Emperor has been unable to walk out; but to-day he went into the garden, and he afterwards ordered the calash with the intention of taking his usual drive, which had been so long suspended. As we were walking about, Madame de Montholon drove away a dog that had come near her.—"You do not like dogs, Madam?" said the Em-"peror.—"No, Sire."—"If you do not like dogs, "you do not like fidelity; you do not like those "who are attached to you; and, therefore, you "are not faithful."—"But .... but ...." said "she—"But .... but ...." repeated the Emperor, "where is the error of my logic? Refute "my arguments if you can!"

One of the suite having a few days ago proposed making some chemical experiments, the Emperor enquired whether he had obtained success. The other complained of not having the necessary apparatus. "A true child of the Seine," said Napoleon, "an absolute Parisian cockney! Do "you think you are still at the Tuileries? True "industry does not consist in executing by known "and given means; the proof of art and genius is "to accomplish an object in spite of difficulties, "and to find little or no *impossibility*. But what "do you complain of? The want of a pestle,

Digitized by Google

" when the spar of any chair might answer your " purpose? The want of a mortar? Any thing " is a mortar that you choose to convert to that " use; this table is a mortar; any pot or kettle " is a mortar. Do you think you are still in " the Rue Saint-Honoré, amidst all the shops in " Paris?"

The Grand Marshal here remarked that this circumstance reminded him of something that had occurred the first time he had the honour of being presented to Napoleon, and of the first words he had received from him. When Bertrand was about to leave the army of Italy, to proceed on a mission to Constantinople, the young General, perceiving that he was an officer of engineers, gave him a commission relative to that department. "On my return," said Bertrand, "I came " up with you at a short distance from head- " quarters, and I informed you that I had found " the thing impossible. On this your Majesty, " whom I had addressed with great diffidence, " said with the most familiar air—'But let us " see how you set to work, Sir: that which " you found impossible may not be so to me.' " Accordingly," continued Bertrand, "when I " mentioned the means by which I had proposed " to execute what your Majesty wished, you " immediately substituted others. In a few mo- " ments I was perfectly convinced of the supe- " riority of your Majesty's plans; and this cir-

Digitized by Google

" cumstance furnished me with sentiments and " recollections which have since proved very " useful to me."

The Emperor retired to rest early. We observe that he is very much altered in his looks, particularly since his last illness. He grows very weak, and feels fatigued after two turns round the garden.

Statistical Calculation.—Population of the Israelites in Egypt.

17th—18th. The fine weather has now completely set in. The Emperor went into the garden, attended by all his suite. After walking about for a short time, he proceeded to the wood.

On his return from his walk, we all breakfasted together under the tent; and the weather being very favourable, the Emperor expressed his wish to take a drive in the calash.

About five o'clock he desired me to attend him in his closet, to assist in searching for some documents on the interior of Africa, in the neighbourhood of Egypt. This is a point on which he has been engaged for some days past, as he intends to make it the subject of some chapters in his Campaign of Egypt.

He complained of being unwell, and desired me to order some tea for him. This was some-

Digitized by Google

thing extraordinary. The Grand Marshal soon after came to take my place in writing from his dictation.

After dinner, the Emperor was engaged with the pen in his hand, in investigating the comparative production of the soils of Egypt and France. He found the production of France to be greatly inferior to that of Egypt. This calculation was made from Peuchet's "Statistical Estimates of France." The Emperor was satisfied with the result at which he had arrived; it corresponded with the opinion he had previously formed. This naturally gave rise to the consideration of several other subjects; for instance, what was the probable and possible population of Egypt in ancient times?—what might have been the population of the Israelites, if, during the short period that they remained in captivity, they had increased to the degree mentioned in Scripture? &c. The Emperor desired me to present to him next day something on this latter subject. A great deal was said on the probabilities of human life, the tables of which were also found in Peuchet's work; and on this subject the Emperor made some very ingenious, novel, and striking remarks.

I presented to the Emperor the calculation I had made on the problem which he had submitted to me on the preceding day. The result

Digitized by Google

surprised him not a little; and it furnished a subject for considerable dissertation. The following is the substance of what I presented to him.

The Israelites remained two hundred years in Egypt; during which time we may calculate on ten generations. They married early, and their marriages were very fruitful. I supposed the children of Jacob, the twelve chiefs of tribes, to be all married; I also supposed each of them to have had the same number of children, or six couples, and so on in succession. The tenth generation would then have amounted to two milliards, 480,064,704 individuals. But the ninth generation and even the eighth was still in existence. Hence what an awful number of cyphers. However, an ample deduction may be made from the number of children, allowing for the mortality occasioned by accidents, disease, &c. and it will always remain a certainty that no calculation can be brought to refute the account of Moses. The Emperor amused himself for a considerable time in detecting and shewing the errors of my reasoning.

During dinner he exercised himself in English, by asking my son questions, in that language, in history and geometry. After dinner the Emperor took up the Odyssey, the reading of which afforded a treat to us all.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor alters visibly, and loses his Strength.—Sale of his Plate.

19th.—Napoleon spent the morning in collecting information on the sources of the Nile, from the works of several modern authors, viz. Bruce, &c. . . . I assisted him in this labour. At three o'clock he dressed and went out. The weather was tolerably fine. He ordered the calash, and then went into the wood on foot, and we walked till we came within sight of the Signal Hill. He conversed with me respecting our moral position, and the vexations which even some circumstances arising from our intimacy with him could not fail to cause him. The calash came up with us, and Monsieur and Madame Montholon were in it. The Emperor was very glad of this, as he said he did not feel strong enough to walk back to the house. He evidently grows feeble, his step becomes heavy and lagging, and his features alter. His resemblance to his brother Joseph is now striking; so much so, that, on going to meet him the other day in the garden, I could have sworn it was Joseph, until the very moment when I came close up with him. Others have remarked the likeness, as well as myself; and we have often said, that, if we believed in the *second sight* of the Scotch Highlanders, we should be inclined to expect that something extraordinary would happen to Joseph or to the Emperor.

Digitized by Google

On our return the Emperor examined a large basket full of broken plate, which was to be sent next day to the town. This was to be for the future the indispensable compliment for our monthly subsistence, in consequence of the late reductions of the Governor.

We knew that captains of the East India Company had offered as much as a hundred guineas for a single plate. This circumstance induced the Emperor to order the arms to be erased and the pieces to be broken, so as to leave no trace of the plate having belonged to him. All the dish-covers were topped with small eagles of massive metal; these were the only things he wished to save, and he had them put by. These last fragments were the objects of the wishes of every one of us; we looked upon them as relics. There was something religious, and at the same time mournful, in this feeling.

When the moment had come for breaking up this plate, it had produced a most painful emotion and real grief amongst the servants. They could not without the greatest reluctance bring themselves to apply the hammer to these objects of their veneration. This act upset all their ideas; it was to them a sacrilege, a desolation. Some of them shed tears on the occasion. After dinner the Emperor continued the Odyssey, and afterwards read some passages of "Navigation," by Esmenard, with whose poetry he was pleased.

Digitized by Google

Fresh vexation from the Governor.—Topography of Italy.

20th.—The Emperor sent to wake me before eight o'clock, to go and join him with the calash in the wood, where he was already walking with M. de Montholon, conversing about the household expenses of the establishment. The weather had at last become fine once more, it was like a delightful morning of spring. We took two turns.

We have experienced to-day a fresh and inconceivable vexation from the Governor. He has forbidden us to sell our plate, when broken up, to any other person than the one he should point out. What can have been his intention in committing this new act of injustice? To make himself more obnoxious, and to give another instance of the abuse of authority.

The Emperor breakfasted under the tent; immediately after, he dictated the relation of the Battle of Marengo to General Gourgaud. He bade me remain with them and listen. At about twelve o'clock he retired to his apartment to endeavour to rest himself.

Towards three o'clock the Emperor came into my room again. He found my son and myself engaged in comparing and looking over the account of the Battle of Arcole. He knew it was my favourite chapter, and that I called it a canto of the Iliad. He wished to read it again, and

Digitized by Google

expressed himself also pleased with it. The reader will have already seen that account in the third part of this work, where I have introduced it.

The perusal of this account of Arcole awakened the Emperor's ideas respecting what he called *that beautiful spot, Italy*. He ordered us to follow him into the drawing-room, where he dictated to us for several hours. He had caused his immense map of Italy, which covered the greatest part of the drawing-room, to be spread open on the floor, and having laid himself down upon it, he went over it on his hands and his knees, with a compass and a red pencil in his hand, comparing and measuring the distance with a long piece of string, of which one of us held one of the ends. "It is thus," said he to me, laughing at the posture in which I saw him, "that a country should be measured in "order to form a correct idea of it, and lay down "a good plan of a campaign." What he then dictated may serve as the basis of a most excellent piece of political geography on Italy. I here present it to my readers, observing that I have never had an opportunity of laying a fair copy of it before the Emperor, having been carried away from Longwood before this subject was definitively settled.

"NOTE. Italy is one of the finest countries of Europe. It is a peninsula bounded west, south, and east, by the Mediterranean and the Adriatic sea. On the side of the Continent, Italy is bounded

Digitized by Google

by the chain of the Alps, the highest mountains of Europe; whence flow the rivers which form the valley of the Po, and fall into the Adriatic.

"This chain of mountains separates Italy from Switzerland, Germany, and France, forming a semicircle from the north-west to the north-east. This semicircle may be considered as described from Parma taken as a centre, its left extremity passing on the mouth of the Var, the middle of it on Mount Saint-Gothard, and its right extremity on the mouth of the Isonzo. Such are the natural boundaries of the continent of Italy.

"Within these limits are the Swiss bailiwicks, the Valteline, and part of the Tyrol. All these countries are situated on the declivity of the Alps on the side of Italy, and thus form part of Italy, geographically speaking, although they do not belong to it politically. On the other hand the Duchy of Savoy, which belongs to Italy, politically speaking, forms no part of it geographically considered; since it is situated beyond the Alps, and all its rivers flow into the Rhone.

"Towards the east, Mont-Falcone, the county of Goritz, and part of Istria, have always formed part of Italy, though out of the limits of the semicircle. It is true that another natural boundary would be to follow the chain of the Alps of Carniola, which begins below Idria, and extends as far as Fiume.

"Dalmatia, the mouths of the Cataro, &c.

Digitized by Google

which have belonged to the Republic of Venice for many centuries, have always been considered as forming part of Italy; but, in a geographical point of view, they belong to Illyria: it is with them as with Savoy.

" The two great Islands of Sicily and Sardinia also form part of Italy.

" On the west, Italy is separated from France by the Var, Mounts Viso, Genevre, Cenis, Saint-Bernard, and Simplon. It is separated from Switzerland, on the north, by the Simplon and Mount Saint-Gothard: lastly, the Brenner, the pass of Tarvis and the Isonzo, separate Italy from the hereditary states of the House of Austria.

" Italy is on the confines of the French provinces of Provence and Dauphiny, and of the Austrian Provinces of Tyrol, Carinthia, Carniola, and Istria.

" The communication between France and Italy, is by crossing the Var in the neighbourhood of Nice; whence the road of Corniche leads to Genoa, and Florence, and the Col di Tende leads to Turin. Another road of communication between France and Italy, is through Mounts Genevre, Cenis, and the Little Saint-Bernard.

" Switzerland communicates with Italy by the passes of Great Saint-Bernard, of the Simplon, and of Saint-Gothard.

" Germany communicates with Italy through

Digitized by Google

the passes of the Brenner and of Tarvis, and by the various openings formed by the Isonzo.

" The Saint-Gothard is the highest pass of the Alps. From that point the other passes become gradually fewer: thus Mount Saint-Gothard is higher than Mount Brenner; Mount Brenner is higher than the mountains of Cadore; the mountains of Cadore are higher than the pass of Tarvis, and the mountains of Carniola. On the other side, Mount Saint-Gothard is higher than the Simplon; the Simplon than Mount Saint-Bernard; Mount Saint-Bernard than Mount Cenis; and Mount Cenis than the pass of Tende. From this pass the Alps continue to lower and finally terminate at the mountains of Saint-Jaques near Savona, where the Apennines begin. The chain of the Apennines then rises, increasing in height in an inverse progression, and extends the whole length of the Peninsula, to the extremity of the kingdom of Naples. The Apennines are mountains of the second class. Part of their waters fall into the Po, the remainder flows into the Mediterranean and the Adriatic.

" From the mouth of the Var to the mouth of the Isonzo, the diameter of the semicircle, the distance is one hundred and twenty-five leagues of twenty-five to the degree; this would give to the semi-circumference formed by the Alps, if it were regular, one hundred and eighty leagues; but on account of the sinuosities, it is computed at upwards of two hundred and thirty. Thus every

Digitized by Google

point of the Alps is distant from Parma about fifty or sixty leagues.

"From Parma to Rome the distance is eighty leagues, and from Rome to the extremity of the Basilicata, in the gulf of Tarento, ninety-five leagues, and to Reggio, situated at the extremity of the Boot, one hundred and twenty leagues. Thus, from Mount Saint-Gothard to Reggio, the distance is two hundred-and-fifty leagues.

"The fifty leagues from the north to Parma, may be considered as continental, and the remaining two hundred as forming the Peninsula, beginning at Parma. This Peninsula, in its whole extent, is about forty or fifty leagues wide; for from Leghorn to Rimini the distance is fifty leagues; from Teracini to Termoli forty leagues; from Naples to Manfredonia forty leagues; from Monte-Leone to Brindisi sixty leagues.

"From Reggio to Naples the post-map marks one hundred and seventy leagues; from Naples to Rome sixty leagues; together two hundred and thirty; from Rome to Parma ninety-two leagues; from Parma to Mount Saint-Gothard one hundred leagues, making from Saint-Gothard to Reggio, four hundred and twenty-two post leagues. Deducting a tenth from this number, there remain three hundred and eighty leagues; we have only reckoned two hundred and fifty; difference, one hundred and thirty, or one third between the astronomical distance and that

Digitized by Google

measured by the high roads, which must wind round mountains, and pass through large cities; and in the computation of which, the declivities and the difficulties of the road, and the privileges attached to some places and established by the post-masters, must be taken into consideration.

"That part of Italy which lies within the semicircle, contains five thousand square leagues. From the diameter of this semicircle, Italy extends in the shape of a boot, which measures two hundred leagues in length, and forty or fifty in breadth. This gives from Parma to the gulf of Tarento, eight thousand square leagues; Sicily and Sardinia contain two thousand square leagues; total, fifteen thousand square leagues. Thus, nearly two thirds of Italy are situated on a continued line, surrounded on all sides by the Mediterranean and Adriatic seas.

"This singular configuration has unquestionably influenced the destinies of this beautiful country; for if the Peninsula, instead of being forty or fifty leagues wide, had been ninety or one hundred, and only half as long as it is, the central point would have been nearer to all the extremities; there would have been a greater community of interests; the nation occupying a smaller space, and not divided by great distances, would have presented a greater degree of uniformity; it would have resisted more successfully the acts which tended to parcel it; and the force

Digitized by Google

of adherence which has made France, England, and Spain, would have produced the same effect in Italy.

"The extent of coast on the Riviera di Genoa is fifty leagues; that of the Peninsula about two hundred and fifty leagues on each side; that of the base from Reggio to Tarento and beyond, one hundred leagues; which make a total of six hundred and fifty leagues for the whole extent of coasts of the Peninsula of Italy. The coasts of the States of Venice, as far as France, occupy a space of thirty leagues; the coasts of Sicily two hundred and fifty; Sardinia two hundred; the whole extent of coasts of Italy is therefore from eleven to twelve hundred leagues, that is, equal to that of the British Islands, which is also twelve hundred leagues, and nearly double that of France, which is only seven hundred leagues.

"The towns of Nice, Genoa, Leghorn, and all the small towns on the coasts of the two gulfs of Genoa are very populous. The population of Naples and of all the towns of the kingdom, that of Ancona and of all the small towns of Romagna; lastly, the population of Venice, of the coasts of Sardinia, of Cagliari, &c. the population of Palermo, Syracuse in Sicily, form together a very considerable maritime population.

"The roads or harbours of Ventimiglia, Vado, Genoa, Spezzia, Porto-Ferrajo, of the Bay of

Digitized by Google

Naples, of Tarento, Ancona, Venice; those of Istria, Dalmatia, Ragusa, of the mouths of the Cataro, all belong to Italy.

"If all these parts had been united together into one great state, that state would have been one of the maritime powers of the first class. The hemp produced in the valley of the Po; the woods grown in the Apennines and Istria, and the iron of the island of Elba, and of the Brescian, would supply in abundance every thing that is necessary to form the *matériel* of a great naval establishment. Genoa, Pisa, and Venice, were the first maritime powers of Europe in the middle age.

"Italy, bounded by the sea on three of its sides, has only about two hundred leagues of frontier by land, which is less than a third part of the frontier of France; and is defended in front by the strongest barriers that can be opposed to invading nations.

"The population of Italy, including the two great islands, being from seventeen to eighteen millions, she might easily raise an army of three hundred thousand men. In the present state of agriculture in Italy, it would have been difficult for her to procure a sufficient number of horses; but in the middle age she produced many; and if the nation had always remained a military nation, it would have encouraged the breed of horses.

Digitized by Google

"The bravery of the Italian troops at any period cannot be questioned. To prove this assertion, it is sufficient to mention Rome, and the *condottieri* of the middle age, and in our days the troops of the Cisalpine Republic, or of the Kingdom of Italy, &c.

"Destined by her situation and the extent of her coasts to possess the dominion of the Mediterranean, Italy would have no invasion to fear but on the side of the Alps,—a frontier more easily defended than any other in Europe. About twenty forts, large and small, would be sufficient to intercept all the passes of the Alps.

"As long as Italy was left to herself, or that the influence of Germany and of France was only auxiliary and did not master every thing, Italy was divided into three parts, which are her natural geographical divisions.

"1st, On the North.—The valley of the Po, which includes all the countries whose rivers flow into the Po. These countries are on a level, and can communicate one with another: they are the Belgium and Holland of Italy, and Venice is Amsterdam; they are Piedmont, Lombardy, the Legations and the Republic of Venice.

"2d, In the centre of the Peninsula.—On one side Tuscany and the dominions of the Pope west of the Apennines,—that is, the valley of the Arno and the Tiber: on the other side, all the countries situated east of the Apennines, between the

Digitized by Google

valley of the Po and the frontiers of the Neapolitan territory. This division contains, therefore, the Grand Duchy of Tuscany, the Ecclesiastical States, and the Republic of Lucca.

" 3d and last, In the South.—The kingdom of Naples, which has ever formed a distinct geographical and political division of itself.

" In this distribution Romagna must be considered as forming part of northern Italy, because it is a plain in continuation of the plain of the Po.

" These different countries, which form a considerable population professing the same religion, equally favoured by the advantages of a temperate climate, speaking the same language, and having the same literature, must necessarily influence one another, and finally unite into one body, as it has happened with the different kingdoms of Great Britain, the various provinces of Spain, and those of France; and as it will perhaps happen some day with those of Germany. And the Italian countries have had, and still have, more points of resemblance and community between them, than the countries alluded to.

" If this great event were to take place, what town would become the capital of Italy? Italy, from its configuration, has no central town. Would this capital be Rome, Milan, Bologna, or Florence? Genoa and Venice could never expect it; they are situated too near the extremities.

Digitized by Google

1st. *Rome*, from the remembrances connected with her, from her present importance, and from her situation, might aspire to become once more the capital of this beautiful country. As a capital, she would be situated one hundred and thirty leagues from all the points of the frontiers formed by the Alps, on which Italy can be attacked by France or Germany: she would be one hundred leagues distant from the southern extremities of the kingdom of Naples and from the coasts of Sicily, and not quite so far from the coasts of Sardinia. Paris, the capital of France, is sixty leagues from the northern frontiers; forty leagues from the British channel (*la Manche*); one hundred leagues from the Bay of Biscay (*Golfe de Gascogne*); and one hundred and fifty leagues from the Mediterranean. The insalubrity of the air, the sterility of its environs, the want of a large port and of a harbour at a convenient distance, would be the great objections to Rome, taken as a capital.

"2d. If Italy terminated with the Duchies of Parma, Placenza, and Guastalla, that is, if it contained only the valley of the Po, and had no peninsula, then *Milan* would be the natural capital; though it would be a great disadvantage that that town could not have the line of the Po to defend it against invasion from Germany. But on the supposition of the union of all the States of Italy into one body, Milan could never become

Digitized by Google

the capital, being too near the frontiers, where an invasion might take place by land, and too far from the other extremities exposed to the same danger by sea.

"3d. *Bologna* would be infinitely preferable, because in case of an invasion, and of the frontiers being already forced, it would still be defended by the line of the Po, and because its geographical situation, and its canals, enable it to communicate promptly, or with little delay, with the Po, with Leghorn, Genoa, Civita-Vecchia, with the ports of Romagna, and with Ancona and Venice, and because it is much nearer to the coasts of Naples.

"4th. If Italy ended on the confines of the kingdom of Naples, and if part of Naples and of Sicily could come and fill up the vacant space which separates Italy from the island of Corsica, then, and then only, Florence could pretend to become the capital of Italy, because it would be in a central situation.

"In 1796, when the French entered Italy, that fine country was divided into several states.

"1st. The King of Sardinia was master of the county of Nice, of the countries on the left bank of the Var, and of all the passes of the Alps, as far as the Simplon, which separated his dominions from Switzerland. Beyond the Alps he possessed the Duchy of Savoy; but this province, geographically speaking, must be considered as belonging

Digitized by Google

to France. The dominions of the King of Sardinia were divided on the east from Austrian Lombardy, by the Ticino, and bounded south by the highest summit of the Apennines, which separated them from the Republic of Genoa and the Duchy of Parma: their population, including Savoy and the county of Nice, amounted to 2,400,000 inhabitants, which, with Sardinia, formed together a population of nearly 3,000,000: they contained twelve or fifteen fortified towns; an army of 25,000 men in time of peace, and which was increased to double in time of war, by an equal number of militia. The capital was Turin, a fortified town, containing 80,000 inhabitants.

"2d. The Republic of Genoa was separated on the west from the county of Nice by the river Roya. On the north it was separated from the states of the King of Sardinia by the high chain of the Apennines: on the east it was divided from the Duchy of Parma by the same chain of the Apennines, and adjoined the Grand Duchy of Tuscany. On the south it is bounded by the Mediterranean. Its population amounted to 500,000 inhabitants. The town of Genoa contained 100,000 inhabitants; it was a strong town, although its fortifications occupied rather too great an extent of ground.

"3d. The Duchy of Parma, composed of the

Digitized by Google

Duchies of Parma, Placenza, and Guastalla, was separated from Austrian Lombardy by the Po. It was situated between the Republic of Genoa on the south-west, Piedmont on the west, and the Duchy of Modena on the east. Its population amounted to 500,000 inhabitants. The town of Parma contains 40,000 inhabitants. Parma had from about 2500 to 3000 men bearing arms.

"4th. Austrian Lombardy. It was divided from Piedmont on the west by the Ticino, a wide and rapid river; on the north from Switzerland by the Alps; on the south from the Duchies of Parma, Placenza, and Guastalla by the Po; and was bounded on the east by the Venetian States. Its population amounted to 1,100,000 inhabitants. Its capital was Milan, a town containing from 30 to 40,000 inhabitants. Lombardy possessed many fortresses, the principal of which were Mantua and the citadel of Milan.

"5th. The Republic of Venice. It was separated from Bavaria by the Tyrol; from Carinthia by the Noric Alps; and from Carniola by the Isonzo. On the south it was bounded by the Adriatic and the Po, which river separated it from the dominions of the Pope. It possessed on the other side of the Isonzo, Istria, Dalmatia, and the mouths of the Cataro; at the entrance of the Adriatic, Zante, Cephalonia, Cerigo, and Saint-Maura. Its population amounted to 3,500,000 inhabitants. Venice contained 140,000. It pos-

Digitized by Google

sessed several fortresses, such as Peschiera, Porto-Legnago and Palma-Nuovo in Italy; Zara and the mouths of the Cataro in Dalmatia. Its military establishment was upwards of 30,000 men; it had a dock-yard for maritime constructions, and a fleet of from twelve to fifteen ships of fifty-four guns, besides frigates, brigs, and other small craft.

"6th. The Duchy of Modena. A Prince of the House of Este, the last descendant of that ancient family, reigned over Modena, and possessed the Duchies of Modena, Reggio, and Mirandola, which are situated between the Duchies of Parma and of Tuscany, Lombardy, and the dominions of the Pope. The population of the Duchy of Modena amounted to 350,000 inhabitants. Modena is a town containing 20,000 inhabitants. The family of Este became extinct at the death of the old man who then reigned, and the Duchess Beatrix, who was married to one of the Archdukes, was heiress to the Duchy. Modena might have an army of 5 or 6000 men.

"7th. The dominions of the Pope. They were separated from the Republic of Venice by the Po; from the Duchy of Modena by fort Urbino; from Tuscany by the Apennines. They were bounded on the east by the Adriatic, and on the south by the kingdom of Naples. The Pope was master of the mouths of the Po, of the port and citadel of Ancona on the Adriatic, and of the port

Digitized by Google

and fortress of Civita-Vecchia in the Mediterranean. The population of his dominions consisted of 2,400,000 inhabitants; that of Rome amounted to 140,000. His army was from about 6 to 7000 men strong.

"8th. Tuscany. It was possessed by an Archduke of Austria. It was divided from the Republic of Genoa by the Republic of Lucca; from the Duchy of Modena by the Apennines; and was bounded in the west by the Mediterranean. Tuscany contained a population of 1,000,000 of inhabitants. Its capital, Florence, contained 80,000. It possessed the port of Leghorn in the Mediterranean, reckoned 6000 men bearing arms, and had three frigates.

"9th. The Republic of Lucca, lying between Tuscany and the States of the Republic of Genoa, and comprising a population of 100,000 people.

"10th, and lastly. The kingdom of Naples, bounded on the north by the dominions of the Pope, and bathed on every other side by the Mediterranean. This country was divided from Sicily, which is situated opposite to it, by a strait, only two thousand toises * wide. Its population amounted to nearly 6,000,000 inhabitants, including Naples, Sicily, and the small islands under its dependence. The city of Na-

* About two miles and a half—a French *toise* being equal to six English feet and one third.—*Eng. Ed.*

Digitized by Google

ples contained a population of 400,000 inhabitants. The King of Naples could assemble an army of 60 or 80,000 men. He possessed two seventy-fours, and some frigates.

"The whole of Italy was divided between the House of Bourbon and that of Austria. Of all the reigning families which had survived the republics of the middle age, that of Este alone remained."

The celebrated debt of Saint-Domingo.—Inspectors of the Reviews, &c.—Plans of administration, &c.—Gaudin, Mollien, Defermont, Lacuée, &c.—Minister of the Treasury.—Minister Secretary of State.—Importance of their functions.

21st.—Admiral Malcolm called upon me today. He came to take leave of us all; he was to set off the next day for the Cape, and would be two months absent.

We regret the Admiral; his manners, always polite, and a kind of tacit sympathy existing between us, contrast him continually in our mind with Sir Hudson Lowe, who is so little like him.

The Admiral had seen the Emperor, who is also partial to him. They had taken together some turns in the garden, and the Admiral told me he had collected some excellent information respecting the Scheldt and the Nievendip, a maritime establishment in Holland, which was en-

Digitized by Google

tirely unknown to him, and which was founded by Napoleon.

After dinner, the conversation turned upon what the Emperor termed the celebrated debt of Saint-Domingo. It gave rise to the following curious details.—"The administrator of Saint-"Domingo," said the Emperor, "took it into his "head one day to draw from the Cape, without "authority, the sum of sixty millions in bills, on "the treasury in Paris; which bills were all "payable on the same day. France was not "then, and had perhaps never been, rich enough "to meet such a demand. Besides, where and "by what means had the administration of "Saint-Domingo acquired so much credit? The "First Consul could not command any thing like "it in Paris; it was as much as M. Necker could "have done at the time of his greatest popu-"larity. Be that as it may, when these bills "appeared in Paris, where they arrived before "the letters of advice, the First Consul was ap-"plied to from the treasury, to point out what "was to be done. 'Wait for the letters of "advice,' said he, 'in order to learn the nature "of the transaction. The treasury is like a ca-"pitalist; it possesses the same rights, and "should follow the same course. These bills "are not accepted, they are consequently not "payable.' However, the necessary informa-"tion, and the vouchers arrived. These bills

Digitized by Google

" stated value received, but the receipts of the " officers in charge of the chest, into whose " hands the money had been paid, were for " only one tenth, one fifth, one third of the " amount of the respective bills. The trea- " sury, therefore, would only acknowledge and " refund the sum really and *bonâ fide* paid; and " the bills in their tenour were declared to be " false. This raised a great clamour, and pro- " duced a terrible agitation amongst the mer- " chants. A deputation waited upon the First " Consul, who, far from endeavouring to avoid it, " opened the business at once, and asked 'whether " they took him for a child, whether they thought " he would sport thus with the purest blood of " the people, or that he was so indifferent a " guardian of the public interest? What he " refused to give up,' he said, 'did not affect him " personally, did not trench upon his civil list, " but it was public property, of which he was " the guardian, and which was the more sacred " in his eyes on that account.' Then addressing " the two persons at the head of the deputation " he said: 'You, gentlemen, who are merchants, " bankers, men of business, give me a positive " answer. If one of your agents abroad were to " draw upon you for very large sums contrary to " your expectations and to your interests, would " you accept, would you pay his bills?' They " were obliged to admit that they would not.

Digitized by Google

" 'Then,' said the First Consul, 'you, who are " simple proprietors, and in the right of your ma- " jority responsible for your own actions only, you " would wish to possess a right which you refuse " to allow to me, proprietor in the name of all, " and who am in that quality always a minor and " subject to revision! No, gentlemen, I shall " enjoy your privileges in the name and for the " benefit of all; the actual amount received " for your bills shall be repaid you and no " more. I do not ask the merchants to take the " bills of my agents: it is an honour, a mark of " credit to which I do not aspire; if the mer- " chants do take them, it must be at their own " risk and peril; I only acknowledge and con- " sider as sacred the acceptance of my Minister " of the Treasury.' Upon this they again expos- " tulated, and a great deal of idle talk ensued. " They would be obliged, they said, to declare " themselves bankrupts; they had received these " bills for ready money; their agents abroad had " committed the error of taking them, through " respect for, and confidence in the government. " 'Very well,' said the First Consul, 'become " bankrupts. But they did not,' observed the " Emperor, 'they had not received these bills for " ready money, and their agents had not com- " mitted any error.'

" The members of the deputation left the First " Consul, convinced in their own minds of the va-

Digitized by Google

"lidity of his reasons; nevertheless they filled "Paris with their clamours, and with falsehoods, "in misrepresenting the affair altogether.

"This transaction," said the Emperor, "and its "details, explain many other transactions which "have been much spoken of in Paris under the "Imperial administration.

"The commercial world had particularly said, "and repeated, that this proceeding was unex- "ampled; that such a violation of credit was a "thing hitherto unheard of; but to that, the First "Consul replied that he would set the question "at rest by quoting precedents, and he recalled "to their minds the bills of Louis XIV, the liqui- "dations of the Regent, the company of the "Mississippi, the liquidations of the wars of "1763, and of 1782, &c.; and proved to them "that what they contended to be a thing un- "exampled, had been the constant practice of "the monarchy." From this affair the Emperor turned to different branches of the administration. He defended the institution of the post of Inspectors of the Reviews. "It was only through "them that the actual number of men present "could be ascertained; through them alone "had this advantage been obtained, and it was "one of immense importance in the active "operations of war. And these inspectors "were not less useful in an administrative point "of view; for whatever trifling abuses might

Digitized by Google

" exist in the details, and however numerous " these abuses might be, it is on a general prin- " ciple that such things should be considered; " and, in order to estimate fairly the utility of " this institution, it should be asked what other " abuses would have taken place if it had not " existed? For myself," said Napoleon, " I " must say that checking the expenditure, by " trying how much the total number of troops " ought to have cost according to their fixed " rates of pay, I have always found the sum " paid by the treasury to fall short of my esti- " mate. The army, therefore, cost less than it " ought to have cost: what result more bene- " ficial could be required?"

The Emperor quoted the administration of the navy as having been the most regular and the most honest; it had become a *chef-d'œuvre*. " In " that," said he, " consisted the great merit of " *Decrès*." The Emperor considered that France was too large to have only one minister for the administration of the war department. " It " was," he said, " a task beyond the powers of " one man. Paris had been made the centre of " all decisions, contracts, supplies, and organi- " zations; whilst the correspondents of the mi- " nister had been subdivided amongst a number " of persons equal to the number of regiments " and corps. The contrary ought to have been " the case; the correspondences should have

Digitized by Google

"been centered, and the resources subdivided, "by raising them on the spot where they were "required. I had long meditated a plan to "establish in France twenty or twenty-five "military districts, which would have composed "so many armies. There would have been no "more than that number of accountants; these "would have been twenty under-ministers, for "which it would have been necessary to find "twenty honest men. The minister would have "had only twenty correspondents; he would "have centered the whole and conducted the "business with celerity and despatch, &c.

"Messieurs Gaudin and Mollien," said the Emperor, "were of opinion that it was necessary "that public functionaries, into whose hands the "public money was received, public financiers "and contractors, should have very large for- "tunes, that they should have it in their power "to make considerable profits, and openly avow "them, in such a manner as to retain a degree of "consideration which they might be careful not "to endanger; and a reputation of honour, which "they might wish not to compromise. This "could not be otherwise, in order to obtain "from them support, service, and credit in case "of need.

"Another set of men, Defermonts, Lacuée, and "Marbois, thought, on the contrary, that it was "impossible to be too exact, too saving, and too

Digitized by Google

" strict. For my own part, I was inclined to be " of the opinion of the first, considering the views " of the last to be narrow, and such as were ap- " plicable to a regiment, but not to an army; to " the expenses of a private household, but not " to the expenditure of a great empire. I called " them the Puritans and the Jansenists of the " profession."

The Emperor observed that the minister of the treasury, and the minister secretary of state, were two of his institutions on which he most congratulated himself, and from which he had derived the greatest assistance. " The minister of " the treasury concentrated all the resources, and " controuled all the expenses of the empire. " From the minister secretary of state all acts " emanated. He was the minister of ministers, " imparting life to all intermediate acts; the " grand notary of the empire, signing and au- " thenticating all documents. Through the first " I knew, at every moment, the state of my " affairs; and through the second I made known " my decisions and my will in all directions and " every where. So that, with my minister of the " treasury and my minister secretary of state " alone, and half-a-dozen clerks, I would have " undertaken to govern the empire from the " remotest parts of Illyria, or from the banks " of the Niemen, with as much facility as in " my capital."

Digitized by Google

The Emperor could not conceive how affairs could go on with the four or five secretaries of state of our kings. "And indeed how did they "go on?" said he. "Each imagined, executed, "and controuled his own operations. They might "act in direct opposition one to another; for as "the kings only affixed their sign on the mar- "gin of the plans proposed, or authenticated only "the rough draft of their *ordinances*, the secreta- "ries of state could fill them up, or act as they "pleased without fear of any great responsibility. "Add to this that the secretaries of state had the "*griffe**, a contrivance, which they wanted to "make me adopt, but which I rejected as a tool "appropriated to the *Rois fainéans*. Amongst "these ministers, some might have money for "which they had no employment, and others "might be unable to proceed for want of a far- "thing. There was no common centre to com- "bine their movements, provide for their wants, "and direct the execution of their measures."

The Emperor said that a minister secretary of state was exactly suited for kings without talents, but vain, who would want the assistance of a prime minister and not like to own it. "Had "my minister secretary of state been made pre- "sident of the council of state," said he, "he "would have been from that moment a real

* A kind of seal on which a signature is engraved.

Digitized by Google

" prime minister, in the fullest acceptation of the " term; for he would have carried his plans to " the council of state to have them digested into " laws, and would have signed for the Prince. " There can be no doubt that with the manners " and habits of the first race of our kings, or " with princes like them, my minister secre- " tary of state would have become in a very " short time a *Mayor of the Palace* (Maire de " Palais.)"

Revision and recasting of the Chapters on the Army of Italy.

22d.—The Emperor resumed his researches respecting Egypt. He gave me Strabo to look over; it was the edition which he had caused to be made. He commended the care and pains bestowed upon it, and said that it had been his intention to give us, in course of time, editions of all the works of the ancients, through the official medium of the Institute.—Before dinner the Emperor sent for me and my son, and spent at least six hours with us, reading over and recasting the chapters on the Tagliamento, Leoben, and Venice.

All is fine in these chapters on the Campaign of Italy. In that on the Tagliamento we see how one single disposition, made on the banks of that river and hardly noticed, one of those movements which the Emperor calls *the thought of the battle*, must inevitably lead to the gates of Vienna.

Digitized by Google

The chapter on Venice is written after the manner of the ancients. However, the last chapter read, always seems to be that which pleases most, and I have therefore no doubt that my readers will be obliged to me for having made them acquainted with all that I had left in my hands.

I was extremely unwell and very tired, not so much from fatigue occasioned by working, as from bodily indisposition. We amused ourselves this evening by reading the description of Ulysses' departure from the Island of Calypso, and his arrival amongst the Pheacians.

On Sensibility.—On the inhabitants of the East and West; differences observable between them, &c.

23d.—This morning the Emperor conversing in his room, after touching on several subjects, spoke about sentiment, feelings, and sensibility; and having alluded to one of us who, as he observed, never pronounced the name of his mother but with tears in his eyes, he said, "But "is this not peculiar to him? Is this a general "feeling? Do you experience the same thing, "or am I unnatural in that respect? I certainly "love my mother with all my heart; there is no-"thing that I would not do for her, yet if I were "to hear of her death, I do not think that my "grief would manifest itself by even a single tear; "but I would not affirm that this would be the

Digitized by Google

" case if I were to lose a friend, or my wife, or " my son. Is this distinction founded on nature? " What can be the cause of it? Is it that my " reason has prepared me beforehand to expect " the death of my mother as being in the natural " course of events, whereas the loss of my wife, " or of my son, is an unexpected occurrence, a " hardship inflicted by fate which I endeavour to " struggle against? Perhaps also this distinction " merely proceeds from our natural disposition to " egotism. I belong to my mother, but my wife " and my son belong to me." And he went on multiplying the reasons in support of his opinion with his usual fertility of invention, in which there was always something original and striking; but I cannot find any memorandum of them.

It is certain that he was tenderly attached to his wife and his son. Those persons who have served in the interior of his household now inform us how fond he was of indulging his feelings of affection towards his family; and point out some shades in his disposition, the existence of which we were far from suspecting at the time.

He would sometimes take his son in his arms, and embrace him with the most ardent demonstrations of paternal love. But most frequently his affection would manifest itself by playful teazing, or whimsical tricks. If he met his son in the gardens, for instance, he would throw him down or upset his toys. The child was brought

Digitized by Google

to him every morning at breakfast time, and he then seldom failed to besmear him over with every thing within his reach on the table. With respect to his wife, not a day passed without her forming part of his private conversations; if they lasted any length of time, she was sure to come in for a share in them, or to become the subject of them. There is no circumstance, no minute particularity relating to her, which he has not repeated to me a hundred times. Penelope, after ten years' absence, in order to convince herself that she is not deceived, puts some questions to Ulysses which he alone could answer; well! I think that I should not find it difficult to present my credentials to Maria-Louise.

In the course of the conversation in the evening, the Emperor, speaking of different nations, said he only knew of two,—the Orientals and the inhabitants of the West. "The English, the "French, the Italians, &c." said he, "compose "one family, and form the western division; "they have the same laws, the same manners, "the same customs; and differ entirely from the "Orientals, particularly with respect to their "women and their servants. The Orientals have "slaves; our servants are free: the Orientals "shut up their women; our wives share in all "our rights: the Orientals keep a seraglio, but "polygamy has never been admitted in the West "at any period. There are several other dis-

Digitized by Google

" tinctions," said the Emperor; " it is said that " as many as eighty have been reckoned. The " inhabitants of the East and of the West are " therefore," observed the Emperor, " really two " distinct nations:—with the Orientals every " thing is calculated to enable them to watch " over their wives and make sure of them; all " our institutions in the West tend, on the con- " trary, to put it out of our power to watch over " ours, and to make it necessary for us to rely " upon them alone. With us every man who " does not wish to pass for an idiot must have " some occupation; and whilst he is attending " to his business, or fulfilling the duties of his " situation, who will watch for him? We must " therefore, with our manners, rely entirely on " the honour of our women, and place implicit " confidence in them. For my part," added he good-humouredly, " I have had both wives and " mistresses; but it never came into my head to " use any particular precaution to watch over " them, because I thought that it was with these " things as with the fear of daggers and poison " in certain situations of life; the torment of " guarding against them is greater than the dan- " ger we wish to avoid: it is better to trust to " one's fate.

" It is, however, a very great question to de- " cide, which is the best method; though, pro- " bably, not for you, ladies," said he, casting an

Digitized by Google

arch look upon those that were present: "yet it "is certain that it would be a very great error to "suppose that the Orientals have fewer enjoy- "ments than we have, and are less happy than "we are in the West. In the East the husbands "are very fond of their wives, and the wives are "very much attached to their husbands. They "have as many chances of happiness as we have, "however different they may seem; for every "thing is conventional amongst men, even in "those feelings which, one would suppose, ought "to be dictated by Nature alone. Besides, the "women in the East have their rights and privi- "leges, as ours have theirs: it would be quite "as impossible to prevent them from going to "the public bath, as it would be to prevent our "women from going to church; and both mis- "use that liberty. You see, therefore, that the "imagination, feelings, virtues, and failings of "human nature, are circumscribed within a very "narrow compass; and that the same things, "with few exceptions and differences, are to be "found everywhere." The Emperor continued conversing in this manner until after midnight.

On Holland and King Louis.—Complaints of the Emperor against the members of his family.—Matters of high Policy, &c.—Letter to King Louis, the Emperor's brother.

24th.—The Emperor sent for me at about half-past twelve in his closet. Our conversation turned

Digitized by Google

upon the succession of authors through which the light of history has been transmitted to us from the remotest antiquity down to our times. This led him to read that part of the first map of the Historical Atlas which gives a recapitulation of them, and presents the whole at one view.

The conversation turned on the diversities of the human species. The Emperor sent for Buffon, to throw a light upon the question; and continued for some time employed in seeking for information on the subject.

Having dressed, the Emperor sent for my son, and we worked three or four hours at the chapters of the Campaign of Italy.

When this was completed, the conversation, through a variety of subjects, turned upon Holland and King Louis, respecting whom he said some things worthy of observation.

"Louis is not devoid of intelligence," said the Emperor, "and has a good heart; but even with "these qualifications a man may commit many "errors, and do a great deal of mischief. Louis "is naturally inclined to be capricious and fan- "tastical, and the works of Jean Jaques Rous- "seau have contributed to increase this disposi- "tion. Seeking to obtain a reputation for sen- "sibility and beneficence, incapable by himself "of enlarged views, and, at most, competent "to local details, Louis acted like a prefect "rather than a king.

Digitized by Google

" No sooner had he arrived in Holland, than " fancying that nothing could be finer than to " have it said. that he was thenceforth a true " Dutchman, he attached himself entirely to " the party favourable to the English, promoted " smuggling, and thus connived with our ene- " mies. It became necessary from that moment " to watch over him, and even to threaten to wage " war against him. Louis, then, seeking a re- " fuge against the weakness of his disposition in " the most stubborn obstinacy, and mistaking a " public scandal for an act of glory, fled from his " throne, declaiming against me and against my " insatiable ambition, my intolerable tyranny, " &c. What then remained for me to do? Was " I to abandon Holland to our enemies? Ought " I to have given it another king? But in that " case could I have expected more from him than " from my own brother? Did not all the kings " that I created act nearly in the same manner? " I therefore united Holland to the empire; and " this act produced a most unfavourable impres- " sion in Europe, and contributed not a little to " lay the foundation of our misfortunes.

" Louis had been delighted to take Lucien as " his model: Lucien had acted nearly in the " same manner; and if, at a later period, he has " repented, and has even nobly made amends for " his errors, this conduct, which perhaps did ho-

Digitized by Google

" nour to his character, did not, however, pro-
" duce any favourable change in our affairs.

" On my return from Elba in 1815, Louis wrote
" a long letter to me from Rome, and sent an
" ambassador to me. It was his treaty, he said,
" the conditions upon which he would return to
" me. I answered that I would not make any
" treaty with him, that he was my brother, and
" that if he came back he would be well received.

" Will it be believed that one of his conditions
" was that he should be at liberty to divorce
" Hortense. I severely rebuked the negotiator
" for having dared to be the bearer of so absurd
" a proposal, and for having believed that such a
" measure could ever be made the subject of a
" negotiation. I reminded Louis that our family
" compact positively forbade it, and represented
" to him that it was no less forbidden by the laws
" of policy and morality, and by public opinion.

" I farther assured him that, actuated by all
" these motives, if his children were to lose their
" estate through his fault, I should feel more in-
" terested for them than for him, although he
" was my brother.

" Perhaps an excuse might be found for the
" caprice of Louis's disposition, in the deplorable
" state of his health, the age at which it became
" deranged, and the horrible circumstances which
" produced that derangement, and which must

Digitized by Google

" have had a considerable influence upon his " mind; he was on the point of death on the " occasion, and has, ever since, been subject to " most cruel infirmities: he is almost paralytic " on one side.

" It is certain, however," added the Emperor, " that I have derived little assistance from my " own family, and that they have greatly injured " me and the great cause for which I fought. " The energy of my disposition has often been " extolled; but I have been a mere milksop, " particularly with my family; this they knew; " after the first moment of anger was over they " always carried their point by perseverance and " obstinacy. I became tired of the contest, and " they did with me just as they pleased. These " are great errors which I have committed. If, " instead of this, each of them had given a com- " mon impulse to the different bodies which I have " placed under their direction, we should have " marched on to the poles; every thing would " have given way before us; we should have " changed the face of the world; Europe would " now enjoy the advantages of a new system, " and we should have received the benedictions " of mankind! I have not been so fortunate as " Gengis-khan with his four sons, each of whom " rivalled the other in zeal for his service. No " sooner had I made a man a king, than he " thought himself king *by the grace of God*, so

Digitized by Google

'contagious is the use of the expression. He "was then no longer a lieutenant on whom "I could rely, but another enemy whom I "was obliged to guard against. His efforts "were not directed towards seconding me, but "towards rendering himself independent. They "all immediately imagined that they were adored "and preferred to me. From that moment I was "in their way, I endangered their existence! "Legitimate monarchs would not have behaved "differently; would not have thought themselves more firmly established. Weak-minded "men! who may have convinced themselves "when I fell, that the enemy has not even done "them the honour to demand the surrender of "their dignities, or even to allude to it. If they "are now put under personal restraint, if they "are subject to vexation, it must proceed on the "part of the conqueror, from a wish to impose "the weight of power, or from the base motive "of gratifying his vengeance. If the members "of my family excite a great interest amongst "mankind, it is because they belong to me and "to the common cause; but assuredly there is "not the least danger of any movement being "produced by any of them. Notwithstanding "the philosophy of several of them, (for some "of them had said, after the fashion of the "*Chambellans* of the Faubourg Saint-Germain, "that they were *forced* to reign,) their fall must

Digitized by Google

" have been sensibly felt by them, for they had
" soon accommodated themselves to the plea-
" sures and comforts of their station. They have
" all really been kings, thanks to my labours: all
" have enjoyed the advantages of royalty; I alone
" have known its cares. I have all the time
" carried the world on my shoulders; and this
" occupation, after all, is rather fatiguing. It will
" perhaps be asked, why I persisted in erecting
" states and kingdoms? But the manners and
" the situation of Europe required it. Every
" time that another country was annexed to
" France, the act, added to the universal alarm
" which already prevailed, excited loud murmurs,
" and diminished the chances of peace. Then
" why, will it be farther said, did I indulge in
" the vanity of placing every member of my
" family on a throne? (for the generality of peo-
" ple will have thought me actuated by vanity
" alone:) why did I not rather fix my choice upon
" some private individuals possessing greater
" abilities? To this I reply, that it is not with
" thrones as with the functions of a prefect;
" talents and abilities are so common in the pre-
" sent age amongst the multitude, that one
" must be cautious to avoid awakening the idea
" of competition. In the agitation of our situa-
" tion, and with our modern institutions, it was
" proper to think rather of consolidating and con-
" centrating the hereditary right of succession,

Digitized by Google

" in order to avoid innumerable feuds, factions,
" and misfortunes. The principal defect in my
" person and my elevation, consistently with the
" plan of universal harmony, which I meditated
" for the repose and happiness of all, was that I
" had risen at once from the multitude. I felt
" that I stood insulated and alone, and I cast
" anchors around me on all sides. Where could
" I more naturally look for support than amongst
" my own relations? Could I expect more from
" strangers? And it must be admitted, that if
" the members of my family have had the folly
" to break through these sacred ties, the morality
" of the people, superior to their blind infatua-
" tion, fulfilled in part my object. With them
" their subjects thought themselves more quiet,
" more united as in one family."

" To resume, acts of that importance were not
" to be considered lightly; they were involved
" in considerations of the highest order; they
" were connected with the tranquillity of man-
" kind, the possibility of ameliorating its condi-
" tion. If, notwithstanding all these measures,
" taken with the best intentions, it seems that
" no permanent good has been effected, we
" must admit the truth of this great maxim,
" that to govern is very difficult for those who
" wish to do it conscientiously."

N.B. The following letter of a very old date, will serve to throw a great light upon the words

Digitized by Google

of Napoleon, mentioned a few pages back, respecting the conduct of his brother in Holland.

At a later period King Louis published a sort of account of his administration, addressed to the Dutch nation; it is particularly interesting, after having read the above paragraph and the accompanying letter, to take up that document of King Louis, in order to be able to form an opinion on the subject founded on a due knowledge of all the circumstances.

"Castle of Marach, 3d April, 1808.

"Sir and my brother.—The auditor D——t "delivered to me an hour ago your despatch, "dated 22d March. I send a courier who will "take this letter to you in Holland.

"The use you have just made of the privilege "of mercy cannot but produce a very bad effect. "This privilege is one of the finest and noblest "attributes of the sovereign power. In order "not to bring it into discredit, it must be "used only in cases when the royal clemency "is not detrimental to the ends of justice, or "when it is calculated to leave an impression "of being the result of generous feelings. The "present case is that of a number of banditti "who attacked and murdered several custom-"house officers, with the intention of smuggling "afterwards without interruption. These peo-"ple are condemned to death; and your Majesty

Digitized by Google

" extends the royal mercy to them . . . to a set of " murderers, to men whom nobody can pity. If " they had been caught in the act of smuggling; " if in defending themselves they had killed " some of the officers, then you might perhaps " have taken into consideration the situation of " their families, and their own; and have shewn " an example of a kind of paternal feeling, by " modifying the severity of the law by a com- " mutation of punishment. It is in cases of con- " demnation for offences against the revenue laws, " it is more particularly in cases of condemna- " tions for political offences, that clemency is well " applied. In these matters the principle is, that " if it is the sovereign who is attacked, there is a " certain magnanimity in pardoning the offender. " On the first report of an affair of that kind, the " sympathy of the public is immediately excited " in favour of the offender, and not of him who is " to inflict the punishment. If the prince remit " the sentence, the people consider him superior " to the offence, and the public clamour is di- " rected against those who have offended him. " If he follow the opposite system, he is thought " vindictive and tyrannical. If he pardon hor- " rible crimes, he is looked upon as weak, or " actuated by bad intentions.

" Do not fancy that the privilege of mercy can " always be used without danger, and that society " will always commend the exercise of it in the

Digitized by Google

" sovereign. The sovereign is blamed when he " applies it in favour of murderers or great male- " factors, because it then becomes injurious to the " interests of the community. You have too fre- " quently, and on too many occasions, extended " the royal mercy. The kindness of your heart " must not be listened to when it can become " prejudicial to your people. In the affair of the " Jews, I should have done as you did; but in " that of the smugglers of Middleburg, I should " not have pardoned on any account. Many " reasons ought to have induced you to let " justice take its course, and give the example of " an execution which would have produced the " excellent effect of preventing many crimes by " the terror which it would have inspired. Pub- " lic officers are murdered in the middle of the " night—the murderers are condemned. Your " Majesty commutes the punishment of death " into a few years' imprisonment! How much " will this not tend to dishearten all the persons " employed in the collection of your revenue! " The political effect produced by it is also very " bad, for the following reasons:—Holland was " the channel through which England had, for " many years, introduced her goods on the Con- " tinent. The Dutch merchants have made im- " mense profits by this trade; and that is the " reason why the Dutch nation is partial to Eng- land, and fond of smuggling, and why it hates

Digitized by Google

"France, who forbids smuggling and opposes "England. The mercy which you have extend- "ed to these smugglers and murderers, is a kind "of compliment which you have paid to the taste "of the Dutch for smuggling. You appear to "make common cause with them,—and against "whom? . . . against me.

"The Dutch love you: your disposition is "amiable, your manners are unaffected, and you "govern them according to their inclination; but "you would make a beneficial use of the influence "you possess, if you shewed yourself positively "determined to suppress smuggling, and if you "opened their eyes to their real interests: they "would then think that the system of prohibi- "tion is good, since it is observed by the King. "I cannot see what advantage your Majesty can "derive from a species of popularity which you "would acquire at my expense. Certainly Hol- "land is no longer what it was at the time of the "treaty of Ryswick; and France is not in the "situation in which it was placed during the "last years of the reign of Louis XVI. If, there- "fore, Holland is unable to follow a system of "policy independent of that of France, it must "fulfil the conditions of the alliance.

"It is not to the present alone that sovereigns "must accommodate their policy; the future "must also be the object of their consideration. "What is at this moment the situation of Europe?

Digitized by Google

"On one side, England, who possesses, by *her* "*sole exertions*, a dominion to which the whole "world has been hitherto compelled to submit. "On the other side, the French Empire and the "Continental States, which, strengthened by the "union of their powers, cannot acquiesce in "this supremacy exercised by England. Those "states had also their colonies and a maritime "trade: they possess an extent of coast much "greater than England; but they have become "disunited, and England has attacked the naval "power of each separately: England has tri- "umphed on every sea, and all navies have been "destroyed. Russia, Sweden, France, and Spain, "which possess such ample means for having "ships and sailors, dare not venture to send a "squadron out of their ports. It is, therefore, "no longer from a confederation amongst the ma- "ritime powers—a confederation which it would "be besides impossible to maintain, on account "of the distance, and of the interference of the "various interests of each with those of the "others—that Europe can expect its maritime "emancipation, and a system of peace, which "can be established only by the will of England.

"I wish for peace; I wish to obtain it by "every means compatible with the dignity of "the power of France; at the expense of every "sacrifice which our national honour can allow. "Every day I feel more and more that peace is

Digitized by Google

" necessary; and the sovereigns of the Continent " are as anxious for peace as I am. I feel no " *passionate prejudice* against England; I bear " her no *insurmountable hatred:* she has followed " against me a system of repulsion; I have " adopted against her the Continental system, " not so much from a *jealousy of ambition*, as my " enemies suppose, but in order to reduce Eng- " land to the necessity of adjusting our diffe- " rences. Let England be rich and prosperous; " it is no concern of mine, provided France and " her allies enjoy the same advantages.

" The Continental system has, therefore, no " other object than to advance the moment when " the public rights of Europe and of the French " Empire will be definitively established. The " sovereigns of the North observe and enforce " strictly the system of prohibition, and their " trade has been greatly benefited by it: the " manufactures of Prussia may now compete " with ours. You are aware that France, and " the whole extent of coasts which now forms " part of the Empire, from the Gulf of Lyons " to the extremity of the Adriatic, are strictly " closed against the produce of foreign industry. " I am about to adopt a measure with respect to " the affairs of Spain, the result of which will be " to wrest Portugal from England, and subject " all the coasts of Spain, on both seas, to the " influence of the policy of France. The coasts

Digitized by Google

" of the whole of Europe will then be closed " against England, with the exception of those " of Turkey, which I do not care about, as the " Turks do not trade with Europe.

" Do you not perceive, from this statement, " the fatal consequences that would result from " the facilities given by Holland to the English " for the introduction of their goods on the Con- " tinent? They would enable England to levy " upon us the subsidies which she would after- " wards offer to other powers to fight against us. " Your Majesty is as much interested as I am " to guard against the crafty policy of the Eng- " lish Cabinet. A few years more, and England " will wish for peace as much as we do. Observe " the situation of your kingdom, and you will " see that the system I allude to is more useful " to yourself than it is to me. Holland is a " maritime and commercial power; she pos- " sesses fine sea-ports, fleets, sailors, skilful " commanders, and colonies which do not cost " any thing to the mother-country; and her " inhabitants understand trade as well as the " English. Has not Holland, therefore, an in- " terest in defending all those advantages? May " not peace restore her to the station she for- " merly held? Granted that her situation may " be painful for a few years; but is not this " preferable to making the King of Holland a " mere governor for England, and Holland and

Digitized by Google

" her colonies a vassal of Great Britain? Yet " the protection which you would afford to " English commerce would lead to that result. " The examples of Sicily and Portugal are still " before your eyes.

" Await the result of the progress of time. " You want to sell your gins, and England wants " to buy them. Point out the place where the " English smugglers may come and fetch them; " but let them pay for them in money and never " in goods, *positively never!* Peace must at last " be made; and you will then make a treaty of " commerce with England. I may perhaps also " make one with her, but in which our mutual " interests shall be reciprocally guaranteed. If " we must allow England to exercise a kind of " supremacy on the sea, a supremacy which she " will have purchased at the expense of her " treasures and of her blood, and which is the " natural consequences of her geographical posi- " tion and of her possessions in the three other " parts of the globe; at least our flags will be at " liberty to appear on the ocean without being " exposed to insult, and our maritime trade " will cease to be ruinous. For the present " we must direct our efforts towards preventing " England from interfering in the affairs of the " Continent.

" I have been led on from the consideration of " the mercy which you have granted, to the above

Digitized by Google

" details, and I have entered into them, because I " feared that your Dutch ministers may impress " your Majesty's mind with false notions.

" I wish you to reflect seriously upon the con- " tents of this letter, and to render the different " subjects it treats upon objects of the delibe- " rations of your councils, in order that your " ministers may give a proper direction and " tendency to their measures. Under no pre- " tence whatever will France allow Holland to " separate herself from the Continental system.

" With respect to these smugglers, since the " fault has been committed, it cannot be undone. " I advise you, however, not to leave them in the " prisons of Middleburg; it is too near the spot " where the crime was perpetrated: send them " to the remotest part of Holland. The present " having no other object, &c.

(Signed) " NAPOLEON."

During dinner the Emperor asked his groom how his horse was; the groom answered that it was well fed, in good spirits, and in excellent condition. " I hope he does not complain of me," said the Emperor, " if ever a horse led the life of " a *chanoine*, it is assuredly this one." It is now two or three months since the Emperor rode on horseback.

Digitized by Google

Zeal for working.—Ideas and Plans of Napoleon respecting our History, &c.—On the Works published, &c.—M. Ménéval; curious particularities, &c. &c.

25th—27th. The Emperor for some days past has been remarkably assiduous in his application. All our mornings have been spent in making researches respecting Egypt, in the works of the ancient authors; we have looked over Herodotus, Pliny, Strabo, &c. together, without any other intermission than that which we required to eat our breakfast, which was served on his small table. The weather continued bad, and the Emperor dictated every day and the whole day.

At dinner he told us he found himself much better, and we then observed to him, that for some time past, however, he did not go out of the house, and was occupied eight, ten, or twelve hours of the day. "That is the very reason of "my being better," said he: "occupation is my "element, I am born and made for it. I have "found the limits beyond which I could not use "my legs; I have seen the extent to which I could "use my eyes; but I have never known any "bounds to my capability of application. I nearly "killed poor Ménéval; I was obliged to relieve "him for a time from the duties of his situation, "and place him for the recovery of his health "near the person of Maria Louisa, where his "post was a mere sinecure."

Digitized by Google

The Emperor added, that if he were in Europe and had leisure, his pleasure would be to write history. He complained of the very indifferent manner in which history was written every where. The researches he had lately been engaged in had proved this fact to him to a degree beyond any thing he could ever have suspected.

"We have no good history," observed he, "and "we could not have any; and the other nations "of Europe were nearly in the same predica- "ment as ourselves. Monks and privileged in- "dividuals, that is, men friendly to abuses and "inimical to information and learning, had mo- "nopolized this branch of writing; they had "told us what they thought proper, or rather "that which favoured their interests, gratified "their passions, or agreed with their own views! "—He had formed," he said, "a plan for remedy- "ing the evil as much as possible; he intended, "for instance, to appoint commissions from the "Institute, or learned men whom public opinion "might have pointed out to him, to revise, cri- "ticize, and republish our historical annals. He "wished also to add commentaries to the classic "authors which are put in the hands of our "youth, to explain them with reference to our "modern institutions. With a good program, "competition, and rewards, this end would "have been accomplished; every thing can be "obtained by such means."

Digitized by Google

He then repeated, what I believe I have mentioned before, that it had been his intention to cause the history of the last reigns of our kings to be written from the original documents taken from the archives of our foreign affairs. There were also several manuscripts, both ancient and modern, in the Imperial Library, which he intended to have printed, classifying and embodying them under their different heads, so as to form codes of doctrines on science, morality, literature, fine arts, &c. &c. &c.

He had, he said, several other plans of a similar nature. And could any other period be found equally favourable to the execution of such plans? When will there be again united in the same man, the genius to conceive and the power to execute them?

In order to check the production of the immense number of inferior works with which the public was inundated, without however trenching upon the liberty of the press, he asked what objection there could have been to the formation of a tribunal of opinion, composed of members of the Institute, of members of the University, and of persons appointed by the government, who would have examined all works with reference to these three points of view, science, morality, and politics; who would have criticized them, and

Digitized by Google

defined the degree of merit possessed by each. This tribunal would have been the light of the public: it would have operated as a warranty in favour of works of real merit; would have insured their success, and thus produced emulation; whilst, on the contrary, it would necessarily have discouraged the publication of inferior productions.

All our evenings were devoted to the Odyssey, with which we are delighted. Polyphemus, Tiresias, and the Syrens, have quite charmed us.

The following details relate to M. Ménéval, to whom the Emperor alluded above: they will be considered invaluable, as they will serve to exhibit Napoleon in the sphere of his private life.

The Emperor, when First Consul, complained that he had no secretary. He had just dismissed the one he had had during the campaigns of Italy and the expedition in Egypt; he was an old college acquaintance of the Emperor, a man full of intelligence, and to whom he was very much attached; but he had been obliged to part with him. His brother Joseph then offered him his own secretary, whom he had only had for a short time: Napoleon accepted the offer, and acquired a treasure. This the Emperor has repeated several times since. It was Ménéval, whom he has since made a baron, *maître des requêtes*, and *secrétaire des commandemens* of the Empress Maria Louisa.

Digitized by Google

Ménéval's title, when attached to the First Consul, was *secretary of the portfolio;* a long regulation was even made expressly regarding him; the principal article of which was, that he should never, under any pretence whatever, have a secretary, nor employ a scribe; which condition was strictly observed.

M. Ménéval was a man of gentle and reserved manners, very discreet, working at all times and at all hours. The Emperor never had reason to be dissatisfied or displeased with him, and was very much attached to him. The secretary of the portfolio had generally all the current business, all affairs that arose on a sudden emergency, or from a sudden thought. How many affairs, plans, and conceptions, have been discussed and transmitted through his medium! He opened and read all letters addressed to the Emperor; classed them for the Emperor's examination, and wrote under his dictation.

The Emperor dictated so fast, that, most frequently, in order to save time, the secretary was obliged to endeavour to recollect the words, rather than attempt to write them down at the moment they were pronounced. In this, Ménéval particularly excelled. In course of time Ménéval was authorized himself to return an answer on many subjects. He might easily have acquired great influence; but it was quite contrary to his inclination to seek to obtain it.

Digitized by Google

The Emperor was almost always in his closet; it might be said that he spent the whole day and part of the night in it. He usually went to bed at ten or eleven o'clock, and got up again at about twelve, to work for a few hours more. Sometimes he sent for M. Ménéval, but most frequently he did not; and aware of his zeal, he would sometimes say to him, "You must not "kill yourself."

When the Emperor went into his closet in the morning, he found bundles of papers already arranged and prepared for him by Ménéval, who had been there before him. If the Emperor sometimes allowed twenty-four hours, or two days, to elapse without going into it, his secretary would remind him of it, and tell him that he would suffer himself to be overwhelmed with the mass of papers that were accumulating, and that the closet would soon be full of them. To this the Emperor usually answered good-humouredly: "Do not alarm yourself, it will soon be cleared;" and so indeed it was, for in a few hours the Emperor had despatched all the answers, and was even with the current business. It is true that he got through a great deal by not answering many things, and throwing away all that he considered useless, even when coming from his ministers. To this they were accustomed; and when they saw no answer appeared, they knew what it meant. He himself read all letters that were

Digitized by Google

addressed to him; to some he answered by writing a few words in the margin, and to others he dictated an answer. Those that were of great importance were always put by, and read a second time, and were never answered until some time had elapsed. When leaving his closet, he generally recapitulated those affairs that were of greatest consequence, and fixed the hour at which they must be ready for him, which was always punctually attended to. If at that hour the Emperor did not come, M. Ménéval followed him about from place to place through the palace several times to remind him of it. On some of these occasions the Emperor would go and settle the affair, at other times he would say, "*To-morrow; night is a good adviser.*" This was his usual phrase; and he often said that he had indeed worked much more at night than during the day; not that thoughts of business prevented him from sleeping, but because he slept at intervals, according as he wanted rest, and a little sufficed for him.

It often happened to the Emperor, in the course of his campaigns, to be roused suddenly upon some emergency of business; he would then immediately get up, and it would have been impossible to guess from the appearance of his eyes that he had just been sleeping. He then gave his decision, or dictated his answer, with as much

Digitized by Google

clearness, and with his mind as free and unembarrassed, as at any other moment. This he called the *after midnight presence of mind;* and he possessed it in a most extraordinary degree. It has sometimes happened that he has been perhaps called up as often as ten times in the same night, and each time he was always found to have fallen asleep again, not having as yet taken his quantum of rest.

Boasting one day to one of his ministers (General Clarke) of the faculty which he possessed of sleeping almost at pleasure and how little rest he required, Clarke answered in a jocular tone, " Yes, Sire, and that is a source of " torment to us, for it is often at our expense ; " we feel our share of it sometimes."

The Emperor did every thing himself and through the medium of his closet. He appointed to all vacant situations, and most frequently substituted new names to those of the persons proposed to him. He read the plans of his ministers, adopted, rejected, or modified them. He even indited the notes of his Minister for foreign affairs, which he dictated to Ménéval, from whom he kept no secret. It was through Ménéval also that he wrote to the different sovereigns; in addressing whom he observed a formula which he had had drawn up from the protocols of former times, and to the strict observance of which he attached great importance. All the ministers transacted busi-

Digitized by Google

ness with the Emperor together on one day of the week appointed for that purpose, unless something occurred to prevent it. The business of each minister was transacted in the presence of all the others, who were allowed to give their opinions respecting it, and each of them thus emptied his portfolio. A register was kept of the deliberations, of which there must be many volumes. Those documents that had been decided on, were left to have the signature affixed to them, which was done through the medium of the minister secretary of state, who countersigned them. Sometimes some of these papers, after they had been thus decided on, were still sent to the Emperor's closet to be revised and modified before the signature was put to them. The minister for foreign affairs was the only one who, independently of his share in the general business transacted by the other ministers, had besides, from the secret nature of his functions, other duties to despatch in private with the Emperor.

One of the favourite aides-de-camp of the Emperor was entrusted with that branch of the administration of war called the *personnel*, which embraces every thing relating to the soldiers personally. Duroc occupied for a long time this confidential post; afterwards Bertrand and Lauriston; Count Lobau was the last who filled it.

M. Ménéval being in a very indifferent state of health, worn down by fatigue of application,

Digitized by Google

and requiring some interval of repose, the Emperor gave him a situation in the household of the Empress Maria Louisa, which was, he said, quite a sinecure. However, the Emperor only parted with him on condition that he should come back to him as soon as he was well; and he never failed to remind him of it every time he saw him.

After Ménéval's retirement, the business of the Emperor's closet ceased to be conducted by one person only; Ménéval had a great many successors at the same moment, and the closet became a kind of office, in which several persons were employed. One of these persons, whom the Emperor had taken on the recommendation of others who had thought they could answer for him as for themselves, received an order, at the time of the disasters of 1814, to burn the documents that were in the closet; but instead of obeying this order he so far forgot his duty as to take them away with him; and after the King's restoration, he wrote to one of his ministers to offer them to him. The Emperor found the proof of his treachery amongst the papers left at the Tuileries at the period of the 20th of March; and one morning having gone into his closet before any body was come, he wrote several times on a piece of paper, as if he had been trying his pen, *Such a one is a traitor—Such a one is a traitor;* and laid it on the table where sat one of those who had recommended him, and who

Digitized by Google

was himself, said the Emperor, a man on whose zeal and fidelity every reliance could be placed. This was the only reproach he ever addressed to him, and the only vengeance he ever exercised on the offender.

Several traces may therefore still be found, and several documents must exist, of the business transacted in the Emperor's closet. Some of these documents have been alluded to in the debates of the British parliament; but Napoleon solemnly declared, on his return at the period of the 20th of March last, that these documents had been falsified. And they are not the only documents that are left of that ever-memorable administration.

There must be twenty or thirty folio volumes, and as many in quarto, containing the correspondence of the campaigns of Italy and of Egypt, collected and regularly classed.

There must be also about sixty or eighty folio volumes of the deliberations of the Council of Ministers, collected by the secretaries of state, the Duke of Bassano and Count Daru. And lastly, the minutes of the sittings of the Council of State, written and arranged by M. Locré.

These are real and proud titles of glory for Napoleon. Upon these immortal monuments, all subsequent governments have modelled and directed their administrations; and from them all future governments, of every country, will hence-

Digitized by Google

forth inevitably seek and derive information: so sure and solid have been the foundations which he has laid—so judiciously placed the landmarks —so deeply laid the roots—so much, in one word, does the whole bear the stamp of genius, and the character of rectitude and of duration.

Observations of the Emperor concerning my wife.—Dictation of the Emperor for another portion of his Memoirs.

28th.—The Emperor to-day took advantage of an interval of fine weather to take two turns in the calash: he said he wanted a little jolting. His left cheek was still swelled. At about three o'clock he returned; and a short time after, having nothing to do, he sent for me, and we walked round the garden for some time. Having perceived the Doctor, he beckoned to him. The Doctor came up to us, and from him Napoleon heard that the Russian and Austrian commissioners had come the day before to the gates of Longwood, from which they had been turned away in pursuance of the regulations established by the Governor.

When we were alone, the Emperor, after having conversed upon a variety of subjects, spoke of my wife, conjecturing what she might be doing, what had become of her, &c. &c.

"There is no doubt," said he, a short time after, "that your situation at Saint-Helena in-"spires a lively interest, and must tend to cause

Digitized by Google

" your wife's company to be sought after. Every " thing relating to me is still dear to many per- " sons. From this rock I still bestow crowns! " . . . . Yes, my dear friends, when you return to " Europe, you will find yourselves crowned!"

Then, speaking again of my wife, he said, with an expression of the utmost kindness, " The best " thing she could do would be to go and spend " the time of her separation from you with Ma- " dame, or some other members of my family. " They would undoubtedly feel much pleasure in " taking care of her," &c.

When we went back into the house, the Emperor sat down to work. The Campaign of Italy was nearly finished, but he provided me with a new subject.

" *Note, write:*"—These were the words which the Emperor uttered abruptly when a new idea occurred. What follows is literally what he dictated to me, in this instance: nothing has been altered in it, and he has never read it over.

" Note.—The Campaign of Italy being com- " pleted, Las Cases will, in the course of a week, " undertake the period from the breaking of the " treaty of Amiens to the battle of Jena. In 1802 " all Europe is at peace; shortly afterwards all " Europe begins war: the Republic is changed, " and becomes the Empire; the maritime ques- " tion becomes the chief cause of the rupture of " the peace of Amiens.

Digitized by Google

" Las Cases will begin by causing extracts " to be made from the *Moniteurs* of that time, " by little Emanuel, under his directions: he " must get through at least six or seven a-day, " which will make one hundred and eighty, or " a period of six months, in one month. There " must be at least a period of six months ex- " tracted before we begin.

" The periods preceding and following that " period will be prepared and arranged by the " other gentlemen. In making the extracts, the " plan already prescribed to M. Montholon must " be followed; that is, of extracting all that " relates to one event, and referring to the page " and month.

" *The following will be the great events of this period:—*

" 1st, History of the flotilla.
" 2d, Declaration of Austria.
" 3d, Movements of the fleets.
" 4th, Battle of Trafalgar.
" 5th, Ulm—Austerlitz.
" 6th, Peace of Vienna.
" 7th, Negotiation of Lord Lauderdale at Paris.
" 8th, Battle of Jena.

" *To be inserted in their respective places:—*

" 1st, Conspiracy of Georges.
" 2d, Affair of the Duc d'Enghien.
" 3d, Coronation of the Emperor, by the Pope.
" 4th, Imperial organization.

Digitized by Google

" This will be one of the finest periods of the " history of France; for it exhibits, in the space " of one year, on one side a Pope coming to " France to crown an Emperor,—an event which " had not taken place for one thousand years " before; and, on the other, the French flag " waving over the capitals of Austria and Prus- " sia, the Roman empire dissolved, and the " Prussian monarchy destroyed."

I take pleasure in transcribing literally the above dictation of the Emperor, with his first ideas and in his first words, in order to shew his style and manner.

It will be easily conceived with what zeal and ardour both my son and myself devoted ourselves to this our task, the importance of which we fully appreciated.

On a Hole in the Garden.

29th. — During the dinner, somebody mentioned a pool which stands in our garden, not far from the house, and which is deep enough to admit of a lamb having once been drowned in it, in attempting to drink. The Emperor said on that occasion, to one of the inmates of the house: " Is it possible, Sir, that you have not " yet had this pool filled up? How guilty you " would be, and what would not your grief be, " if your son were to be drowned in it, as it " might easily happen!" The person thus cen-

Digitized by Google

sured answered that he had often intended to have it done, but that it was impossible to get workmen. "That is not an excuse," said the Emperor sharply; "if *my* son were here, I "should go and fill it up with my own hands."

The Emperor was already in bed when he sent for me: he wished, he said, to put some questions to me, and to inquire of some dates respecting matters which concerned us materially. . . .

. . . . . .

Eloquent dictations of the Emperor. — Characteristic details. — Particularities, &c.

30th.—Whenever the Emperor took up a subject, if he was in the least animated, his language was fit to be printed. He has often, when an idea struck him forcibly, dictated to any one of us that happened to be in his way, pages which, at the first throw, were of the finest diction. The other gentlemen of his suite must possess a great many of these dictations, which are all most invaluable. Unfortunately for me, the weak state of my eyes, which prevented me from writing, most frequently deprived me of this advantage.

On one occasion, when the English ministerial newspaper spoke of the large treasures which Napoleon must possess, and which he, no doubt, concealed, the Emperor dictated as follows:

"You wish to know the treasures of Napoleon? "They are immense, it is true, but they are all

Digitized by Google

" exposed to light. They are: The noble har-
" bours of Antwerp and Flushing, which are ca-
" pable of containing the largest fleets, and of pro-
" tecting them against the ice from the sea,—the
" hydraulic works at Dunkirk, Havre, and Nice,
" —the immense harbour of Cherburg,—the mari-
" time works at Venice,—the beautiful roads from
" Antwerp to Amsterdam; from Mentz to Metz;
" from Bordeaux to Bayonne;—the passes of the
" Simplon, of Mount Cenis, of Mount Geneve,
" of the Corniche, which open a communication
" through the Alps in four different directions;
" and which exceed in grandeur, in boldness, and
" in skill of execution, all the works of the Ro-
" mans; in that alone you will find eight hundred
" millions;—the roads from the Pyrenees to the
" Alps, from Parma to Spezia, from Savona to
" Piedmont,—the bridges of Jena, Austerlitz,
" Des Arts, Sevres, Tours, Rouanne, Lyons, Tu-
" rin, of the Isere, of the Durance, of Bordeaux,
" Rouen, &c.—the canal which connects the
" Rhine with the Rhone by the Doubs, and thus
" unites the North sea with the Mediterranean;
" the canal which connects the Scheldt with the
" Somme, and thus joins Paris and Amsterdam;
" the canal which unites the Rance to the Vilaine;
" the canal of Arles, that of Pavia, and the canal
" of the Rhine,—the draining of the marshes of
" Burgoine, of the Cotentin, of Rochfort,—the
" rebuilding of the greater number of the churches

Digitized by Google

"destroyed during the Revolution,—the build-
"ing of others,—the institution of numerous
"establishments of industry for the suppres-
"sion of mendicity,—the building at the Louvre,
"—the construction of public warehouses, of
"the Bank, of the canal of the Ourcq,—the
"distribution of water in the city of Paris,—
"the numerous drains, the quays, the em-
"bellishments and the monuments of that large
"capital,—the works for the embellishment of
"Rome,—the re-establishment of the manu-
"factures of Lyons,—the creation of many hun-
"dreds of manufactories of cotton, for spinning
"and for weaving, which employ several millions
"of workmen,—funds accumulated to establish
"upwards of 400 manufactories of sugar from
"beet-roots, for the consumption of part of France,
"and which would have furnished sugar at the
"same price as the West Indies, if they had con-
"tinued to receive encouragement for only four
"years longer,—the substitution of woad for
"indigo, which would have been at last brought
"to a state of perfection in France, and obtain-
"ed as good and as cheap as the indigo from
"the Colonies,—numerous manufactories for all
"kinds of objects of art, &c.—fifty millions ex-
"pended in repairing and beautifying the palaces
"belonging to the Crown,—sixty millions in
"furniture for the palaces belonging to the
"Crown in France, and in Holland, at Turin,

Digitized by Google

" and at Rome—sixty millions of diamonds for " the Crown, all purchased with Napoleon's " money—*the Regent* (the only diamond that was " left belonging to the former diamonds of the " Crown) withdrawn from the hands of the Jews " at Berlin, in whose hands it had been left as " a pledge for three millions. The Napoleon Mu- " seum, valued at upwards of 400,000,000, filled " with objects legitimately acquired, either by " money or treaties of peace known to the whole " world, by virtue of which the *chefs d'œuvres* it " contains were given in lieu of territory or of " contributions. Several millions amassed to " be applied to the encouragement of agricul- " ture, which is the paramount consideration for " the interest of France; the introduction in " France of Merino sheep, &c. these form a trea- " sure of several thousand millions which will " endure for ages! *these* are the monuments that " will confute calumny!

" History will say that all these things were " accomplished in the midst of perpetual wars; " without having recourse to any loan, and whilst " the national debt was even diminishing every " day, and that nearly fifty millions of taxes had " been remitted. Very large sums still remained " in his private treasure; they were guarantied to " him by the treaty of Fontainbleau as the result " of the savings effected on his civil list and of " his other private revenues: these sums were

Digitized by Google

" divided and did not go entirely into the pub-
" lic treasury, nor altogether into the treasury
" of France!!"

On another occasion, the Emperor reading in an English newspaper that Lord Castlereagh had said, in an assembly in Ireland, that Napoleon had declared at Saint-Helena that he never would have made peace with England but to deceive her, take her by surprise and destroy her; and that, if the French army was attached to the Emperor, it was because he was in the habit of giving the daughters of the richest families of his empire in marriage to his soldiers; the Emperor, moved with indignation, dictated as follows: " These calumnies uttered
" against a man who is so barbarously oppressed,
" and who is not allowed to make his voice heard
" in answer to them, will be disbelieved by all
" persons well educated and susceptible of feel-
" ing. When Napoleon was seated on the first
" throne in the world, then no doubt his ene-
" mies had a right to say whatever they plea-
" sed; his actions were public, and were a
" sufficient answer to them; at any rate, that
" conduct now belonged to public opinion,
" and history; but to utter new and base
" calumnies against him at the present moment
" is an act of the utmost meanness and coward-
" ice, and which will not answer the end pro-
" posed. Millions of libels have been and are

Digitized by Google

" still published every day, but they are with-
" out effect. 60,000,000 of men, of the most
" polished nations in the world, raise their
" voices to confute them, and 50,000 English-
" men who are now travelling on the Continent,
" will, on their return home, publish the truth to
" the inhabitants of the three kingdoms of Great
" Britain, who will blush at having been so
" grossly deceived. As for the bill, by virtue of
" which Napoleon has been dragged to this rock,
" it is an act of proscription similar to those of
" Sylla, and still more atrocious. The Romans
" unrelentingly pursued Hannibal to the ut-
" most extremities of Bithynia; and Flaminius
" obtained from King Prusias the death of
" that great man; yet at Rome Flaminius was
" accused of having acted thus in order to satisfy
" his personal hatred. It was in vain that he
" urged in his defence that Hannibal, yet in the
" vigour of life, might still become a dangerous
" enemy, and that his death was necessary; a
" thousand voices were raised, and answered,
" that acts of injustice and ungenerous actions
" can never be useful to a great nation; and that
" upon such pretences as that now set forth,
" murder, poisoning, and every species of crime
" might be justified! The following generations
" reproached their ancestors with this base act;
" they would have given any thing to have the
" stain effaced from their history; and since the

Digitized by Google

" re-establishment of letters amongst modern " nations, every succeeding age has added its " imprecations to those pronounced by Hannibal " at the moment when he drank the fatal cup: " he cursed Rome, who, whilst her fleets and le- " gions covered Europe, Asia, and Africa, sa- " tiated her vengeance against one man alone " and unprotected, because she feared, or pre- " tended to fear him.

" The Romans, however, never violated the " rights of hospitality: Sylla found an asylum " in the house of Marius. Flaminius did not, " before he banished Hannibal, receive him on " board his ship and declare that the had orders " to treat him favourably; the Roman fleet did " not convey him to the Port of Ostia; and Han- " nibal, instead of placing himself under the pro- " tection of the Romans, preferred trusting his " person to a King of Asia. At the moment " when he was banished, he was not under the " protection of the Roman flag; he was under " the banners of a king who was an enemy of " Rome.

" If, in future ages, a King of England should " be one day brought before the awful tribunal " of his nation, his defenders will urge in his " favour the sacred character of a king, the " respect due to the throne, to all crowned " heads, to the anointed of the Lord! But his " accusers will have a right to answer thus:

Digitized by Google

" ' One of the ancestors of this King, whom you " defend, banished a man that was his guest, " in time of peace; afraid to put him to death " in the presence of a nation governed by po- " sitive laws and by regular and public forms, " he caused his victim to be exposed in the most " insalubrious point of a rock situated in another " hemisphere in the midst of the ocean, where " this guest perished after a long agony, a prey " to the climate, to want, to insults of every " kind! Yet that guest was also a great sove- " reign raised to the throne on the shields of " thirty-six millions of citizens; he was master " of almost every Capital of Europe, the greatest " Kings composed his court; he was generous " towards all; he was during twenty years the " arbitrator of nations; his family was allied to " every reigning family, even to that of England; " he was twice the anointed of the Lord; twice " consecrated by the august ceremonies of re- " ligion!!!' "

This passage is certainly very fine, by its truth, its diction, and above all, by its historical riches.

The Emperor always dictated without the least preparation. I never saw him, on any occasion, make any research respecting our history or that of any other nation; and yet no man ever quoted history more faithfully, more *apropos*, or more frequently. One might have supposed that he knew history by quotations only, and

Digitized by Google

that these quotations occurred to him as by inspiration. And here I must be allowed to mention a fact which has often struck me, and which I never could satisfactorily account for to myself; but it is so very remarkable, and I have witnessed it so often, that I cannot pass it in silence. It is that Napoleon seems to possess a stock of information on several points, which remains within him, in reserve as it were, to burst forth with splendour on remarkable occasions, and which in his moments of carelessness appears to be not only slumbering, but almost unknown to him altogether. With respect to history, for instance, how often has it happened to him to ask me whether Saint-Louis had reigned before or after Philippe-le-Bel, and other questions of the same kind. But if the occasion offered, when his moment came, then he would quote without hesitation, and with the most minute details; and when it has sometimes happened to me to be in doubt, and to go and verify, I have always found him to have been right and most scrupulously exact; I have never been able to detect him in error.

Another singular peculiarity in him of the same kind is this:—In his common intercourse of life, and his familiar conversation, the Emperor mutilated the names most familiar to him, even ours; yet I do not think that this would have happened to him on a public occasion. I have

Digitized by Google

heard him many times, during our walks, repeat the celebrated speech of Augustus; and he has never missed saying, "Take a seat, Sylla*." He would frequently create names of persons according to his fancy; and when he had once adopted them, they remained fixed in his mind, although we pronounced them as they should be, a hundred times in the day, within his hearing; but he would have been struck if we had used them as he had altered them. It was the same thing with respect to orthography: in general, he did not attend to it; yet, if our copies had contained any faults of spelling, he would have complained of it. One day the Emperor said to me, "You do not write ortho-" graphically, do you?" This question gave rise to a sarcastic smile from a bystander, who thought it was meant to convey a reproach. The Emperor, who saw this, continued:—"At least, I suppose "you do not; for a man occupied with public or "other important business, a minister for instance, "cannot, and need not, attend to orthography. "His ideas must flow faster than his hand can "trace; he has only time to place his points; he "must put words in letters, and phrases in words; "and let the scribes make it out afterwards."—The Emperor left a great deal for the copyists to do; he was their torment: his hand-writing ac-

* Instead of Cinna, in Corneille's tragedy of *Cinna*, act v. scene 1st.—*Eng. Ed.*

Digitized by Google

tually formed hieroglyphics; he often could not decipher it himself. My son was one day reading to him a chapter of the Campaign of Italy; on a sudden he stopped short, unable to make out the writing. "The little blockhead," said the Emperor, "cannot read his own hand-writing!" "It is not mine, Sire." "And who's, then?" "Your Majesty's." "How so, you little rogue; "do you mean to insult me?" The Emperor took the manuscript, tried a long while to read it, and at last threw it down, saying, "He is "right: I cannot tell myself what is written."— He has often sent the copyists to me, to try to read to them what he had himself been unable to decipher.

The Emperor accounted for the clearness of his ideas, and the facility he possessed of being able to protract the duration of his application to the utmost, by saying that the different affairs were put up in his head as in a closet. "When "I wish to interrupt an affair," said he, "I close "the drawer which contains it, and I open that "which contains another. They do not mix "together, and do not fatigue me nor incon- "venience me." He had never been kept awake, he said, by an involuntary preoccupation of mind. "If I wish to sleep, I shut up all the drawers, "and I am asleep." So that he had always, he added, slept when he wanted rest, and almost at will.

Digitized by Google

My Atlas.—Predestination, &c.—The Governor makes fruitless attempts to be received by the Emperor.

Tuesday, 1st October.—When I entered the Emperor's room, he had my Atlas in his hands. He turned over several of the genealogical maps, whose relation and correspondence with each other he now understands remarkably well. On closing the book he said, "What a concatenation! "how each part results from and corroborates "what goes before it! How every part unfolds "itself and remains fixed in the mind! Las "Cases, if you had done nothing more than point "out the true method for instruction, you would "still have rendered a most essential service. "Every one may now clothe the skeleton as they "like; it will, no doubt, be improved upon, but "the first conception is yours," &c.

Amongst the numerous subjects of conversation which followed, predestination was mentioned. The Emperor made many remarkable observations on that subject; amongst others, "Pray," said he, "am I not said to be given to "the belief in predestination?"—"Yes, Sire, "at least by many people." "Well, well! let "them say on; one may sometimes be tempted "to imitate, and it may occasionally be useful. . . "But what are men! . . . How much easier it is "to occupy their attention, and to strike their "imaginations, by absurdities than by rational

Digitized by Google

" ideas! But can a man of sound sense listen " for one moment to such a doctrine? Either " predestination admits the existence of free will, " or it rejects it. If it admits it, what kind of " predetermined result can that be which a sim- " ple determination, a stop, a word may alter or " modify, *ad infinitum*? If predestination, on the " contrary, rejects the existence of free will, it " is quite another question; in that case a child " need only be thrown into its cradle as soon as " it is born; there is no necessity for bestowing " the least care upon it; for if it be irrevocably " determined that it is to live, it will grow " though no food should be given to it. You " see that such a doctrine cannot be maintained; " predestination is but a word without meaning. " The Turks themselves, the patrons of predes- " tination, are not convinced of the doctrine, " or medicine would not exist in Turkey; and " a man residing in a third floor, would not " take the trouble to go down by the longer way " of the stairs, he would immediately throw him- " self out of the window: you see to what a " string of absurdities that will lead," &c. &c.

At about three o'clock the Emperor was told that the Governor wished to communicate to him some instructions which he had just received from London. The Emperor replied that he was unwell, that the instructions might be sent to him, or communicated to some one of his suite;

Digitized by Google

but the Governor insisted on being admitted, saying that he wished to communicate directly with the Emperor; he added, that he had also a few words to say to us in private, after having spoken to *the General.* The Emperor again refused; upon which the Governor retired, saying that he begged he might be informed when he *could* see *the General.* This period may be distant indeed; the Emperor, with whom I was at that moment, having said to me, that he was determined never to receive him again.

After dinner the Emperor had Buffon and Valmont de Bomare brought to him. He looked at what these authors say respecting the diversities in the human species, the difference between a negro and a white; but he was not much satisfied with what he found in them on the subject. He retired early into his apartment: he was unwell.

2d.—The Emperor having told me that he was determined to apply again to the study of English, and that I must oblige him every morning to take his lesson, I accordingly went to his apartment at about half-past twelve. I was not fortunate in the choice of the moment, for he was lying on his sofa asleep after his breakfast. I must have vexed him, and was very much vexed myself. However, he would not let me go away, and read a little English for about half an hour. He was not very well. He dressed. Having told him that we were ready with what he had given

Digitized by Google

us to do, he at first proposed to go to work on the chapters of the Campaign of Italy; but he afterwards altered his mind, and was busied the whole day on something else. . . . . At about five o'clock he attempted to walk out, but found the weather too cold. After dinner he tried to read; but in vain; he could not go on: he felt tired, sleepy, indisposed, and withdrew almost immediately.

Jurisprudence; Code; Merlin, &c.—Monuments in Egypt. —Plan to erect an Egyptian Temple in Paris.

3d.—After breakfast the Emperor took two or three turns in the garden. We were all with him. He spoke of the communications which the Governor had to make to us, and took a review of the different conjectures—some good, some bad—which each of us formed on the subject. The weather was tolerable; he ordered the calash, and we went round the wood. The heat and the heaviness of the atmosphere, though the sun was obscured, obliged him to go into the house again. He sat down and dictated to my son, until five o'clock.

We again tried to take a few turns in the garden; but the air was cold and damp. He went indoors again, and made me go to converse with him. He turned over an English book, and stopped at a part relating to jurisprudence, and the criminal codes of France and England, en-

Digitized by Google

deavouring to compare them. Every body knows how extremely well versed he is in our codes; but he has little knowledge of those of England, and, with the exception of some general points, I could not answer his questions. In the course of the conversation he said: "Laws which in "theory are a model of clearness, become too "often a chaos in their application; because "men, with their passions, spoil every thing "they touch, &c. . . . Men can only avoid being "exposed to the arbitrary acts of the judge, by "submitting to the despotism of the law, &c. . . . "I had at first fancied it would be possible to "reduce all laws to simple geometrical demon-"strations; so that every man who could read, "and connect two ideas together, would be able "to decide for himself: but I became convinced, "almost immediately after, that this idea was "absurd. However," added he, "I should have "wished to start from some fixed point, and "follow one road known to all; have no other "laws but those inserted in the code, and pro-"claim, once for all, that all laws that were "not in the code were null and void. But it is "not easy to obtain simplicity from practical "lawyers: they first prove to you that sim-"plicity is impossible, that it is a mere chimera; "and endeavour next to demonstrate that it is "incompatible with the stability and the exist-"ence of power. Power, they say, is exposed

Digitized by Google

" alone to the unexpected machinations of all;
" it must therefore have, in the moment of need,
" arms kept in reserve for unforeseen cases: so
" that, with some old edicts of Chilperic or
" Pharamond brought forward for the occasion,"
said Napoleon, " nobody can say that he is
" secure from being hanged in due form and
" according to law.

" So long as the subjects of discussion in the
" Council of State," said the Emperor, " were
" referable to the code, I felt very strong; but
" when they diverged from it, I was quite in the
" dark, and *Merlin* was then my resource—he
" was my light. Without possessing much bril-
" liancy, Merlin is very learned, wise, upright,
" and honest; a veteran of the good old cause:
" he was very much attached to me.

" No sooner had the code made its appear-
" ance, than it was almost immediately fol-
" lowed by commentaries, explanations, eluci-
" dations, interpretations, and the Lord knows
" what besides. I usually exclaimed, on seeing
" this: Gentlemen, we have cleaned the stable
" of Augeas; for God's sake do not let us fill it
" up again!" &c.

During the dinner the Emperor made some very remarkable observations respecting Egypt, which will be found in the chapters dictated to Bertrand. The Emperor thought that all he had seen in Egypt, and, particularly, all those cele-

Digitized by Google

brated ruins so much talked of, were not to be compared with Paris and the Tuileries. The only difference between Egypt and us was, in his opinion, that Egypt, thanks to the pureness of its air and the nature of its materials, preserved her ruins for ever; whereas the nature of our European atmosphere would not admit of our having any for any length of time, every thing being soon corroded and gone.

Vestiges of a thousand years' date might be found on the banks of the Nile; but not one would subsist on the banks of the Seine after fifty years. He, however, regretted very much that he had not caused an Egyptian temple to be erected at Paris: he should have wished to have adorned the capital with such a monument, &c.

Resources during the emigration; anecdotes, &c.—Official Communications.—New offences.

4th.—At about twelve o'clock I went to the Emperor's apartment. He took a good lesson of English in Telemachus: he resolved to take up my method again; he approves of it, he said, and derives great benefit from it. He observed that he thought I had excellent dispositions for being a very good schoolmaster; I told him it was the fruit of my experience. He then made me enter into a great many details respecting the time when I gave lessons in London, during my emi-

Digitized by Google

gration, and he was very much amused by them. "However," said he; "you, gentlemen, must "have done credit to the profession, if not by "your learning, at least, by your manners." I then told him that one of our Princes had taught mathematics during his emigration. "And this "alone," said he, with animation, "would make "a man of him, and shew him to have possessed "some merit; that is assuredly one of the "greatest triumphs of Madame de Genlis."

I then related to him the following curious anecdote, which I had heard on that subject. "The Prince was in Switzerland; and being so "circumstanced as to find it advisable to con- "ceal his existence, he wished to take a name "that might favour his disguise. One of our "Bishops, of the South of France, fancied that "nothing could be better than to give him the "name of a young man from Languedoc then at "Nismes, who was a very zealous Protestant; "which was just as it ought to be, the Prince "being in a Protestant canton. The Bishop "added, that there was no appearance that the "young man would ever be in the way to falsify "the Prince's assumption of his name. But it "had so happened that the young man had gone "into the army, and had become an aide-de- "camp to M. de Montesquieu, and that shortly "after he had emigrated precisely into Switzer- "land with his general. What was his sur-

Digitized by Google

" prise to find himself at the *table d'hôte*, at dinner " with a person of his own name, of the same " religion, and who belonged to the same town! " It was quite like the scene of the two Sosias.* " But the best of the joke was, that the young " man had also changed his name, and carefully " concealed himself. Such incidents are only " to be met with in novels; they are thought " of impossible occurrence. Perhaps the present " story has been rather embellished; yet, I think, " I can affirm that I heard it from the young man " himself."

" But," observed the Emperor afterwards, " those amongst you emigrants who had found " resources abroad, must have found themselves " quite lost when they returned to France, and " ruined once more?"—"Certainly, Sire; for we " found nothing of what we had formerly left in " France, and we had just abandoned the little we " had earned since. But we had not calculated: " our impatience to revisit our native land had " overbalanced every other consideration, and " several amongst us soon found themselves in " the greatest distress, in want of every thing, " although acquainted and even intimate with " many of the great personages of the day—with " your ministers, Sire, your counsellors of state, " and others. This circumstance gave rise to a

* In Moliere's Comedy of Amphitryon. *Eng. Ed.*

Digitized by Google

"*bon mot* from one of our *wits*—meeting one "day, in the saloon of the Minister for mari- "time affairs, a friend who like himself hardly "knew how to manage to subsist, he exclaimed "by way of consolation: Well, my friend, if we "die of hunger, we may still have two or three "ministers at our funeral." The Emperor laughed heartily at the jest, and admitted that it gave an exact description of the situation of affairs at the time.

After his lesson of English, and the conversation which followed, the Emperor went out to take a walk. We walked to the end of the wood, where the calash drove up to us.

On the Emperor's return, the Doctor came to inform him that Colonel Reade, whom he had consented to receive in lieu of the Governor, wished to be presented to him. Colonel Reade delivered to the Emperor a note of considerable length; and I was sent for to translate it. It contained the communications which Sir Hudson Lowe had for three or four days past been vainly endeavouring to make in person. The note was couched in the most offensive terms, and the Governor wished to have reserved to himself the satisfaction of communicating its contents to the Emperor. This is a characteristic trait, and it requires no comment. The note will be found among the official docu-

Digitized by Google

ments, and I shall recur to it whenever it produces any result.* The harsh terms in which it was expressed, and in particular the repeated threat that we should be separated from the Emperor, vexed us exceedingly, and put us out of spirits for the remainder of the day.

The Emperor reads my Journal, and dictates to me.—Conference between the Grand Marshal and the Governor.

5th.—At an early hour this morning, before I had risen, I heard some one softly open my chamber-door. My apartment is so encumbered with my own bed and that of my son, that it is no easy matter to enter it. I perceived a hand drawing aside my bed-curtain: it was the Emperor's. I was reading a book of geometry, a circumstance which amused him very much, and, as he said, saved my reputation. I instantly rose, and soon rejoined the Emperor, who was proceeding to the wood alone. He conversed for

* The reader will have observed that I frequently refer to the official documents. If they were not inserted here it is not my fault. At Longwood the Emperor directed me to take charge of them, and to range them in their proper order; this collection might be said to be our archives. I relied on being able to refer to them in case of need. However, at the time of my removal and the seizure of my papers by Sir Hudson Lowe, I was deprived of these documents, and it is now out of my power to procure them.

Digitized by Google

a considerable time on the events of the preceding day. He then returned to the house for the purpose of taking a bath: he was very ill, and had passed a bad night.

He sent for me at one o'clock. He was in the drawing-room, and he expressed a wish to take his English lesson. The weather was very hot and close. The Emperor felt languid and dispirited: he could not bend his mind to study, and several times fell asleep. At length he rose, saying he was determined to shake off his lethargy, and he proceeded to the billiard-room to breathe a little fresh air.

Conversing on the subject of the Campagns of Italy, he inquired what I had done with the first rough draughts, observing that all the chapters had been several times re-copied. I told him that I had carefully preserved them. He desired to have all the manuscripts brought to him, and laying aside two complete copies, he sent the rest into the kitchen to be burnt.

I have already several times mentioned that the Emperor knew I kept a Journal. This was a secret, and therefore he never spoke to me on the subject, except when we happened to be alone together. He often asked me whether I still continued my Journal, and what I could find to set down in it. "Sire," I replied, "all that your "Majesty does and says, from morning to night."

Digitized by Google

"Then," said he, "you must have a monstrous "deal of repetition, and must tell many useless "things! But no matter, go on, some day we "will look it over together."

When he visited my chamber, he frequently found the faithful Aly engaged in re-copying my Journal; for he had kindly offered to employ himself in this way, during his leisure hours. The Emperor sometimes cast his eyes upon Aly's writing, and after reading a few lines, that is to say, as soon as he ascertained what it was, he would turn away and speak about something else, without ever alluding to the subject. This is precisely what had occurred this morning; and the Emperor, recollecting the circumstance, said that he wished at length to have a sight of this famous *jumble of trifles*. My son brought a portion of the manuscript, and the Emperor spent upwards of two hours in perusing it. The introduction, which relates to myself personally, fixed his attention; he read it over twice, and then said: "Well, very well; this is a fine inhe- "ritance for little Emanuel." As to the Journal, he approved of its form and general plan. He made several corrections with his own hand, on those parts which related to his family and his childhood. He desired my son to take the pen, and he dictated to him some details respecting Brienne, Father Patrault, &c. When he had

Digitized by Google

done, he desired me to continue my labours, as he was pleased with them; and he promised to furnish me with many anecdotes, particularly concerning Alexander and the other sovereigns.

He afterwards took a drive in the calash, in which I accompanied him, and the Journal again became the topic of conversation. The Emperor said a great deal on the subject, and expressed himself very much pleased with the idea. He gave me several hints respecting it, and concluded by observing, that from the peculiar circumstances under which it was produced, it might become a work truly unique in its character, and an invaluable treasure to his son.

On our return to Longwood, we found the Grand Marshal, who had just returned from Plantation House, where he had been to hold a conference on the subject of the communications of yesterday. We anxiously awaited the answer he might bring back. He informed us that a proposition had been made, which was nothing less than that four of us should be separated from the Emperor. There were many other minor points of a very vexatious nature; but this one caused us to lose sight of all the rest. The Governor had, however, finally agreed to remove only the Pole and three of the domestics. According to the report of the Grand Marshal, I was the individual upon whom the storm had lowered, of whom the Governor most particularly com-

Digitized by Google

plained, and whose removal, he said, he should certainly have decided upon, had he not thought me too useful to the Emperor. He complained that I was constantly writing to Europe, declaiming against the government and the injustice and oppression which I alleged were exercised towards us. His other subjects of complaint were, that I spoke of the Emperor to the strangers who visited Longwood in such a way as to excite their interest; that I was constantly endeavouring to establish communications with different individuals on the island (and he mentioned the instance of Mrs. Sturmer); that I had addressed, or endeavoured to transmit, various documents to Europe, &c. However, after having spoken of me in the most angry terms, for some reason or other, he endeavoured to soften down what he had said by a few complimentary observations. He remarked, that he could scarcely have expected such conduct in a man possessing so much information, and whose good character was established throughout Europe.

After dinner the Emperor amused himself by solving some problems in geometry and algebra: this, he said, reminded him of his youthful days; and it surprised us all to find that the subjects were still so fresh in his recollection.

Digitized by Google

Peculiar circumstance connected with my Journal.—The empire of opinion.—Talma, Crescentini, &c.

6th—7th. During these two days, a circumstance has occurred, which is so nearly connected with the nature of the present work, that I cannot omit noticing it. I mentioned, a little further back, that the Emperor had expressed himself well satisfied with my journal: he alluded to it several times in the course of the day, assuring me that he should feel a great pleasure in perusing and correcting it. This information, as may be supposed, was highly gratifying to me. The moment which I had so long and ardently looked for had at length arrived. That which I had hastily, and, perhaps, inaccurately collected, was now about to receive an inestimable correction and sanction. Imperfect points would be developed, chasms filled up, and obscurities explained. What a fund of historical truths and political secrets was I about to receive? Elated by these expectations, I the first day presented myself to the Emperor at the usual hour, having my journal with me; but he began to dictate to me on a totally different subject, and I was obliged to yield to the disappointment. Next day, the same thing occurred again. I now wished to call the Emperor's attention to my journal; but he did not

Digitized by Google

appear to understand me, and I took the hint. I know Napoleon so well! He possesses in the highest degree the art of not seeming to understand; he resorts to it frequently and always for some particular object. In the present instance I understood him sufficiently, and I did not again attempt to draw his attention to the subject. At first I was much puzzled to guess the motive that had induced him to act thus; and I made several conjectures which have probably occurred to the reader, as well as to myself. A few days afterwards I was forced away from him, though I had not the least cause in the world to anticipate this fatal event.

I have dwelt on this circumstance with scrupulous exactness, because I conceive it affords a new guarantee of my sincerity, and serves to explain precisely the nature of my journal. Of the great bulk of its contents, and in particular the important events described in it, no doubt can be entertained. Some involuntary errors may, however, have crept into the details, from the hasty manner in which they were collected, and from my being deprived of the advantage of having the manuscript revised by the only individual who was capable of correcting its inaccuracies.

The Emperor, while he was dressing and wait

Digitized by Google

ing for the Grand Marshal to take his turn in writing, amused himself by conversing on different subjects.

He spoke of the influence of opinion, to which he so frequently alludes. He traced its secret progress, its uncertainty and the caprice of its decisions. He then adverted to the natural delicacy of the French, which he said was exquisite in matters of decorum, the laudable susceptibility of our manners, and the graceful action and gentleness of touch which authority must employ, if an attempt be made to interfere with the national feeling.

"In conformity with my system," observed he, "of amalgamating all kinds of merit, and of rendering one and the same reward universal, I "had an idea of presenting the cross of the legion "of honour to Talma; but I refrained from doing "this, in consideration of our capricious manners "and absurd prejudices. I wished to make a "first experiment in an affair that was out of date "and unimportant, and I accordingly gave the "iron crown to Crescentini. The decoration was "foreign, and so was the individual on whom "it was conferred. This circumstance was less "likely to attract public notice or to render my "conduct the subject of discussion; at worst, "it could only give rise to a few malicious "jokes. Such," continued the Emperor, "is

Digitized by Google

" the influence of public opinion. I distributed " sceptres at will, and thousands readily bow- " ed beneath their sway; and yet I could " not give away a ribbon without the chance " of incurring disapprobation; for I believe " my experiment, with regard to Crescentini, " proved unsuccessful." " It did, Sire," observed some one present. " The circumstance " occasioned a great outcry in Paris; it drew " forth a general anathema in all the draw- " ing-rooms of the metropolis, and afforded " ample scope for the expression of malignant " feeling. However, at one of the evening " parties of the Faubourg Saint-Germain, a " *bon-mot* had the effect of completely stem- " ming the torrent of indignation. A pompous " orator was holding forth, in an eloquent strain, " on the subject of the honour that had been " conferred on Crescentini. He declared it to " be a disgrace, a horror, a perfect profana- " tion, and inquired what right Crescentini " could have to such a distinction? On hear- " ing this, the beautiful Madame G... who was " present, rose majestically from her chair, " and, with a truly theatrical tone and gesture, " exclaimed, ' *Et sa blessure, Monsieur!* do " you make no allowance for that?' This " produced a general burst of laughter and " applause, and poor Madame G .....

Digitized by Google

"was very much embarrassed by her suc-
"cess."

The Emperor, who now heard this anecdote for the first time, was highly amused by it. He often afterwards alluded to it, and occasionally related it himself.

At dinner the Emperor informed us that he had worked for twelve hours; and we observed that his day was not yet ended. He seemed to be ill and fatigued.

The Odyssey.—Combat between Ulysses and Irus.

8th.—When I entered the Emperor's apartment this morning, I found him engaged in reading the files of *Journaux des Debats,* which had lately arrived. At three o'clock he began to dress. His first valet de chambre was ill; and he observed, that those who acted as his substitutes were not equal to him in address.

The weather was tolerable, and we walked to the extremity of the wood, where the calash was to come to take us up.

I had a disposable sum of money in London, which I had conveyed thither in 1814. The recollection of the privations I had endured during my emigration, and the chance of being exposed to future want, had prompted me to this act of prudence, and I was now reaping the fruits of

Digitized by Google

it. Owing to this circumstance, I was more at my ease, as to pecuniary affairs, than any other individual of the Emperor's suite at Saint-Helena: but what led me to regard this sum as an inestimable treasure was the happiness of being able to lay it at the feet of the Emperor. I had already several times proposed that he should accept it; and I now once more repeated the offer, while I adverted to the renewed outrages which we had just experienced from the Governor. At this moment we were joined by Madame de Montholon, who had set out after us. She observed that the Emperor walked so fast, that she should certainly have lost sight of him, had not my gesticulations enabled her to keep her eye upon us; and that she had been puzzled to guess the cause of my vehemence of manner. "Madam," said the Emperor with the most captivating grace, "he has been trying to "make me accept his bounty; he has been of-"fering to support us here."

We returned almost immediately to the house, as the weather was very damp and the Emperor complained of tooth-ache. For some time past he has been troubled with a great secretion of saliva.

After dinner he resumed the reading of the Odyssey: we had arrived at the passage describing the combat between Ulysses and Irus, on the threshold of the palace, both in the garb

Digitized by Google

of beggars. The Emperor very much disapproved of this episode, which he pronounced to be mean, incongruous, and beneath the dignity of the King. "And yet," continued he, "independently of all the faults which, in my opinion, this incident presents, I still find in it "something to interest me. I fancy myself in "the situation of Ulysses, and then I can well "conceive his dread of being overpowered by a "wretched mendicant. Every prince or general "has not the broad shoulders of his guards or "grenadiers; every man has not the strength of "a porter. But Homer has remedied all this by "representing his heroes as so many colossi: "we have no such heroes now-a-days. What "would become of us," he added, glancing round at us all, "if we lived in those good "times when bodily vigour constituted real "power? Why, Noverraz (his valet-de-chambre) "would wield the sceptre over us all. It must "be confessed that civilization favours the mind "entirely at the expense of the body."

The Pole arrested by the Governor.—The Emperor's Reflections on his Son and on Austria.—New Vexations.—Remarks on Lord Bathurst.—Observations dictated by Napoleon.

9th.—As we were walking to come up with the calash, we received information that the Pole had just been put under arrest by the Governor.

Digitized by Google

This was, of course, merely a first step—a warning of what we all had to expect. Intimidation seems to be the system to which the Governor has resorted since the arrival of his last instructions, which he endeavours to fulfil to the utmost of his ingenuity. We shall see how far he will go.

When I waited on the Emperor, before dinner, I found him dull and apparently absent of mind. The conversation led him to mention Austria, and he alluded to the wrongs which he had received from that power, and the errors of her policy. He described the weakness of the Monarch, who, he said, had never evinced energy except when it tended to ruin him in the estimation of his subjects. He dwelt on the venality and want of principle which distinguished the men who had advised and executed the measures of the Austrian cabinet. He spoke of the blind policy of Austria, and described her dangerous situation. "She now stands," said he, "in the "most imminent peril, advancing to meet the "embraces of a colossus in her front, while "she cannot recede a single step, because an "abyss is yawning on her flank and rear."

This turn of the conversation naturally led the Emperor to speak of his son. "What education "will they give him?" said he. "What sort "of principles will they ingraft in his youthful "mind? On the other hand, if he should prove

Digitized by Google

" weak in intellect—if he should bear any re-
" semblance to the . . . . . .!—
" if they should inspire him with hatred of his
" father! These thoughts fill me with horror!
" and where is the antidote to all this? Hence-
" forth there can be no certain medium of com-
" munication—no faithful tradition between him
" and me! At best my Memoirs, or perhaps
" your Journal, may fall into his hands. But to
" subdue the false precepts imbibed in early life,
" to counteract the errors of a bad education,
" requires a certain capacity, a certain strength
" of mind and decision of judgment which fall
" not to the share of every one." . . . . He appeared deeply affected; and after a pause of a few moments, he said suddenly and with emphasis, "But let us talk of something else;" however he still continued silent. I sat down to write, and after an hour or two the Grand Marshal came and took my place.

Just after I had quitted the Emperor's apartments, I was again sent for to translate to him a large packet of papers which had been received from the Governor. The state of my eyes, which are now altogether failing me, obliged me to avail myself of M. de Montholon's assistance in reading the papers. Their contents were first:—Some of the new restrictions that have been imposed on us, in which the Emperor is treated in a way that may be termed curious; for inde-

Digitized by Google

cency and indecorum are carried so far as to prescribe the nature and limits of the conversations which he is to be permitted to hold. This will scarcely be credited! But I shall presently insert these restrictions in their literal form.

The packet next contained the form of the declaration which was presented for our signature. This was merely a series of arbitrary and useless vexations, heightened by every irritating circumstance that vengeance could suggest.

Finally there was a letter from the Governor to the Grand Marshal, founded on the note presented by Colonel Reade, which I translated to the Emperor, and which the colonel had refused to leave behind him; the reader will recollect my having already noticed it. However, in the letter now transmitted to the Emperor certain essential points were very ingeniously suppressed or modified: the Emperor frequently remarked, that the Governor possesses a peculiar talent for business of this sort. I will here retrace this note from recollection. Though I read it only once, namely, at the time when I translated it to the Emperor, yet I think I can vouch for the following being an accurate representation of its contents.

"The Frenchmen who wished to remain with General Bonaparte, were required to sign the formula which should be presented to them, and by which they would subject themselves to all

Digitized by Google

the restrictions imposed on the General. This obligation was to be regarded as perpetual. Those who should refuse to enter into this agreement were to be sent to the Cape of Good Hope. Four individuals were to be deducted from the suite of General Bonaparte. Those who might remain were to be considered as though they were Englishmen by birth, and to be subject to the laws established for securing the safe custody of General Bonaparte; that is to say, they would incur the punishment of death by conniving at his escape. Any Frenchman who might use insulting language or reflections, or behave so as to give offence to the Governor, or the Government, would be immediately removed to the Cape of Good Hope, without being provided with the means of returning to Europe: but the whole expense of the voyage devolving on himself."

During dinner, and the greater part of the evening, these documents became the subject of conversation. We were much amused by that passage in the Governor's letter, which transmitted the ministerial instructions, and informed us, that those who might be wanting in respect for the Governor, or render themselves obnoxious, would be removed to the Cape, and the expense attending their return to Europe was to be defrayed by themselves. We thought this very droll, and

Digitized by Google

the Emperor said, "Of course this threat appears " to you very extraordinary and ridiculous; but " no doubt it was perfectly natural to Lord Bath- " urst. I dare say he could not imagine a more " terrible punishment. It is a true shopkeeper " idea!"

The Emperor concluded the evening by reading to us Adelaide Duguesclin, which contains a fine rodomantade upon the Bourbons.

After reading it, the Emperor said, "During the " time of my power, an order was given for sup- " pressing the performance of this drama, under " the idea that it would be offensive to me. This " circumstance accidentally came to my know- " ledge, and I ordered the piece to be revived. " Many things of the same kind took place; " people often acted very unwisely under the idea " that they were serving or pleasing me."

N. B. I transcribe here the restrictions to which I lately alluded. They are curious in themselves, and will serve better than volumes of description, to give a just idea of our situation; but what enhances the value of this document is, that the observations, which accompany each article, were made by the Emperor himself.

Restrictions drawn up by Sir Hudson Lowe, and transmitted to Longwood on the 19th of October, 1816, but which he had already put into execution by different secret orders, since the

Digitized by Google

preceding month of August, though he never communicated them to the English officers on duty, doubtless, because he was ashamed of them.

TEXT OF THE RESTRICTIONS.

"1st.—Longwood, with the road by Hut's-Gate, along the hill, as far as the signal-post near Alarm-House, are to be fixed as boundaries."

OBSERVATION. Sir Hudson Lowe's predecessor had extended the boundary line to the summits of the hills; but in about a fortnight after, he perceived that by removing the sentinels to a little further distance, the house and garden of Secretary-general Brook, would be included within the boundaries, and he immediately gave orders for the change.

At about forty fathoms from the road-side is Corbett's garden, which contains about eight or ten oak trees and a fountain; thus affording a cool and agreeable shade. According to the new restrictions, in which only the high road is specified, a line is substituted for a surface, and the secretary's house and Corbett's garden are excluded from the boundaries.

"2d.—Sentinels will mark the boundary lines, which nobody must pass to approach the house or grounds of Longwood, without the Governor's permission."

OBSERVATION. By the regulations which were first laid down, respecting our establishment at

Digitized by Google

Saint-Helena, and which were approved by the English Governor, persons were admitted to Longwood in the following manner: The Governor, the Admiral, the Colonel commanding the regiment and the camp, the two members of the East India Company's Council, and the Secretary-general, who were the persons highest in authority on the island, might pass the line of sentinels without any order or permission whatever. The inhabitants of the island were required to have a pass from the Governor; sailors to be furnished with one from their admiral, and soldiers with one from their colonel; and finally, the inhabitants, sailors, and officers might all come to Longwood by the permission of Count Bertrand, when the Emperor wished to receive them. This arrangement, which continued for eight months, was attended by no inconvenience. By the present regulation (which has been in force since the month of August, though it was not formally communicated to us until we were furnished with the list of new restrictions,) we may be said to be kept in solitary confinement, and cut off from all intercourse with the inhabitants. The latter, the officers and seamen are all equally averse to the idea of being obliged to solicit the Governor's permission to visit Longwood, and to subject themselves to an interrogatory respecting the motive of their visit. Strangers, whether civil or military, officers,

Digitized by Google

who might touch at Saint-Helena on their passage from India, and who might be desirous of seeing the Emperor, usually applied to Count Bertrand, who appointed the day and the hour when they would be received. During their stay in the island they were regarded as citizens, and with the permission of Count Bertrand, they might when they pleased visit Longwood; and it may once more be observed, that this arrangement subsisted for eight months without being attended by any inconvenience. If any strangers touching at the island, might excite the suspicion of the Governor, he could prevent them from landing, or passing the first post. Finally, the Governor, by the report of the sentinels, was daily made acquainted with the names of the individuals who visited Longwood. But in the month of August, the Governor sought to impose on us the obligation of receiving strangers, to whom he wished to render himself agreeable, and also of receiving them at the time he might think proper to appoint. This was giving the finishing stroke to all his offensive conduct! To put a stop to all these insults, the Emperor found himself obliged to declare that he would in future receive no one.

"3d.—The road to the left of Hut's-Gate, which turns off by Woodbridge to Longwood, never having been frequented by General Bonaparte since the arrival of the Governor; the post

Digitized by Google

by which it was observed will be in a great measure withdrawn. But whenever the General may wish to ride on horseback in this direction, on giving timely notice to the officer he will experience no obstacle."

OBSERVATION.—In the first observation it was proved that the limits had been contracted in this quarter; and, by this third article, they are still more circumscribed. To say that the valley has not been frequented for six months, is a strange reason for adopting this decision. It is certainly true, that Napoleon has for several months declined going out, in consequence of the harassing conduct of the Governor; but it must also be observed, that one part of the valley is not accessible in rainy weather, and that in the other part a camp has been formed. Yet Lord Bathurst stated, in his speech in parliament, that "this road had been prohibited when it was found that he (General Bonaparte) had abused the confidence that had been reposed in him, and had endeavoured to corrupt the inhabitants of the island." But here Lord Bathurst contradicts Sir Hudson Lowe. The offer of permission to ride in the valley, whenever it may be wished, is a mere pretence; the forms prescribed for the attainment of this permission render it impossible. This offer never has been, and never can be, fulfilled. The ride in the valley being thus prohibited, it has become im-

Digitized by Google

possible to visit Miss Mason's garden, in which there are some large trees which afford agreeable shade. Within the boundaries to which the captives are now restricted, there is not a single spot in which they can enjoy the sight of trees or water: sentinels are posted at different distances throughout the boundaries; and, under the pretence of misunderstanding in the orders, &c., any individual may be arrested. This has frequently happened to the French officers.

"4th. If he (General Bonaparte) should wish to prolong his ride in any other directions, an officer of the Governor's staff (if he receive timely notice) will be in readiness to attend him. If the notice should be short, the officer on duty at Longwood may take place of the staff-officer.

"The inspecting officer has orders not to approach General Bonaparte, at least unless he be asked for; and not to watch him in his rides, except so far as his duty requires; that is to say, he must observe that the established rules are not violated; and if they should be transgressed, he must intimate the circumstance in a respectful way."

Observation.—This regulation is useless. The Emperor will not go out so long as he sees there is a wish to subject him to direct and public inspection. Besides, the staff-officers

Digitized by Google

have orders to report all that the French may say when in conversation with them. This affords opportunities for calumny. Several English officers have refused to act this dishonourable part, declaring that they would not degrade themselves to the level of spies, and repeat the conversations that may take place in the unguarded confidence of a ride or walk.

" 5th.—The rules already in force for preventing communications with any one whatever without the Governor's permission must be strictly enforced. Consequently, it is requisite that General Bonaparte should abstain from entering into any conversation (except such as the interchange of customary salutations may demand) with the individuals whom he may happen to meet, unless it be in the presence of an English officer."

Observation.—Hitherto this extremity of insult had been avoided. The Emperor does not acknowledge, either in the Governor or his agents, the right of imposing any restrictions on him. But what is the object of this article? To insult and degrade the character of the captives! —to give rise to disputes between them and the sentinels. To prohibit them from speaking to any one, or entering any house, is, in fact, a moral annulment of the circuit allowed them. This is so extraordinary, that we are now ac-

Digitized by Google

tually induced to believe, what many persons have already suspected, that Sir Hudson Lowe is occasionally subject to fits of lunacy.

"6th.—Those persons who, with the consent of General Bonaparte, may receive the Governor's permission to visit him, must not communicate with any individual of his suite, unless a permission to that effect be specially expressed."

OBSERVATION.—This is useless; for nobody has been received since the present Governor abolished the regulations which were established by his predecessor. However, the consequence of this restriction is, that if Napoleon should receive a stranger, as none of his officers can be present, and none of his servants in attendance, he would be reduced to the necessity of opening the doors himself. Besides, as the Emperor does not understand English, it follows, if the individual admitted to him should not speak French, that they must both remain mute, and thus the interview would be reduced to a mere exhibition.

"7th.—At sunset, the garden round Longwood is to be regarded as the extent of the boundaries. At that time sentinels will be posted at the limits of the garden; but so as not to incommode General Bonaparte by observing his motions, should he wish to continue his walks. During the night, sentinels will be stationed close to the house, as they formerly were; and all

Digitized by Google

admission must be prohibited until the sentinels are withdrawn from the house and garden on the following morning."

OBSERVATION. — During the excessively hot season, the only time when it is possible to walk is after sun set. In order to avoid meeting the sentinels, the Emperor finds it necessary to return to the house while it is still broad daylight; though the heat of the sun has rendered it impossible for him to go out during the day, as the grounds round Longwood are without shade, water, or verdure. According to this new restriction, the Emperor cannot enjoy a walk in the evening; while he is likewise deprived of the exercise of riding on horseback. He is confined in a small house, in all respects insufficient for his accommodation, badly built, unwholesomely situated, and without a supply of water; and, in addition to all this, every opportunity is taken to expose him to insult and disrespect. His constitution, though naturally robust, is very much enfeebled by the treatment he experiences.

" 8th.—Every letter for Longwood will be enclosed by the Governor in a sealed envelope, and forwarded to the officer on duty, to be delivered, sealed, to the officer of General Bonaparte's suite to whom it is addressed, who by this means will be assured that nobody except the Governor knows its contents.

" In like manner, letters from any of the re-

Digitized by Google

sidents of Longwood must be delivered to the officer on duty, enclosed in a second sealed envelope and addressed to the Governor, which will be a security that no individual except the latter can peruse its contents.

"No letter can be written or sent, and no communication of any kind whatever can be made, except in the manner above mentioned. No correspondence can be maintained with any individual in the island, except for the necessary communications to the purveyor. The notes containing these communications must be delivered open to the officer on duty, who will forward them to the proper quarter.

"The above-mentioned restrictions will be observed from the date of the 10th inst.

"H. Lowe."

"*St. Helena, October 9th*, 1816."

Observation.—This last restriction has no reference to the Emperor, who neither writes nor receives letters. A simple explanation is, therefore, all that is required. Will the observations that may be contained in the confidential letters from the Emperor's officers to their friends be regarded as offensive? When those who may read these letters shall be convinced that they are in no way hostile to the safety or policy of the state, will they forget their contents, so that they may never become the subject of conver-

Digitized by Google

sation or abuse? This explanation will decide whether all correspondence is, or is not, to be considered as prohibited. The seizure of the person of Count Las Cases completely justifies this observation.

The object of the 8th article of the restrictions, as the inquisitorial system established on the island sufficiently proves, is to prevent the European journals from giving publicity to the criminal conduct that is pursued here. A vast deal of trouble is taken to secure this object: it would have been far easier to have acted in such a way as to render concealment unnecessary. A letter addressed to Count Bertrand, dated the 1st of July, 1816, goes to still greater lengths; for it prohibits even verbal communications with the inhabitants of the island. This is the delirium of fury and hatred; or rather, it may be said to be a proof of downright madness. The regulation here alluded to is but a trifling example of the vexations to which we are exposed, and the invention of which seems to be the sole occupation of the present Governor. Can Lord Bathurst now affirm that Sir H. Lowe has made no restriction; that the instructions of the English ministry were of a nature advantageous to Napoleon and his suite, and had no other object than that of securing their safe custody? In consequence of this absurd and insulting treatment, the Emperor has not enjoyed exercise

Digitized by Google

without doors for several months. His medical attendants foresee that this confinement will prove fatal to his constitution. It is a more certain, and far more inhuman mode of assassination, than poison or the sword.

Anxiety occasioned by the new restrictions.—Anecdotes of Campo-Formio.—MM. de Cobentzel, Gallo, and Clarke. —The Count d'Antraigues.

10th.—This morning we had agreed to meet together at the Grand Marshal's, to deliberate on the restrictions which the Governor had recently transmitted to us, and to adopt a uniform resolution. I was unwell, and could not attend. I, however, wrote down my opinion: I stated, that in the delicate situation in which I was placed I could do nothing; I could arrive at no positive conclusion; I always found 0=0.

The point in question was, indeed, of the most serious and difficult nature. We were required to subject ourselves to new restrictions, to place ourselves under the dependence of the Governor, who shamefully abused his power, employed the most insulting language towards the Emperor, and who announced that we must submit to every grievance, under pain of being immediately separated from Napoleon, sent to the Cape, and thence to Europe.

On the other hand, the Emperor, indignant at the mortifications to which we were exposed on

Digitized by Google

his account, insisted that we should no longer submit to them. He urged us rather to quit him, and to return to Europe, to bear witness that we had seen him absolutely buried alive.

But how could we for a moment endure this thought? Death was preferable to separation from him whom we served, admired, and loved; to whom we daily became more and more attached, through his personal qualities, and the miseries which injustice and hatred had accumulated upon him. This was the real state of the question. In these distressing circumstances, we knew not what determination to adopt. I closed my letter by stating, that, if left to myself alone, I would sign, without scruple, any thing that the Governor might present to me; and that, if a collective resolution were taken, I would implicitly adopt it.

The Governor had now found out a method of attacking us in detail: he declared his intention of removing any individual of Napoleon's suite according to his will and caprice.

The Emperor was indisposed: the Doctor has observed incipient scurvy. He desired me to attend him, and we conversed on the subjects which chiefly occupied our attention at the moment. He wanted something to amuse him, and he took up the chapter of Leoben, which happened to be beside him. When he had finished reading it, the conversation turned on the con

Digitized by Google

ferences which brought about the treaty of Campo-Formio. I refer to the chapters on that subject for the portrait and character of the first Austrian negotiator, M. de Cobentzel, whom Napoleon surnamed the "*great northern bear*," on account of the influence, which, he said, his heavy paw had exercised on the green table of the conferences.

"M. de Cobentzel was at that time," said the Emperor, "the agent of the Austrian monarchy, "the main spring of its plans, and the director "of its diplomacy. He had been appointed on "all the principal European embassies, and had "been long at the Court of Catharine, whose "peculiar favour he enjoyed. Proud of his rank "and importance, he doubted not that his digni- "fied and courtly manners would easily overawe "a General who had just issued from the revo- "lutionary camp. Thus," observed Napoleon, "he shewed a want of respect in addressing the "French General: but the first words uttered by "the latter sufficed to reduce him to his proper "level, above which he never afterwards at- "tempted to rise."

The conferences at first proceeded very slowly; for M. de Cobentzel, according to the custom of the Austrian Cabinet, proved himself very skilful in the art of retarding business. The French General, however, determined to bring matters to an issue: the conference, which he had declared

Digitized by Google

should be the last, was maintained with great warmth. Napoleon came, resolved to have a decisive answer to his propositions; they were rejected. He then rose in a fit of passion, and exclaimed energetically: "You wish for war then?—You "shall have it:" and laying his hands on a magnificent piece of porcelain, (which M. de Cobentzel used with great complacency to boast of having received as a present from the great Catharine,) he dashed it with all his force on the ground, where it was broken in a thousand pieces. "There," he exclaimed, "such, I promise "you, will be the fate of your Austrian monar- "chy in less than three months:" and so saying, he rushed out of the apartment. M. de Cobentzel stood petrified; but M. de Gallo, who was of a more conciliatory temper, followed the French General to his carriage, endeavouring to detain him. "He almost dragged "me back by main force," said the Emperor, "and with so pitiable an air, that, in spite of my "apparent anger, I could not refrain from laugh- "ing in my sleeve."

M. de Gallo was the ambassador from Naples to Vienna, whither he had conducted the Neapolitan princess, the second wife of the Emperor Francis. He possessed the full confidence of the Princess, and she, in her turn, ruled her husband: thus the ambassador enjoyed great influence at the Court of Vienna. When the

Digitized by Google

army of Italy, marching on Vienna, dictated the armistice of Leoben, the Empress, at this critical juncture, cast her eyes on her confident, and charged him to avert the danger. He was to gain an interview with the French General, as if accidentally, and to endeavour to prevail on him to accept his services as a negotiator. Napoleon, who was well acquainted with every circumstance, determined to turn his knowledge to a good account. Accordingly, on receiving M. de Gallo, he inquired who he was. The favourite courtier, disconcerted to find himself under the necessity of telling his name, replied that he was the Marquess de Gallo, and that he had been charged by the Emperor of Austria to make overtures to Napoleon. "But," said the latter, "your name is not German." "True," replied M. de Gallo, "I am the Neapo-"litan ambassador." "And how happens it," said Napoleon drily, "that I have to treat with "Naples? We are at peace. Has the Emperor "of Austria no negotiators of the old school? "Is the old aristocracy of Vienna extinct?" M. de Gallo, alarmed at the idea of such observations being officially communicated to the Cabinet of Vienna, now became intent on ingratiating himself into the favour of the young General.

Napoleon enquired what news had been received from Vienna, and spoke of the armies of the Rhine, the Sambre, and the Meuse. He obtained all

Digitized by Google

the intelligence he could; and when he was about to withdraw, M. de Gallo, in the most suppliant tone, inquired whether he might hope to be accepted as a negotiator, and whether he should proceed to Vienna to obtain full powers. Napoleon had no wish to decline this proposal; he had gained an advantage which he was not willing to lose. M. de Gallo, who subsequently became ambassador from Naples to the First Consul, and also ambassador from Joseph to the Emperor Napoleon, frequently mentioned this scene, and frankly avowed that he had never been so frightened in the whole course of his life.

In the French negotiations, Clarke acted the same kind of secondary part which M. de Gallo maintained with regard to Austria. "Clarke," said the Emperor, "had been sent to Italy by "the Directory, which had begun to consider me "as dangerous. He was charged with an osten- "sible and public mission; but he had secret "orders to keep an eye upon me, and to as- "certain if, in case of necessity, it would be "possible to arrest me. But little reliance "could have been placed on the officers of my "army, in an affair of this kind, and therefore "the first inquiries were addressed to the Cis- "alpine Directory. The answer was, that it "would be as well to spare trouble on this "point," and to give up all idea of it. As soon

Digitized by Google

"as I was made acquainted with Clarke's real "instructions, I frankly told him all I knew; "at the same time assuring him that I should "concern myself but very little about any re- "ports that might be made. He was soon "convinced of this. When, on his mission to "Austria, he was dismissed by that power, I "offered to find employment for him, and he "afterwards remained with me; though perhaps "there was, in reality, but little sympathy be- "tween us. I should undoubtedly have again "taken him into my service, after my return, if "I had found him in the ranks along with the "rest. You know that I could not easily rid "myself of those to whom I had become ac- "customed: when people had once embarked "with me, I could never prevail on myself to "throw them overboard. Nothing but absolute "necessity could force me to such a course. "Clarke's chief merit was that of being a good "man of business."

After Brumaire, Clarke naturally came in contact with the First Consul as his aid-de-camp, &c. There was then little etiquette observed at the palace; the duties were not distinctly separated, and the whole presented a kind of family circle. The officers immediately connected with the Consul dined at a general table. Clarke, who was extremely susceptible and punctilious, got involved in

Digitized by Google

quarrels with some of these individuals. The circumstance having reached the ears of the First Consul, he appointed Clarke ambassador to Florence, to the court of the Queen of Etruria. This post was in itself highly agreeable; but Clarke had been appointed to it by way of disgrace. He urgently solicited his recall; and at length, to his great satisfaction, he received an order to return to France. But his punishment was not yet at an end. The First Consul took but little notice of him: he sent him to the Tuileries, to Saint-Cloud, and to the camp of Boulogne, without explaining his intentions, or granting him any thing. Clarke, in despair, told one of his friends that he had no alternative but to throw himself into the Seine, as he could no longer endure the contempt to which he was exposed, added to the mortification of being deprived of his situation. Just at this time he was unexpectedly made secretary of the Topographical Cabinet, a counsellor of state, and appointed to some other posts, which altogether produced him a salary of 60 or 80,000 francs. This was Napoleon's way: his first favour was usually followed immediately by several others. In these cases his bounty was overwhelming. But it was necessary to take advantage of the interval of favour; it might be endless, or it might be instantly and irretrievably lost.

Digitized by Google

I knew General Clarke well; he had been my comrade at the Military School. He informed me, that some days before the battle of Jena, the Emperor, from whose dictation he had just written numerous orders and instructions, entering into a familiar conversation, while he walked up and down his chamber, said: "In three or four days "I will fight a battle, which I shall gain: it will "bring me at least as far as the Elbe, and per- "haps at the Vistula. There I will fight a second "battle, which I shall also gain. Then .... "then ....," said he, with a meditative air, and placing his hand on his forehead ....." but "that is enough; it is useless to invent romances. "—Clarke, in a month you will be Governor of "Berlin; and history will record that, in the space "of one year, and in two different wars, you were "Governor of Vienna and Berlin; that is to say, "of the Austrian and Prussian monarchies. By "the bye," continued he, smiling, "what did "Francis give you for governing his capital?"— "Nothing at all, Sire."—"How, nothing at all! "That was hard indeed! Well, in that case, I "must pay his debt." And he gave him, as far as I can recollect, a sum sufficient to purchase a hotel in Paris, or a country house in the vicinity of the capital.

The course of events exceeded even Napoleon's expectations. He fought but one battle, which

Digitized by Google

brought him to Berlin, and enabled him to advance to the Vistula.

"Clarke," said Napoleon, "possessed a strong "taste for family parchments. At Florence he "spent a great portion of his time in investigating "my genealogy. He also took great pains to "trace out his own, and I believe he at length "persuaded himself that he was related to the "whole Faubourg Saint-Germain. Doubtless he "has a much higher opinion of his own dignity, "now that he is the minister of a legitimate King, "than he had when he was merely the minister of "an upstart Emperor. It is said that he at present "enjoys great favour; I wish it may last. It "commenced a few days before my arrival in "Paris, when the cause of the King was des-"perate. It certainly appeared useless to accept "a ministry when all was lost; but I have nothing "to say against that. This sort of conduct may "have its fair side; yet it is necessary to ob-"serve some degree of decorum, and in that "Clarke was wholly wanting. However, I wil-"lingly forgive him in all that concerns me. . . . "In 1813 and 1814 some persons endeavoured "to inspire me with doubts of Clarke's fidelity; "but I never would listen to any thing of the "kind. I always believed him to be an honest "man." The intimate friends of the Duke de Feltre can bear witness that Napoleon was

Digitized by Google

correct in the opinion he had formed of the character of his minister.

The Duke de Feltre, on communicating to the Emperor the intelligence of the arrival of the Count d'Artois in Switzerland, advised him to make peace. Napoleon replied, under date of the 22d of February, 1814:—"As to your advice of making peace, it is too absurd: it is by cherishing such notions as this that public spirit is destroyed. Besides, it is supposing me either mad or stupid to imagine that, if I could conclude peace, I would not immediately do it. To the prevailing notion that it has been in my power to make peace for four months past, but that I declined doing so, must be attributed all the misfortunes of France. I expected, at least, to have been spared the pain of hearing such sentiments expressed."

The Emperor, reverting to the events of Campo-Formio, alluded to the arrest of the Count d'Antraigues, the papers that were found upon him, and the discoveries to which they gave rise; he also mentioned the indulgence which the Count experienced, and the treachery with which that indulgence was repaid.

The Count d'Antraigues, who was a man of considerable talent, fond of intrigue, and endowed with personal advantages, had acquired a certain degree of importance at the commencement of our Revolution. He was a member of the right

Digitized by Google

hand side of the Constituent Assembly, and he emigrated at the time of its dissolution. At the period when the French were about to assail Venice, the Count d'Antraigues was residing there, where he held a diplomatic appointment from the Russian Government, and was the main spring and agent of all the machinations that were plotting against France. On seeing the danger of the Venetian Republic, he attempted to escape; but he fell in with one of our posts, and was seized with all his papers. The General-in-chief appointed a special commission to examine these documents, and the secrets which they unfolded were the subject of great astonishment. They contained, among other things, full proof of the treason of Pichegru, who had sacrificed his troops to facilitate the operations of the enemy. "Pichegru," exclaimed the Emperor indignantly, "was guilty of the most "odious crime that can possibly be conceived, "that of coldly sacrificing the men whose lives "had been entrusted to his honour and dis-"cretion."

The Count D'Antraigues, finding that all his secrets were discovered, conducted himself with so much address and apparent candour, that Napoleon, conceiving he had gained him over, or, to speak more properly, suffering himself to be gained over by the Count, treated him with the utmost indulgence. He defended him against

Digitized by Google

the proceedings of the Directory, which insisted on having him shot, and the Count was allowed to proceed to Milan on his parole. But what was Napoleon's surprise on learning that M. d'Antraigues had escaped to Switzerland, and had published an infamous libel against him, reproaching him with ill-treatment, and complaining of having been confined in chains! These falsehoods occasioned so much indignation, that several foreign diplomatists, who knew how Napoleon had really acted towards the Count, spontaneously made a public declaration of what they had witnessed.

So late as the year 1814, the Count d'Antraigues died in England, in a horrible way, being assassinated by his valet-de-chambre in the presence of his wife, who was the celebrated singer Saint-Huberti.

At the time of the seizure of the Count d'Antraigues' papers, Pichegru was at the head of the Legislative Body, and was almost at open war with the Directory. It may well be supposed that the members of the Directory were highly gratified by thus obtaining important and authentic documents against their adversaries. This discovery greatly influenced Napoleon in the course which he adopted in the events of Fructidor: it was one of the principal causes of his famous proclamation, which brought about the triumph of the Directory.

Digitized by Google

Desaix, who was serving under Moreau in the army of the Rhine, having taken advantage of the armistice to introduce himself to the General-in-chief of the army of Italy, for whom he had conceived the highest admiration, was with Napoleon at the time of the important discovery above mentioned. Napoleon having informed him of the treason of Pichegru, Desaix observed: "But we knew all this on the Rhine three months ago. A waggon, belonging to General Klinglin's corps, which fell into our hands, furnished us with all Pichegru's correspondence with the enemies of the Republic." "And did Moreau give no intimation of this to the Directory?" "No." "Then he is very blameable," exclaimed Napoleon; "when the safety of one's "country is at stake, silence is guilt!" After Pichegru surrendered, Moreau communicated to the Directory all he knew respecting the conspiracy, at the same time pronouncing a severe reprobation on those who were concerned in it. "This was but another instance of miscon-"duct," said Napoleon; "by not speaking earlier, "he betrayed his country; and by speaking so "late, he merely struck a blow at one who was "already fallen."

The Emperor's Dream.

11th—12th. The produce of the sale of a portion of plate, amounting to 6000 francs, was

Digitized by Google

this day received. This sum the Emperor considered indispensable to make up our deficiencies at the expiration of every month; and he ordered the sale to be repeated regularly.

The Emperor continues very ill, and is in very low spirits. To-day he did not leave his room until dinner-time. He conversed very little, and did not apply himself to any kind of occupation. I remained with him the greater part of the day. He spoke frequently of the situation in which we stood with respect to the Governor, and made some very remarkable observations on that subject. . . . . .

. . . . . .

After dinner he mentioned a dream which he had had during the night. A lady with whom he had been but little acquainted (Madame Clarke, Duchess de Feltre) appeared to him in his dream, and told him she was dead, at the same time adding several observations which were expressed in language perfectly connected and intelligible. "Every thing was so clear and "distinct," said the Emperor, "that it has made "a forcible impression on me; so much so, "that if I were really to hear of the death of "the Duchess de Feltre, I must confess that my "established ideas would be shaken; and per-"haps," said he, smiling and looking at one of the company, "I too should become a believer "in dreams and prophecies."

Digitized by Google

The Emperor ate little; his spirits were depressed, and he was evidently very ill. He retired almost immediately, and his manner affected us greatly. We could not help remarking how much he was altered.

Privations to which the Emperor is subjected.—His claims on Prince Eugene.

13th. — The Emperor came to me about ten o'clock. He looked in at my room-door, and blamed me for not having risen earlier. He found me using the foot-bath, for I was not well. I soon joined him beneath the tent, where he wished to breakfast. He told me he had given orders for drawing up some notes relative to the new restrictions, to prevent condemnation being passed on us without a sort of responsibility being attached to those who passed the sentence. He then proceeded to calculate the lots of plate which remain to be sold, and the period during which they would serve to maintain us. I repeated the offers which I have already several times made, telling him that it was hard he should be reduced to the necessity of disposing of his plate; but he replied—"My "dear Las Cases, under whatever circumstances "I may be placed, those articles of luxury are "never of any importance to me; and as far as "regards others, that is to say, as far as re-"gards the public, simplicity will always be

Digitized by Google

"my best ornament." He added, that he could, after all, claim the assistance of Prince Eugène; and that he was even inclined to write to him for the loans which would be necessary for his subsistence when the plate should be exhausted. He also expressed his intention of commissioning Eugène to forward to him some important books which he wished should be sent from London, together with a small quantity of choice wine, which it was necessary he should take as a medicine. "This commission for wine," said he, "will make our enemies in Europe say that we "think of nothing here but eating and drinking." He said he should feel no hesitation in addressing himself on this subject to Eugène, who owed to him every thing he possessed; and that it would be insulting the character of the Prince to doubt his readiness to serve him, particularly as he had, besides, a legal claim upon him for about ten or twelve millions.

While we were at breakfast the Emperor sent for the Pole, who is soon to leave us. After breakfast he wished to employ himself in reading or dictating; but he felt very drowsy, and fell asleep several times. He retired to his chamber to lie down for a while, desiring me to attend him at one o'clock for his English lesson. But when the appointed hour arrived, he was still in the same state of drowsiness; and he only succeeded in rousing himself by taking a bath, in which,

Digitized by Google

according to custom, he remained for a long time. It is surprising that this practice, joined to that of taking very hot baths, does not prove injurious to him.

The Emperor ate but little dinner, and he complained of not enjoying regular and sound rest. He conversed for some time on the subject of balloons, and laughed at those biographical notices which represent him as having forced himself, sword in hand, into the balloon of the military school. He mentioned, as a sort of prodigy, the circumstance of the balloon which ascended at his coronation having fallen, in the space of a few hours, in the neighbourhood of Rome, bearing intelligence of the ceremony to the inhabitants of that city.

The Emperor took up Don Quixote; but he closed the book in about half an hour: he cannot now apply himself to reading for a longer interval. His health visibly declines. He often observes to me, that we are both growing very old, and that he is much the oldest of the two: these words tell a great deal.

The required declaration is sent to the Governor.—The Emperor remarks that many modern books are merely booksellers' speculations.—False notions created by party spirit.—General Maison.

14th.—To-day the Grand Marshal forwarded to the Governor the new declarations which he

Digitized by Google

required us to make. They were all alike, and were as follows:—

"I, the undersigned, hereby declare that I wish to remain at Saint-Helena, and to share the restrictions which are imposed on the Emperor Napoleon personally."

About one o'clock I went to attend the Emperor in his chamber. I rendered him an account of some private affairs. . . . . He was reading a work on the government of France. He thought it very indifferent, and observed, that since he had been in the habit of perusing new publications, he had found them, for the most part, to be merely matters of speculation,—things got up for sale by booksellers. The world, he said, was now threatened with a deluge of bad books, and he saw no remedy that could effectually counteract so great an evil.

After having dressed, the Emperor repaired to the drawing-room, where he looked over a few English newspapers, and read some lines of Telemachus. But he felt fatigued and low-spirited, and he suspended his reading. We discoursed on several subjects which intimately concerned the Emperor, who closed the conversation by several times repeating—"*Poor human nature!*"

During another interval of conversation, Napoleon, taking a review of several well-known

Digitized by Google

individuals, on whom he pronounced his opinion, alluded to one, whom he represented as being a most immoral and base character. I happened to be acquainted with this person, and I observed that I knew him to be quite the reverse of what I had just heard described. I was defending the individual in question with considerable warmth, when the Emperor interrupted me, saying: "I give full credit to what you say; "but I had heard a different account of him: "and though I generally made it a rule to hear "things of this kind with suspicion, yet you see "I could not always avoid retaining some im- "pression of what I heard. Was this my fault? "When I had no particular motive for inquiry, "how could I arrive at the knowledge of facts? "This," continued he, "is the inevitable conse- "quence of civil commotions: there are always "two reputations between the two parties. "What absurdities, what ridiculous stories, are "related of the individuals who figured in our "Revolution!* The saloons of Paris are full

* I take this opportunity of correcting an error of the nature here alluded to. It occurs in Part IV. where it is stated that M. Monge ascended the jacobinical tribune, &c. &c. The friends and relatives of that distinguished man have, however, assured me, that all who knew him at the time in question can bear witness that he never appeared among them, and that he never spoke in any public assembly. I feel pleasure in mentioning this circumstance; for nothing affords me greater happiness than to be the means of developing truth.

Digitized by Google

" of them. I have borne my full share of this " kind of scandal. After me, who can have " any right to complain? Yet I protest that " nothing of this sort ever produced any in- " fluence on my mind, or occasioned me in any " instance to alter my determinations, &c."

After alluding to several military officers, the Emperor mentioned General Maison, " His man- " œuvres," said he, " round Lille, in the crisis of " 1814, attracted my attention, and fixed him in " my recollection. He was not with us in 1815. " What became of him? Where was he at that " time?"—I could not answer these questions, as I did not know the General.

Difficulties started by the Governor respecting our declarations.—The Emperor's sentiments on that subject.—The Governor's conversation with each individual of the Emperor's suite.—Napoleon's remark.—Consummation of our slavery.

15th.—For some time past I have found it impossible to sleep; and I have passed whole nights without closing my eyes. About eight o'clock this morning, as I was endeavouring to compose myself to rest, the Grand Marshal entered my chamber, to inform me that the Governor had sent back our declarations, and was coming himself to oblige us to sign that which he had sent as a model, and which differed from ours only with respect to the title which

Digitized by Google

we gave to the Emperor. It was wished that we should designate him merely by the name *Bonaparte*.

The Grand Marshal proceeded to the Emperor's apartments, whither I was almost immediately summoned. On entering, I found the Emperor walking about and expressing himself with great warmth. All the individuals of the suite were assembled together. "The insults," said he, "which are daily heaped upon those who have "devoted themselves to me, insults which there "is every probability will be multiplied to a "still greater extent, present a spectacle which "I cannot and must not longer endure. Gentle- "men, you must leave me; I cannot see you sub- "mit to the restrictions which are about to be "imposed on you, and which will doubtless soon "be augmented. I will remain here alone. Re- "turn to Europe, and make known the horrible "treatment to which I am exposed: bear witness "that you saw me sink into a premature grave. I "will not allow any one of you to sign this decla- "ration in the form that is required. I forbid it. "It shall never be said that hands which I had "the power to command were employed in re- "cording my degradation. If obstacles are raised "respecting a mere foolish formality, others will "be started to-morrow for an equally trivial cause. "It is determined to remove you in detail; but "I would rather see you removed altogether and

Digitized by Google

" at once. Perhaps this sacrifice may produce " a result." With these words he dismissed us, and we withdrew overwhelmed with dismay.

In a few moments the Emperor again sent for me. He was walking up and down through the whole length of his two little rooms. There was a peculiar softness, and even tenderness, in the tone of his voice, and I never observed more easy familiarity in his manner. " Well, my dear Las " Cases," said he, " I am going to turn hermit." " Sire," said I, " are you not one already? What " resources does our society present to you? We " can only offer you prayers and wishes; which, " though they can contribute but little to your " consolation, are every thing to us. Our present " situation is the most distressing that can pos- " sibly be conceived; for, in the question under " consideration, we now perhaps, for the first " time, find it difficult to obey your Majesty. " You hold the language of reason; while we " are guided only by sentiment. The arguments " which you just now addressed to us admit of " no reply. Your determination is in unison with " your character; it will astonish no one, but its " execution is beyond our power. The thought " of leaving you here alone exceeds in horror all " that our imagination can picture." " Such, " however, is my fate," replied the Emperor, " and I am ready to meet it; but yet I have " sufficient strength to resist to the last. . . . . " They will end my life; that is certain."—

Digitized by Google

"Sire," I observed, "the step which you pro-
"pose we should adopt can never enter our
"thoughts. To the last moment I will speak
"the sentiments that your Majesty utters: I will
"resist to the utmost; but I shall find it impos-
"sible to act as I may speak."

The Emperor seated himself, and desired me to sit down beside him. He observed that he was much fatigued; and he ordered breakfast, desiring me to stay with him. For a considerable time past, I had not been in the habit of dining with him: he told me the reason why I had been denied this happiness; and I considered it was a favour that he should condescend to tell me. When the coffee was brought in, there was no cup for me. Marchand was going to fetch one; but the Emperor called him back, saying: "Take that one from the mantel-piece:
"he shall drink out of my pretty gold cup.*

* This was the cup belonging to his cabinet, which stood on the chimney-piece as an ornament.

I have now the happiness of possessing the saucer belonging to this cup. M. Marchand, that faithful servant, to whom Napoleon declared himself so much attached, on his return from Saint-Helena, came and presented this saucer to me, in a manner that forcibly roused my gratitude and sensibility. "The
"beautiful cup," said he, "out of which you sometimes drank,
"belonged to the Emperor's cabinet, and was accordingly re-
"stored to its place. The saucer, however, among other arti-
"cles, fell to my share; and I now present it to you, being
"assured that you will feel as much pleasure in receiving as
"I have in giving it."

Digitized by Google

Just as breakfast was over, the Grand Marshal entered and told us that the Governor had arrived, and had expressed a wish to see him at his (Bertrand's) new house, which is a very short distance from our establishment, and is at length on the point of being completed. The Emperor desired him to attend the Governor. The Grand Marshal, as he was about to withdraw, seemed desirous to know whether the Emperor still persisted in the orders he had given us this morning, in case the Governor should obstinately persist in requiring us to sign the declaration in the prescribed form; but the Emperor sharply observed: "I am not a child; when I have once "thoroughly considered a question, I no longer "entertain two opinions upon it. I have di- "rected battles which have decided the fate of "empires, and the orders I issued were always "the result of my mature deliberation. In this "instance I am alone concerned. Begone!"

The Grand Marshal soon returned with an account of the interview, which he had closed by a refusal. "The Governor," he said, "had "desired to see the other three individuals of "the suite together; but we thought it would "be better to present ourselves in succession."

I went to wait on the Governor. I found him, surrounded by several of his attendants, in the garden, near the path leading to the Grand Marshal's house. He withdrew on perceiving

Digitized by Google

me; but I joined him in the court before the house.

As he had expressed himself very much irritated against me, I went as well fortified as I possibly could. He, however, conducted me with great politeness into the house, leaving the officers of his suite on the outside; and having told me that he awaited the arrival of MM. de Montholon and Gourgaud, to enter upon the business, I asked him whether he had any objection to treat immediately with me. He replied, that he had not; and calling in his officers, he told me, in their presence, that I had no doubt learned from the Grand Marshal what he had to propose on the subject of my declaration. I replied in the affirmative; at the same time observing, that I regarded the Grand Marshal as my model and guide, on account of his rank, as well as the respect and esteem I entertained for him, and therefore it was natural to expect that my answer should correspond with his. I added that I could not conceive why so much importance was attached to a mere matter of form, which was so painful to our feelings, while it could be of no service to those who insisted on it. "It is out of my power," said the Governor, "to make the alteration you wish. I am "directed to present to you for signature the "declaration written in my hand: now I, being "an Englishman, cannot write the title you

Digitized by Google

" wish."—" I was not aware of that." replied I: " to that argument I have no reply to make. " You, as an Englishman, may write thus; but " I, being a Frenchman, must sign in my lan- " guage; that is to say, with the translation " from yours. Allow me, therefore, to add to " my signature any phrase that you may think " proper to dictate to me, in which I can express " myself in my own language. You may now " judge," added I, " whether I deal candidly, " and whether I seek to create difficulties." This proposal seemed to claim his attention. " We are now," I continued, " merely disputing " about words, which may appear very silly, " considering the important circumstances in " which we are placed; but, Sir, who created " these difficulties? Who will suffer from them? " Your refusal places us in a most distressing " situation! You see me reduced to the utmost " despair! To me separation from the Emperor " would be worse than death; yet I would " sooner submit to it, than suffer my hand to be " the instrument of his degradation. The Em- " peror unites in himself all that constitutes an " august character, in the eyes of God or man: " to deny this would be to deny the light of the " sun."

The Governor observed that he, as an Englishman, could not acknowledge the Emperor; and I replied that I could urge no objection to that.

Digitized by Google

I added, that however much I might be hurt by his mode of designating the Emperor, yet I did not mean to question his right of using whatever terms he might think proper; and that, for the same reason, he ought not to object to my opinions and expressions, considering that I was a Frenchman, and that he demanded my signature.

Here Sir Hudson Lowe angrily alluded to some past circumstances relating to himself personally; and he observed that, after all, moral character was the only real title to respect. "At that "rate, Governor," replied I, with some warmth, and turning to the officers who were in attendance, "the Emperor may divest himself of all "his titles, and he will but gain in the opinion "of the world, if his character be estimated by "the scale to which you allude." The Governor was silent: then, after a pause of a few moments, he observed that we still treated our General as though he were an Emperor. "And how can "we treat him otherwise?"—"I mean to say, "that you continue to look upon him as a sove-"reign."—"Governor, you talk of revering him "as our sovereign; we do more—we worship "him! We now consider the Emperor as removed "from this world; we view him as though he "were in Heaven! . . . . . When you leave us "a choice that is in opposition to him, it is "like the choice given to martyrs when they

Digitized by Google

" are commanded to renounce their faith or die. " Death, therefore, must be our alternative." These words produced a visible impression on the officers who were present, and even on the Governor. Contrary to custom, his countenance assumed a mild expression, and the tone of his voice was softened.

" Our situation here," continued I, " is so hor- " rible as to be almost beyond endurance. You " know this;—but what we now suffer is nothing " to the misery which is reserved for us. What " I ask will be no sacrifice to you, and it will be " every thing to us. I implore you to grant " what I request; and this is something, for " you know I am not in the habit of soliciting " favours from you. Make but this one con- " cession, and you will claim my eternal grati- " tude. Besides, consider that a responsibility " rests with you; that there is a public opinion " in Europe, which you may forfeit without gain- " ing any advantage in return. You cannot be a " stranger to the sentiments which animate me; " they must, I am sure, go to the hearts of all " who listen to me."

Here the Governor appeared somewhat moved; the officers were evidently affected. Sir Hudson Lowe, after a few moments' silence, saluted me, and I took my leave of him.

MM. de Montholon and Gourgaud had each an interview in their turns; and we all four attended

Digitized by Google

the Emperor during his toilette, without, however, being able to tell him whether any decision had been formed on the subject that so deeply interested us.

The Emperor expressed a wish to go out, though the wind was extremely boisterous: we all walked to the extremity of the wood. He took a review of the Governor's conduct, making remarks upon it in the rapid and copious way peculiar to himself; and he concluded by saying, that if to-day we should agree to sign the declaration in order to avoid being separated from him, to-morrow another ground of expulsion would be brought forward; and that he should wish our removal to be effected forcibly and at once, rather than tranquilly and in detail. Then, suddenly assuming a tone of pleasantry, he said that, after all, he could hardly believe the Governor wished to reduce his subjects to one only; and what sort of subject would that one be? added he—an absolute porcupine, on which he would find it impossible to lay a finger.

During our walk two strangers approached pretty near to us. The Emperor made some one enquire who they were, and he was informed that they belonged to a vessel which was about to sail to-morrow for Europe. The Emperor asked whether they were likely to see any of the ministers on their arrival in London; and they replied that they should see Lord Bathurst. "Tell him," said Napoleon,

Digitized by Google

"that his instructions with respect to my treat-
"ment here are most odious, and that his agent
"executes them with scrupulous fidelity. If he
"wished to get rid of me, he should have des-
"patched me at a blow, instead of thus killing
"me by inches. This conduct is truly barba-
"rous; there is nothing English in it; and I can
"only attribute it to some personal hatred. I
"have too much respect for the Prince Regent,
"the majority of the ministers, and the English
"nation, to suppose they are responsible for my
"treatment. Be this as it may, their power
"extends only to the body; the soul is beyond
"their reach: it will soar to Heaven even from
"the dungeon."

The Emperor, on his return home, took a bath; he was fatigued and harassed by the events of the day. He fell asleep, and I watched beside him, meditating on our new grievances.

At dinner he ate but a little. Some one made an observation, and the Emperor, not having heard it distinctly, asked what had been said—a thing which frequently happens. The words were then repeated in a louder tone, upon which he observed: "I am certainly growing deaf,
"for I occasionally miss hearing what is said,
"and I feel inclined to be angry when people
"speak louder than usual." He concluded the evening by reading a part of Don Quixote. He was much amused at some comic passages; and

Digitized by Google

laying down the book, he remarked that we certainly showed a great deal of courage, since we could laugh at such trifles under our present circumstances. He paused for some moments, and seemed deeply wrapped in thought; then rising, he withdrew, saying: "Adieu, my "dear friends."

During dinner a letter had been delivered to me from the Grand Marshal; but I had kept it concealed, conceiving that it augured no good. I opened it as soon as the Emperor withdrew. It inclosed a letter from the Governor, announcing that if we still persisted in our refusal to sign the declaration, he would immediately give orders for our removal to Europe. We yielded to the dictates of our hearts: to determine on leaving the Emperor, was beyond our power; while at the same time it would have been going beyond his wishes, and perhaps too beyond his orders. With unanimous sentiments, we eagerly signed the declarations in the form in which they were presented to us, and delivered them to the English officer on duty at Longwood, together with a letter to the Grand Marshal, acquainting him with what we had done without his participation. We had been guided solely by our feelings, and we trusted that those feelings would afford us consolation even though the Emperor should disapprove of the step we had taken.

Digitized by Google

We have now reached the consummation of our absolute slavery and dependence on the will and caprice of Sir Hudson Lowe; not merely by the signature we have just given him, but because he now knows our secret, and therefore it is in his power to compel us to submit to any thing he pleases.

Anecdotes of Sieyes.—The Emperor frequently witnessed popular festivals in disguise.—His visits to the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, after his return from Moscow, and from the Island of Elba.—Manners during the time of the Directory.—Remarkable official note.

16th.—The Emperor sent for me about noon. He had been reading, and was just finishing his coffee. He desired me to sit down, and he entered into conversation. Not a word escaped him that could lead me to suppose he knew the determination we had adopted yesterday evening; he made no allusion to the subject, and it was not mentioned throughout the whole of the day. After breakfast, the Emperor walked about his apartments. The turn of the conversation introduced some anecdotes of former times, of which Sieyes was the subject. The Emperor related, that while Sieyes was chaplain to the Princes of Orleans, being one day engaged in performing mass, something unexpectedly occasioned the Princes to withdraw during the service; upon which the Abbé, looking up and see-

Digitized by Google

ing only the valets present, immediately closed his book, observing that he was not engaged to perform mass to the rabble.

"Your Majesty," said I, "was the first who "made me acquainted with the name and person "of Sieyes. A few days after my presentation "at court, your Majesty, at one of your audi- "ences, having passed by me, stopped to speak "to the person who stood next me, addressing "him by name. All my emigrant prejudices "were yet in full force, and I thought myself "polluted by coming in contact with one whom "I regarded as an absolute monster, and whom "I had never heard mentioned, except as an ob- "ject of the bitterest imprecation."—"Doubt- "less," said the Emperor, "you were thinking "of the *mort sans phrase*. But I have heard it "affirmed that Sieyes denied that."

I now repeated an anecdote which used to be circulated in the Faubourg Saint-Germain, and on which, the first time I related it, the Emperor made no observation. Sieyes was described as having used the epithet *tyrant* in speaking of Louis XVI, to which Napoleon was said to have replied, "Monsieur Abbé, if he had been a "tyrant, I should not be here, and you would still "be performing mass."—"I might have thought "so," said the Emperor, on my relating this anecdote for the second time; "but I should "certainly not have been fool enough to say so.

Digitized by Google

"This is one of the absurd stories invented in "the drawing-rooms of Paris. I never com- "mitted blunders of that kind: my object was "to extinguish, and not to feed the flame. The "torrent of hostility was already too forcibly "directed against certain leaders of the Revolu- "tion. I found it necessary to support and "countenance them; and I did so. Some one "having procured—God knows where—a bust "of Sieyes in his ecclesiastical character, it was "publicly exhibited, and occasioned a universal "uproar. Sieyes, in a furious passion, set out "to make a complaint to me; but I had already "given the necessary reprimand, and the bust "was again consigned to obscurity.

"My great principle was to guard against re- "action, and to bury the past in oblivion. I "never condemned any opinion, or proscribed "any act. I was surrounded by the men who "had voted for the death of Louis XVI: they "were in the Ministry, and in the Council of "State. I did not approve of their doctrines; "but what had I to do with them? what right "had I to constitute myself their judge? Some "had been actuated by conviction, others by "weakness and terror, and all by the delirium "and fury of the moment. The fatality of the "Greek tragedy was exemplified in the life of "Louis XVI."

I told the Emperor, that it was reported in the

Digitized by Google

Faubourg Saint-Germain that Sieyes had been detected in a conspiracy against him, in the affair of M. Clement de Ris; and that he (Napoleon) had pardoned him, on condition of his entirely withdrawing himself from any participation in political affairs. "This is another idle story, "for which there is not the slightest foundation," said the Emperor. "Sieyes was always attached "to me, and I never had any cause to complain "of him. He was probably vexed to find that "I opposed his metaphysical ideas; but he was "at length convinced that it was necessary for "France to have a ruler, and he preferred me "to any other. Sieyes was, after all, an honest "and a very clever man: he did much for the "Revolution."

The Emperor mentioned, that at one of the first public festivals that took place during the Consulate, as he was viewing the illuminations in company with Sieyes, he asked him what he thought of the state of affairs. Sieyes replied in a cold and even a disheartening tone. "And "yet," resumed Napoleon, "I had this morn-"ing very satisfactory proofs of the spirit of the "people."—"It is seldom," replied Sieyes, "that "the people shew their real spirit, when the man "who is possessed of power presents himself to "their gaze. I can assure you they are far from "being satisfied."—"Then you do not think the "present government firmly established?"--"No."

Digitized by Google

—"And when do you suppose we shall be settled?" —"When I see the Dukes and Marquises of the old "court in your anti-chamber."—"Sieyes," added the Emperor, "little dreamed that this would "so soon be the case. He was short-sighted, and "could not see very far before him. I thought as he "did, that all could not end with the Republic; "but I foresaw the establishment of the Empire. "Accordingly, two or three years afterwards, "the circumstance I have just related being still "fresh in my recollection, I said to Sieyes, at "one of my grand audiences: Well, you are now "*pêle-mêle* with all the old Dukes and Marquises; "do you think all is settled now?"—"Oh, yes," replied Sieyes, bowing profoundly; "you have "accomplished miracles, which were never be-"fore equalled, and which I never could have "foreseen."

During the Consulate, and even during the Empire, Napoleon used at public festivals to go out late at night for the purpose of seeing the shows and hearing the sentiments of the people. He once went out in this way accompanied by Maria Louisa; and they both walked arm in arm on the Boulevards, highly amused at seeing their Majesties the Emperor and Empress, and all the grandees of the court, represented in the magic lanterns.

During the Consulate, Napoleon was once standing in front of the Hotel de la Marine, view-

Digitized by Google

ing a public illumination. Beside him was a lady, who to all appearance had formerly moved in a distinguished sphere, accompanied by her daughter, a very pretty girl, to whom she was pointing out all the persons of note, as they passed to and fro in the apartments. Calling her daughter's attention to a certain individual, she said: "Remind me to go and pay "my respects to him some day. We ought to "do so, for he has rendered us great service."— "But, mother," replied the young lady, "I did "not know that we were expected to shew gra- "titude to such people. I thought they were "too happy in being able to oblige persons of "our quality."—"Certainly," said the Emperor, "La Bruyère would have turned this incident "to good account."

Napoleon sometimes went out in disguise early in the morning, traversing the streets of the capital alone, and mingling with the labouring classes of the people, with whose condition and sentiments he wished to make himself acquainted. In the Council of State I have often heard him advise the Prefect of Police to adopt this plan. He called it the *Caliph system of police*, and said he esteemed it to be the best.

On his return from the disastrous campaigns of Moscow and Leipsic, Napoleon, in order to maintain the appearance of confidence, frequent-

Digitized by Google

ly appeared amidst the multitude with scarcely any attendants. He visited the market-places, the faubourgs, and all the populous districts of the capital, conversing familiarly with the people; and he was every where received and treated with respect.

One day, at *La Halle*, a woman with whom he had been holding a little dialogue, bluntly told him he ought to make peace. "Good wo-"man," replied the Emperor, "sell your herbs, "and leave me to settle my affairs. Let every "one attend to his own calling." The by-standers laughed, and applauded him.

On another occasion, at the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, when surrounded by an immense concourse of people, whom he was treating very condescendingly, some one asked whether affairs were really as bad as they were represented to be. "Why, certainly," replied the Emperor, "I cannot say that things are going on very "well."—"But what will be the end of this?" —"Heaven knows!"—"Will the enemy enter "France?"—"Very possibly; and he may even "march to Paris if you do not assist me. I have not "a million of arms. I cannot do all by my own "individual efforts."—"We will support you," exclaimed a number of voices.—"Then I shall "beat the enemy, and preserve the glory of "France."—"But what must we do?"—"You "must enlist and fight."—"We will," said one of

Digitized by Google

the crowd; "but we must make a few conditions!" "What are they?"—"We will not pass the fron-" tier."—"You shall not be required to do so." —"We wish to serve in the guards," said another.—"You shall do so." The air instantly resounded with acclamations. Registers were immediately opened, and two thousand men enlisted in course of the day. Napoleon returned to the Tuileries; and, as he entered the *Place Carousel* on horseback, surrounded by the multitude, whose acclamations rent the air, it was supposed that an insurrection had broken out, and the gates were about to be closed.

On his return from the Island of Elba, the Emperor made another visit to the Faubourg Saint-Antoine, where he was received with equal enthusiasm, and conducted back to the palace in a similar manner. As he passed through the Faubourg Saint-Germain, the multitude who escorted him halted before the principal hotels, and manifested their disapprobation by angry words and gestures. The Emperor observed that he had scarcely ever been placed in so delicate a situation. "How many evils might "have ensued," said he, "had a single stone been "thrown by the mob. Had a single imprudent "word, or even an equivocal look, escaped me, "the whole Faubourg might have been destroy-"ed; and I am convinced that its preservation "was to be attributed wholly to my presence

Digitized by Google

"of mind, and the respect which the multitude "entertained for me."

To-day I attended the Emperor at his toilette. Santini was cutting his hair, and a large tuft fell at my feet. I stooped to pick it up, and the Emperor observing me, asked what I was doing. I replied that I had dropped something, upon which he smiled and pinched my ear: he guessed what I had picked up.

Speaking of the depravity and corruption of manners which prevailed at the time when he commanded the army of the interior in Paris, Napoleon mentioned that an *Ordonnateur* came to solicit some signatures from him, and to beg that he would give his support to certain appointments and supplies: this he promised to do without hesitation, conceiving that there was nothing unfair in the proposal. Before he withdrew, the *Ordonnateur* dextrously took an opportunity of leaving on the chimney-piece two rouleaux containing a hundred Louis. This was an enormous sum in specie, for at that time paper money was chiefly in use. Fortunately, the General was the first to discover the circumstance, and the visitor was called back before he had gone far. He at first attempted to deny having left the money; but he afterwards acknowledged it, observing that every one must live, and that the method he had adopted was, he believed, the general one. He, however, hoped

Digitized by Google

that he might be forgiven if he had unintentionally done wrong, adding that it was very seldom necessary to ask pardon for such offences.

At the hour at which the Emperor generally takes his walk, he found himself very drowsy; but he was determined to rouse himself, and he went out though the wind was blowing violently. After walking a short way, he returned to the house, and we entered Madame de Montholon's apartment. The Emperor had no sooner seated himself on the sofa, than he felt inclined to fall asleep. He rose and proceeded to the drawing-room. He complained of great internal heat, and he asked for a glass of toast and water. His drowsiness still continued, and he retired to his chamber to lie down.

About seven o'clock he sent for me, and gave me the following note, which he desired me to keep along with the rest of the official papers. It was the copy of a note which he had sent that morning to the Governor . . . . . .

. . . . . .

Note. — "I recollect that in a conversation which took place between General Lowe and some of the gentlemen of my suite, (alluding to the conversation of the 15th,) some observations were made respecting my situation, which were not conformable with my ideas. I abdicated to the representatives of the people and in favour of my son. I proceeded with confidence to

Digitized by Google

England, with the intention of living either there or in America, in profound retirement, and under the name of a Colonel who was killed in battle by my side. *I had resolved to remain a stranger to all political affairs of any kind whatever.*

"When I went on board the Northumberland, I was informed that I was a prisoner of war, that I was to be transported beyond the line, and that I was to be called *General Bonaparte.* This obliged me to retain ostensibly the title of the Emperor Napoleon, in opposition to the name of General Bonaparte, which it was wished should be forced upon me.

"About seven or eight months ago, Count Montholon proposed to obviate the little difficulties that are continually arising, by my adopting an ordinary name. The Admiral thought it necessary to write to London on this subject, and there the matter rested.

"The name which is now applied to me has the advantage of not prejudging the past; but it is not in unison with the forms of society. *I am still disposed to assume a name that may be conformable with custom;* I once more repeat, that whenever I may be released from my cruel captivity, *I am still willing to continue a stranger to all political affairs, whatever may take place in the world.* Such is my determination; and no other declaration, on this subject, has my sanction."

Digitized by Google

The Emperor ate bu
something very extraor
had come over him. I
by drowsiness during t
yet when he withdrew
should not sleep, his
traordinary. He genera
is inclined to sleep,
all day long without be

To-day a frigate saile

Louis XVI.—Marie Antoin
nard.—The Pri

17th.—About noon tl
his breakfast was just
than he had been yest
to converse a little, a
few pages of the Vica
complained of drowsine
efforts to rouse himself,
ber to try and take a
astonished that this h
as he said he had slept

He did not leave his
ready, and after dinne
of Don Quixote; but
laid down the book, and
early, he sent for me a
and I remained with hin
ing on different subject

Digitized by Google

We spoke of Louis XVI., the Queen, Madame Elizabeth, their martyrdom, &c. He asked me to tell him what I knew of the King and Queen, and what they had said to me on my presentation. The forms and ceremonies of the Court were, I informed him, the same as those which were adopted during the Empire. As to character, I observed, it was generally admitted that the Queen had disappointed public expectation. During the first moments of the revolutionary storm, there was every reason to suppose her a woman of great talent and energy; but subsequently these qualities seemed entirely to forsake her. With regard to the King, I mentioned the opinion formed of him by M. Bertrand de Molleville, with whom I had been well acquainted, and who was Minister of Marine to Louis XVI. at the height of the crisis. He pronounced the King to have possessed considerable information, sound judgment, and excellent intentions; but there it all ended. He lost himself by the multiplicity of advice which he solicited, and by his irresolute and wavering mode of following that advice.

The Emperor, in his turn, retraced the portrait of the Queen, by Madame Campan, who, he observed, having been her confident, and having served her with zeal, affection, and fidelity, might be expected to have known a great deal about her, and deserved to be considered as good

Digitized by Google

authority. Madame Campan, he said, had communicated to him many details of the private life of the Queen; and he related some particulars which he had derived from that source.

The Queen, according to Madame Campan, was a fascinating woman, but destitute of talent: she was better calculated to be a votary of pleasure than a participator in affairs of state. She possessed an excellent heart, was parsimonious rather than extravagant, and by no means possessed strength of character equal to the trying circumstances in which she was placed. She obtained regular information of the schemes that were carrying on abroad; and she never entertained a doubt of her deliverance, even up to the fatal 10th of August, the catastrophe of which was brought about solely by the intrigues and hopes of the Court, which were developed to the world through the imprudence of the King and those who surrounded him.

"On the terrible night of the 5th of October," said the Emperor, "a person for whom the Queen "entertained a high regard, and whom I after- "wards treated very ill at Rastadt, hastened to "join the Princess at Versailles: whether he had "been sent for, or whether he went of his own "accord to share her dangers, I know not. It is "in these trying moments," continued the Emperor, "that we feel most in need of the advice "and consolation of those who are devoted to

Digitized by Google

" us. At the moment of the catastrophe, when " the palace was forced, the Queen fled for re- " fuge to the King's apartments; but her confi- " dent was exposed to the greatest dangers, and " only escaped by leaping out of a window."

I informed the Emperor that the Queen had greatly fallen in the estimation of the emigrants, by her conduct during the events of Varennes: she was reproached for not having allowed the King to set out alone, and for having betrayed a want of skill and energy during the flight of the Royal family. Nothing, indeed, could be more ill managed and confused than the journey to Varennes. A curious circumstance connected with that event was, that Leonard, the Queen's famous *coiffeur*, found means to pass in his cabriolet, through the midst of the tumult; and he arrived at Coblentz, bringing with him the Marshal's baton, which, it was said, the King had carried away from the Tuileries, in order to deliver it to M. de Bouillé, when he should join him.

" It was," said the Emperor, " an established " rule with the members of the House of Aus- " tria, to observe profound silence respecting " the Queen of France. Whenever the name of " Marie Antoinette was mentioned, they cast " down their eyes, and dextrously changed the " conversation, as if to avoid a disagreeable and " embarrassing subject. This rule," continued

Digitized by Google

the Emperor, "was adopted by all the members "of the family, and recommended to their agents "abroad. The efforts lately made by the French "princes in Paris, to revive the interest attached "to the memory of the unfortunate Queen, must "certainly have been displeasing to the Court "of Vienna."

The Emperor next asked me some questions concerning the Princess de Lamballe, of whom he said he knew nothing. I was enabled to answer his questions, as I had known the Princess well. One of my cousins had been her lady of honour; and on my arrival at Aix-la-Chapelle, at the commencement of my emigration, I was received as one of her household, and treated with the utmost kindness.

At Aix-la-Chapelle the Princess de Lamballe had assembled round her many of the wrecks of Versailles; she was surrounded by nobles and persons of fashion, who had been connected with the old Court. She was also visited by many illustrious foreigners; and while I remained with her I frequently saw Gustavus III. King of Sweden, who went by the name of the Count de Haga; Prince Ferdinand of Prussia, and his children, the eldest of whom (Prince Louis) was killed just before the battle of Jena; the Duchess of Cumberland; the widow of a brother of the King of England, &c.

When Louis XVI. solemnly accepted the Con

Digitized by Google

stitution, and thus recomposed the nation, the Princess received an official letter from the Queen, inviting her to return to her situation. She consulted her old friends, who declared themselves of opinion that the Queen was not free, and conceiving that there would be no safety in Paris, they advised her to take no notice of the Queen's letter, and to let it be supposed it had never come to hand. The Princess, however, having asked some other individuals, how they would advise her to act, they unfortunately replied:—"Madam, you shared the pro-"sperity of the Queen, and you have now a noble "opportunity of proving your fidelity, particu-"larly since you are no longer her favourite." The Princess possessed lofty sentiments, warm affections, and was rather of a romantic turn of mind. She declared her intention of setting out next day for Paris. The unfortunate lady, therefore, returned to the capital, with a full knowledge of the danger to which she was exposed; and she fell the victim of generosity and noble sentiment. When the Princess determined on proceeding to Paris, my friends proposed that I should accompany her as one of her suite. My youth, together with the circumstance of my being almost a stranger in Paris, would have enabled me to pass unnoticed, and I might perhaps have been serviceable to her; but at the moment of her departure, some difficulties arose which

Digitized by Google

prevented me from accon
ever, I became her corre
other day I transmitted to
absurd stories of every k
feed our hopes, and to wl
give implicit credit. I con
dence while we remained i
continued it after she had

The extreme affliction in
on hearing of her dreadful
augmented by the fear th
perhaps have had some sha
happen to have now in
lines which she wrote a
horrible catastrophe which
They are dated *from my*
called the Pavillion of Flo
time occupied in the Tuileri

Removal of four individuals of
lections of the Empero

18th.—I did not see th
o'clock, when he sent for
the drawing-room. He cc
but he had, notwithstanding,
morning in dictating to the
summoned all the individual
cession. He was low-spirit
the same time there was
about him. He sought to

Digitized by Google

rious ways. He first tried chess, then dominos, and then chess again; but he was at length compelled to return to his chamber, finding it impossible to sit up. The state of the weather, joined to the vexations to which we are exposed, concur in producing torments almost beyond endurance. The weather has an effect on the nerves, and the persecutions that are heaped upon us are still worse to bear. Every word uttered by the Governor increases our misery. To-day he had signified his intention of removing four of our establishment, which has been the cause of general lamentation among the household: the individuals singled out for removal, regret their separation from their companions; while those who are to remain, are tormented by the fear of speedily sharing the same fate. We compared Sir Hudson Lowe to Scylla, devouring the four companions of Ulysses.

The Governor has informed me that he also intends removing my servant, who is an inhabitant of the island, and with whom I am very well satisfied. He is doubtless afraid that the man will become too much attached to me. He proposes to send me a servant of his own choosing, a favour for which I feel very grateful, though I have no intention of availing myself of the kind offer.

At dinner the Emperor ate but little. During

Digitized by Google

the dessert, however, his spirits revived a little, and we began to converse on the events of his early life. This is a subject on which he delights to dwell, and which always affords him a source of new and lively interest. He repeated many of the particulars which I have already related at different times. He said he loved to carry himself back to that happy age when all is gaiety and enjoyment;—that happy period of hope and rising ambition, when the world first opens before us and the mind fondly cherishes every romantic dream. He spoke of his regiment, and the pleasures he had enjoyed when he first mingled in society. On mentioning the different balls and fêtes which he had attended in his youthful days, he described one as having been particularly splendid. "But," said he, "at that "time my notions of splendour were very differ- "ent from what they now are."

Alluding to the date of certain circumstances, he observed, that it would be difficult for him to detail his life year by year. We observed that if he would only date the events of four or five years, we could easily take all the rest upon ourselves. He reverted to his *début* at the military school of Toulon, the circumstances that first called him into notice, the sudden ascendancy which he acquired by his first successes, and the ambition with which they inspired him: "And yet," said he, "I was far from entertain-

Digitized by Google

"ing a high opinion of myself. It was not till "after the battle of Lodi that I conceived those "lofty notions of ambition, which were confirmed "in Egypt, after the victory of the Pyramids, "and the possession of Cairo. Then," said he, "I willingly resigned myself to every brilliant "dream."

The Emperor had become very cheerful and talkative, and he did not retire until midnight. We looked upon this as a sort of resuscitation.

Madame de Genlis' Novels.

19th.—Our four outlaws, namely, the Pole, Santini, Archambeau, and Rousseau, left us about the middle of the day. In an hour after, they sailed for the Cape with a brisk wind.

About three o'clock the Emperor sent for me. He was in the drawing-room, and he desired to have Madame de Genlis' novels brought to him. He read a few pages aloud; but he soon laid down the books, observing that they told him nothing. It was not so with me: the few pages that I had just heard, touched many tender strings. They presented a picture of the elegant society of Paris, detailed the names of streets and monuments, described familiar conversations, and retraced well-known portraits: all this produced a forcible impression on me. The realities exist, I myself exist, and yet we are separated by distance, time, and doubtless by eternity. I

Digitized by Google

could at this moment look with indifference on pleasure and gaiety; but the recollection of persons and places, which had thus been revived, filled me with feelings of deep melancholy and regret.

The Grand Marshal now arrived, and the Emperor dictated to him till dinner-time.

In the evening the Emperor asked for the Arabian Nights; but he was unable to read, and soon laid aside the book.

Valuation of the Books sent out to us.—The Grand Marshal comes to live nearer to us.

20th.—I spent the day in estimating the value of the books sent to us from London, and for which an enormous sum is claimed of the Emperor. Our valuation did not amount to even half that sum.

The Emperor did not appear in the drawing-room until a moment before dinner; he had not, he said, seen any body the whole day; he had sought for diversion and found it in continued application. After dinner he again took up the Arabian Nights.

The Grand Marshal and his family have this day left Hut's-gate, their first residence, which was situated about one league from Longwood. They have at last taken possession of their new house, by which means we are now nearly under the same roof. This was quite an event for them and for us.

Digitized by Google

Expedition of Saint-Louis in Egypt.—Our Female Authors.—Madame de Staël.—The writers inimical to Napoleon will bite against granite.

21st.—I went after breakfast to see Madame Bertrand. She was so confined at Hut's-gate, that she will have no cause to regret being shut up within our enclosure, and we shall be very great gainers by it. For my part it seemed to me as if I had found part of my family.

Our limits become every day more circumscribed. The number of sentries is augmented, every thing reminds us incessantly of our horrible prison.

The Emperor said to me whilst he was dressing, "that he was determined to apply, once "more, regularly to his occupations, which had "been interrupted by the late ill-treatment "from our horrible Governor." I urged him to do so with all my might, as well for his own sake as for ours, and for France and History.

The weather was too bad to allow the Emperor to take the air. He went into his library, and looked over the History of the Crusades by Michaud, and the Memoirs of Joinville. From thence he went to the drawing-room, and conversed for some time longer; particularly respecting the servant which they wish to take from me, and one they intend to give me, &c.

The Governor will only give for the Emperor's

Digitized by Google

plate a sum which is more than a fifth less than the plate is valued at in Paris, and yet he will neither allow any competition for the sale of it in the Island, nor of its being taken to London! . . .

The unfortunate people that have been shipped for the Cape, will be fed like common sailors. I have heard on this occasion, that the same thing took place on board the Northumberland, and that the Emperor's servants had not had any indulgence more than the common sailors, except by paying for it.

After dinner the Emperor read, in Joinville, an account of the expedition of Saint-Louis in Egypt. He analysed it, pointing out its defects, and comparing the movements and the plan of that expedition with the plan adopted by himself; concluding that "if he had acted in the "same manner as Saint-Louis had done, he "would undoubtedly have shared the same fate."

The Emperor retired early and sent for me. The conversation again fell upon his excursions in Egypt and in Syria. Matilda, a novel, by Madame Cottin, the scene of which is laid in those countries, being incidentally mentioned, led the Emperor to take a review of our female authors. He spoke of Madame Roland and her Memoirs, of Madame de Genlis, of Madame Cottin, whose Claire d'Albe he had just been reading, and of Madame de Staël. He spoke

Digitized by Google

at length about the latter, and repeated in part what has already been said. Speaking of her exile, he said: "Her house had become quite "an arsenal against me; people went there "to be armed knights. She endeavoured to "raise enemies against me and fought against "me herself. She was at once Armida and "Clorinda." Then summing up his arguments as he was wont to do, he said: "After all, it "cannot be denied that Madame de Staël is "a very distinguished woman, endowed with "great talents and possessing a considerable "share of wit. She will go down to posterity. "It was more than once hinted to me, in order "to soften me in her favour, that she was an "adversary to be feared, and might become a "useful ally; and certainly if instead of reviling "me as she did, she had spoken in my praise, "it might no doubt have proved advantageous "to me; for her position and her abilities gave "her an absolute sway over the saloons, and "their influence in Paris is well known." He then added, "Notwithstanding all that she has "said against me, and all that she will say yet, "I am certainly far from thinking or saying "that she has a bad heart: the fact is, that she "and I have waged a little war against each "other, and that is all." Then taking a review of the numerous writers who have declaimed against him, he said: "I am destined to be

Digitized by Google

" their food, but I have li
" their victim; they will
" my history is made up
" alone cannot destroy them
" against me successfully,
" appear in the lists arm
" and authority of facts on
" man as the great Frederi
" of his cast, were to take
" me, then it would be a
" would then, perhaps, be t
" to be moved; but as fo
" whatever be their talent,
" vain. My fame will survi
" wish to be admired, tl
" praise."

Care taken of the wounded in the A
Characteristic circu

22d—23d. The weather l
The Emperor, suffering grea
ache, and having a swelled che
to go out for the last two day
greatest part of them with hi
or in the drawing-room, whi
into a promenade, by openin
munication from one to the o

Amongst the various subje
tion, he once told me certain
heard, and at which I much

Digitized by Google

can give a more striking proof of the horrors of our situation than the importance which I attached to them. But every thing is in proportion to the situation in which we are placed.

At another time, the Emperor expressed his regret at being so lazy with respect to the English language. I told him that he now knew as much of it as he wanted. He could read all books; it was now only necessary to reduce the whole to a regular system—but, were the rule and compass fit things for him?

After going through several subjects of conversation, the Emperor spoke of Baron Larrey, on whom he passed the highest encomium, saying that Larrey had left the impression on his mind of a true, honest man; that to science he united, in the highest degree, the virtue of active philanthropy: he looked upon all the wounded as belonging to his family; every consideration gave way before the care which he bestowed upon the hospitals. "In our first campaigns under the "Republic, which have been so much recited," said the Emperor, "a most fortunate revolution "took place in the surgical department, which "has since spread to all the armies of Europe; "and to Larrey it is, in great measure, that man-"kind is indebted for it. The surgeon now "shares the dangers of the soldier: it is in the "midst of the fire that he devotes his cares to

Digitized by Google

" him. Larrey possesses all
" gratitude," &c. &c.

N.B. This favourable impr
to have occupied Napoleon
moments; for he has left L
remembrance, with this hon
" *The most virtuous man that*
reading these words, I c
peculiar circumstance must
most magnificent expression
following is the result of my

After the battles of Lut
Bautzen, the victorious Na
surgeon (Larrey), to ascertai
ber of the wounded, and the
were. They happened to b
very considerably more nume
times and in other engageme
was surprised at this circu
voured to explain the cause
thought that, independently
might be found in the great
who had fought on that da
and who were, on that accou
their movements, and less
danger. The Emperor, wh
tremely preoccupied by this
tisfied with this explanation,
elsewhere. As there were,

Digitized by Google

several persons who were heartily tired of war; who would have wished for peace on any conditions; and who would not have been sorry to see the Emperor compelled to make it, whether from the effect of calculation or conviction,—the Emperor was told, in answer to his inquiries, that the immense number of wounded ought not to be a matter of surprise; that the greatest proportion of them were wounded in the hand, and they had inflicted the wound on themselves, in order to be disabled from fighting. The Emperor was thunderstruck at this information; he repeated his inquiries, and found them attended with the same result; he was in a state of despair. "If it "be thus," he exclaimed, "notwithstanding our "success, our situation is hopeless: France will "be delivered up defenceless to the barbarians." And turning over in his mind by what means he should put a stop to this contagion, he ordered all the wounded of a certain description to be put on one side; and named a commission, composed of surgeons, with Larrey at their head, to examine their wounds, resolved to punish most severely those who should be found to have been so cowardly as to mutilate themselves. M. Larrey, still unwilling to believe in this voluntary self-mutilation, which, in his opinion, was a stain on the honour of the army and of the nation, appeared before the Emperor to state his opinion once more to him. But Napoleon, incensed at

Digitized by Google

his obstinacy, which some persons had taken care to magnify in his eyes, said to him with severity, "Sir, you will make your observations to me "officially;—go and fulfil your duty."

Baron Larrey immediately applied to the business, but in a solemn manner; he followed up the most trifling details, and therefore proceeded slowly, whilst various motives rendered many persons impatient to see the issue; and it was known that the Emperor himself was no less impatient. Some persons did not fail to point out to M. Larrey the delicate situation in which he was placed; but he turned a deaf ear to all observations, and remained unmoved. At last, after some days, he went to the Emperor, insisting upon being allowed to deliver his report himself. "Well, Sir," said the Emperor, "do you still per-"sist in your opinion?"—"More than that, Sire, "I am come to prove to your Majesty that I was "right; these brave young men were basely ca-"lumniated: I have spent a considerable time in "the strictest investigation, and I have not found "one single man guilty; there is a deposition "in writing on the individual case of every "one of those wounded men: bales of them "follow me; your Majesty may order them to "be examined." The Emperor looked at him with a gloomy expression, and taking his report with a kind of emotion, he said, "Very well, "Sir, I will look into it;" and he paced the room

Digitized by Google

with rapid stride, with an air of agitation and indecision; at last coming up to Larrey with an open countenance, he shook him cordially by the hand, and said with emotion: "Farewell, "M. Larrey, a sovereign is truly fortunate to "have to do with such men as you are; you "will receive my orders." M Larrey received the same evening from Napoleon, his picture set in diamonds, 6000 francs in gold, and a pension on the State of 3000 francs, independent, it was said, of every other reward to which he might be entitled by his rank, his seniority, and his future services. Such traits are invaluable for history; as they exhibit, on the one hand, an honest man who does not hesitate to defend truth against a sovereign prepossessed and incensed; and because they display, on the other, the noble mind of the sovereign in the happiness and the gratitude which he expressed on being undeceived.

The Emperor accepts my four thousand Louis.—Tragedy of Euripides in its original purity ordered for the Theatre at Saint-Cloud.—Marshal Jourdan.

24th.—The Emperor has not been out, he has not sent for any of us, and he has not appeared at dinner. This made us fear that he was ill. After ten o'clock he sent for me, as I was not yet in bed. He told me he had not left his sofa the whole day; he had read during nearly eighteen

Digitized by Google

hours. He had only taken a little soup. He was suffering from his teeth. I told him we had feared it was something more serious, for that our grief at not seeing him, was always increased by apprehension.

After a short time, he began to touch upon our pecuniary resources. He had, as he humorously expressed it, held his council in the morning; the plate had been weighed, and the quantity that was to be sold had been computed; the produce of it, he added, would enable us to go on for some time longer. I again renewed the offer of the 4000 Louis which I had in the English funds, and he deigned to accept them. "Mine is a singular situation," said he; "I have no doubt that if a communica-
"tion were allowed with me, and that my rela-
"tives, or even many strangers, could suspect
"that I am in want, I should soon be amply
"provided with every thing that I require; but,
"ought I to be a burthen to my friends, and
"expose them to the undue advantage which the
"English ministers might take of their good-
"will? I have applied to those ministers for a
"few books, and they have sent them to me with
"all the inattention and neglect of a careless
"agent. They claim from me fifteen hundred or
"two thousand pounds sterling, that is, about
"50,000 francs, for what I might certainly have
"procured for less than 12,000. Would it not

Digitized by Google

" be the same with every thing else? If I accept " what you offer, it must be strictly applied to " our immediate wants; for, after all, we must " live, and we really cannot live upon what they " give us. The small addition of one hundred " Louis per month would just be sufficient, and " that is the sum which you must ask for, and " appropriate as carefully as possible."

The calash then came up to us; it was driven four in hand by Archambaud. This could not be otherwise, since the departure of Archambaud's brother. The Emperor refused at first to get into the carriage; he did not think it prudent, in the midst of the stumps of trees with which we were surrounded; he remembered his famous fall at Saint-Cloud, and wished one of the English servants to ride as a postilion, but Archambaud protested that he should feel less secure in that manner than in driving alone. Since the departure of his brother, he said, he had been constantly practising amongst the trees, in order to be sure that he could answer for himself. The Emperor then got in the calash, and we took two turns. On our return he went to see the residence of the Grand Marshal, with which he was not yet acquainted.

The evening was terminated by reading some passages of Longepierre's tragedy of Medea, which the Emperor interrupted, to compare it with that of Euripides on the same subject,

Digitized by Google

which he ordered to be br
mentioned, on the subject, t
ordered one of the Greek tr
sented at his theatre in the
tegrity, choosing the best p
and imitating as closely as p
dresses, forms, and scenery
could not recollect what ci
obstacle had prevented th
plan.

Having retired to his apar
ing himself disposed to sleep
in his room, and threw hims
opened a kind of political a
pened to be at hand; and fe
Marshals, which he passed
the same time, quotations ar
known or related. When h
Jourdan, he dwelt for some
and concluded by saying:
"has been assuredly very
"it was, therefore, natural
"would be highly incens
"I have heard with pleas
"haved with great modera
"He has given an example
"mind which serves to di
"does honour to their ch
"he was a true patriot, and
"things."

Digitized by Google

Summary of July, August, September, and October.—Of Mr. O'Meara's work.—Action now brought against him by Sir Hudson Lowe.—A few words in defence of this work.

The usual summary cannot henceforth be long; strictly speaking, three sentences would suffice to trace it:

Incessant annoyance.

Absolute seclusion.

Infallible destruction.

The remainder of Napoleon's existence will only be a cruel and prolonged agony.

It has already been seen that the arrival of a new Governor became for us the signal of the commencement of a life of misery. A few days had sufficed to unfold his disposition; and soon afterwards the annoyances and insults of which he made himself the organ, or which he himself created, were carried to the highest pitch. He rendered us an object of terror to the inhabitants—he subjected us to the most cruel vexations—he forbade us to write, without a previous communication with him, even to those persons with whom he did not prevent us from conversing without restraint — he invited *General Bonaparte* to dine at his table, to shew him to a lady of rank who was for a short time on the island—he arrested one of our servants.

He now produces a despatch, in pursuance of which he endeavours to oblige the Emperor to

Digitized by Google

go into the meanest details of his wants, as Napoleon expressed it, and to discuss them with him; he importunes the Emperor to give money which he does not possess; and by dint of reductions in the common necessaries of life, obliges him to break up and sell his plate, determining at the same time, by his authority as Governor, the rate at which it is to be sold, and the person who is to purchase it. He ridiculously restricts us to one bottle of wine per head, including the Emperor. "He cheapens our existence," said the Emperor; "he grudges me "the air I breathe, and what he sends to us for "our subsistence is sometimes, nay frequently, "so bad, that we are obliged to apply for provi-"sions to the neighbouring camp!!" &c.

He lays a snare for Napoleon, and exults in the hope of being able to impart to him, personally and pompously, a communication which he calls a ministerial order, but which is so outrageous that he refuses to leave a copy of it; he prescribes to the Emperor the most absurd regulations; he capriciously, and with bitter irony, contracts the space of his usual limits; chalks out the trace of his footsteps; and even goes so far as to attempt to regulate the nature of his conversations and the tenour of his expressions; he surrounds us with trenches, palisadoes, and redoubts; he obliges each of us individually, in

Digitized by Google

order to be allowed to remain with the Emperor, to sign a declaration that we submit to all these restrictions; he makes use of us as instruments to degrade the Emperor, by obliging us to call him *Bonaparte*, under pain of being immediately removed from his person and instantly sent out of the island, &c. &c.

The Emperor, provoked by such disgraceful usage and such gratuitous insults, opens his mind without reserve to Sir Hudson Lowe; his words know no restraint; he frees himself for ever from his odious presence, and declares that he never will see him again. "The most un-" worthy proceeding of the English ministers," said the Emperor to him, "is not to have sent me " here, but to have delivered me into your hands. " I complained of the admiral your predecessor; " but he at least had a heart! . . . You are a " disgrace to your nation, and your name will " for ever be a stain upon its character! . . . . " This Governor," the Emperor would frequently say to us, " has nothing of an Englishman in his " composition; he is nothing but a worthless " *shire* of Sicily. I at first complained that a " gaoler had been sent to me; but I now affirm " they have sent me an executioner," &c.

I have recorded these expressions, and I might mention many more, however harsh they may be. 1st, Because I heard them uttered. 2dly, Because Napoleon used them in speaking to Sir

Digitized by Google

Hudson Lowe in person, or cause repeated to him. 3dly and lastly, were deserved, on account of t oppressive, and brutal manner, Governor, to the great scandal of th themselves who were on the spot, manifested their disgust at his co the power with which he was in name of a Nation so eminently dis over the globe, of a Prince so u spected in Europe, and of a Cab there were still some honourable ch personally known by their moderat elegant manners.

The vexations by which Napoleor were incessant; they pursued him ment of his existence. Not a day p the infliction of a fresh wound; a torments recorded in fabulous hi said to have been thus realized.

Ah! if during that period of af many generous hearts, the genius o genius of Truth, and the genius of ever unwillingly turned their eyes t Helena, and upon the great Napo have sought for him in that island thought it would be endeavoured turn into a kind of Elysium fo must have been their indignation the bright glory of so many imm

Digitized by Google

chained like Prometheus to a rock, and like him under the claws of a vulture, which delights in tearing him to pieces!!! O infamy! O eternal disgrace! . . .

During this period the Emperor's health has been constantly and considerably declining; his body, which was thought so robust, which had endured so many toils, and withstood so much fatigue, supported by victory and glory, was now bending under the weight of infirmities prematurely brought on by the injustice of men. Almost every day he is attacked by some new indisposition; fever, swelled face, symptoms of scurvy, constant colds; his features are altered, his gait becomes heavy, his legs swelled, &c. . . Our hearts were torn in seeing him thus hastening towards infallible destruction; all our cares are in vain.

He had long since given up riding on horseback, and by degrees, also, he almost entirely relinquished his rides in the calash. Even walking became a rare occurrence, and he was thus nearly reduced to a strict seclusion in his apartments. He no longer applied to any regular or continued occupation; he seldom dictated to us, and only upon subjects that were merely the fancy of the moment. He spent the greatest part of the day alone in his room, busied in turning over a few books, or rather doing nothing. Let those who have formed a due estimate of the power of his

Digitized by Google

faculties, appreciate the strength of mind required to enable him to bear, with equanimity, the intolerable burthen of a life so wearisome and monotonous; for, in our presence, he always exhibited the same serenity of countenance and equality of temper; his mind appeared equally unembarrassed; his conversation offered the same lively turns of expression, and he was sometimes even inclined to mirth and humour; but, in the privacy of intimate intercourse, it was easy to perceive that he no longer thought of the future, meditated on the past, or cared about the present; he merely yielded a passive obedience to the physical laws of Nature, and, thoroughly disgusted with life, he perhaps secretly sighed for the moment which was to put an end to it.

Such was the state of affairs when I was forcibly removed from Longwood; for that period approaches—it is not far distant.

I have not noted down in the course of my Journal every minute circumstance of our quarrels with the Governor, or the numerous official communications that were exchanged between us. I have also omitted to mention all the shameful privations to which we were exposed, in respect to the necessaries and comforts of life. My object has been to show Napoleon's character in its true light, and not to write the history of Longwood, and the catalogue of its miseries. Those who have any curiosity on that

Digitized by Google

score may seek for details in the work of Mr. O'Meara. It would have argued meanness in me, who was one of the victims, had I dwelt upon them; but for the Doctor, who was only a witness, who was a stranger to us, and in some degree one of the adverse party, he can only, situated as he is, have been actuated in so doing by the impulse of a powerful feeling, and of generous indignation, which does honour to his heart.

I have just heard that the ex-governor of Saint-Helena has brought an action against Mr. O'Meara for defamation and calumny: I have the highest respect for the Judges that preside over the principal courts of justice in England, because I know how they are chosen; but how can one, in these days, be secure of the result of such an action? In the unfortunate political effervescence of our times, truth appears, as it were, in two lights at the same time; the true light is, for every individual, that which exists in his own heart; for, after all, it is impossible to impose upon one's self, and that reflection will, no doubt, be a motive of consolation to Mr. O'Meara, whatever the result may be. And I must here declare that all the facts that I have seen stated in Mr. O'Meara's work, on the above-mentioned points, and which may have been known to me while I was at Saint-Helena, are strictly true; and from thence I naturally conclude, by analogy, that the re-

Digitized by Google

mainder, which I have not seen, is also true. I, therefore, do not hesitate to say that I consider it as such in my heart and conscience.

Whilst writing this, I have received from Sir Hudson Lowe some extracts of confidential letters which, he informs me, he received at the time from Mr. O'Meara, in which, he observes to me, O'Meara spoke of me in a very improper manner, and made secret reports to him respecting me. What can have been the intention of Sir Hudson Lowe in acting thus with me? Considering the terms on which we are together, he cannot have been prompted by a very tender interest. Did he wish to prove to me that Mr. O'Meara acted as a spy for him upon us? Did he hope so far to prepossess me against him, as to influence the nature and the force of my testimony in favour of his adversary? And, after all, are these letters in their original state? have they not been altered after the fashion of Saint-Helena? But, even supposing their meaning to be true and explicit, in what respect can they offend me? What claim had I then on Mr. O'Meara's indulgence? what right had I to expect it? It is true, that at a later period, after his return to Europe, seeing him persecuted and punished on account of the humanity of his conduct towards Napoleon, I wrote to him to express my heartfelt gratitude, and to offer him an asylum in my family, should injustice compel him to leave his own country;

Digitized by Google

that he was welcome to share with me. But at Saint-Helena I hardly knew him, and I do not believe that I spoke to him ten times during my residence at Longwood. I considered him as being opposed to me by nation, by opinions, and by interest: such was the nature of my connexion with Mr. O'Meara. He was, therefore, entirely at liberty with respect to me: he might *then* write whatever he thought proper, and it cannot now vary the opinion which I have since formed of him. Sir Hudson Lowe intends now to insinuate that Mr. O'Meara was a double and a triple spy at the same moment, viz. for the Government, for Napoleon, and for him, Sir Hudson Lowe; but does that disprove the truth and destroy the authenticity of the facts mentioned in his book? On the contrary. And from which of the three parties could he expect to be rewarded for revealing these facts to the public? Napoleon is no more; he can expect nothing from him: and his publication has rendered the two others his ardent enemies, who have deprived him of his situation, and threaten to disturb his repose; for his real crime, in their eyes, is the warm zeal, which he has displayed, of a friend to the laws and to decorum; who, indignant at the mean and indecorous vexations to which Napoleon had been exposed, drags the true authors of them to light, in order to exculpate his country. I have, therefore, considered this tardy communication of the

Digitized by Google

confidential letters which Sir Hudson Lowe has just transmitted to me, at the moment of his action with O'Meara, as a kind of interested accusation, which every one will qualify as he thinks proper. I have never even acknowledged the receipt of these letters; and still less have I ever thought of complaining of their contents.

I now advance in my undertaking; I calculate the period of its termination, and my acknowledgments are due for the favourable manner in which it has hitherto been received. I felt that I had a duty imposed upon me, and I have devoted myself to its fulfilment, not lukewarmly, but conscientiously. Having undertaken to pourtray the man of prodigies, not with my own feeble colouring, but by means of his own words and gestures, I have thought it indispensable, above all things, to be minutely true and scrupulously exact; and I hope that those who shall have read my book will render me the justice to acknowledge, that I have sacrificed all system, all opinions, all party-feeling, all connexions, to attain that end. I have wounded private feelings; I have not been swayed by regard for the highest personages, or the highest considerations. On the other hand, I have not concealed from myself any of the grave inconveniences or numerous troubles which it may entail upon me. I had to fear that plain and impartial truth, as it too often happens, might

Digitized by Google

displease every body, and raise many voices against it; the Government also, on a subject so nearly connected with our great events, might become incensed; and I had to fear that I might be brought before the magistrature, and condemned to fine, confiscation, or imprisonment. It is true that I might have lessened the danger and difficulty of this situation, and made myself almost a stranger to it, by giving or selling my manuscript in France or abroad: but should I thus have fulfilled my object? and, notwithstanding every condition that I might have imposed, would there have been wanting pretences or real motives for altering or mutilating this work, the only merit of which consists in its integrity? Being desirous, therefore, that it should not be altered at all, and wishing to be able to controul the very last line up to the very last moment, I have, to all other inconveniences, added that of risking the deterioration of my fortune by publishing the work at my own risk and peril. Large sums were offered to me, in England and in Germany, for those parts of my manuscript which, it was supposed, circumstances would prevent me from publishing in France: but I answered, that no part had been omitted; for it was not consistent with my principles to suffer that to be published abroad, under my name, which I should not have dared to publish consistently with the laws of my own country, how-

Digitized by Google

ever severe they might appear to me. However, in spite of all causes of alarm, I have hitherto every reason to congratulate myself altogether on the plan which I have thought proper to follow: the most flattering testimonies have reached me from every quarter, and the law has remained silent. Perhaps the law may even feel in some measure grateful to me, for not having, in our days of irritation, despaired of its impassibility on a subject of so delicate a nature, and for having placed it in a situation to furnish so decisive a proof of its moderation:—for my part, I feel proud of it, for the sake of the law.

I have not pretended to be either an apologist or a panegyrist; but I have wished to enable every man to be the one or the other according to his own conviction, or to his own feelings; and for that reason I have preserved in the work even the most trifling minutiæ, in order that every body might be struck with the character of truth which results from the contexture of all the different parts. I have only omitted personal anecdotes or epithets, which, being foreign to my subject, would only have been gratuitously offensive, and, unfortunately, too many have still escaped me. Unable to apply to any occupation requiring any great degree of attention, obliged to use the utmost haste, lest I should not see the termination of my undertaking, and led on by the principal feature of the work, I

Digitized by Google

have not had it in my power to bestow a sufficient degree of attention upon the accessories. When, therefore, these volumes which have already been published, are now read to me, I am surprised to find in them what I wished to have effaced, and what I sometimes think I had effaced. My situation will account for this neglect, as well as for many typographical errors, and must plead my excuse; for it has probably happened that my manuscript, on reaching the public, has passed through no other hands than those of a copyist and of the compositor; such is the inconvenience of my absolute solitude, which deprives me of the advantage of receiving advice or of submitting my work to revision. But it will perhaps be observed to me, why have you not applied to many persons, whose kindness, whose information, and whose knowledge of the subject might have been of essential service to you? To this I reply by asking whether two witnesses of the same fact have ever been found to agree on all points? Every one that I should have consulted, would therefore have wished to alter some of my chapters according to his way of thinking; and if I had allowed it, the actual words, the opinions, the judgments, right or wrong, of Napoleon, would soon have disappeared altogether; and what should I have produced in their stead? A book re-made in Paris. If, on the contrary, I had obstinately resisted,

Digitized by Google

the feeling of men on such occasions is well known: I should have given offence, and should never have been forgiven for having applied for advice and not followed it.

But it will perhaps be further said to me, why did you not act like all authors of memoirs, who generally do not allow them to be published until after their death, in order to avoid the inconveniences to which you are exposed? What! that I should have waited? How then would the duty which I have imposed upon myself have been fulfilled? And what would become of my intention to afford some satisfaction to those who have loved Napoleon, and to force those who have remained his enemies to esteem him. Shall we all, men of all ranks, professions, and callings, and I the first, who have served him with pride and sincerity, who have loved him with admiration, who have exulted from our hearts at the glory, splendour, and prosperity, which he poured over France, coldly hear him calumniated day after day, and feel ourselves at every moment insulted in his person? And I, possessing the triumphant answers to these calumnies, should have remained silent, should have waited! and for some trifling consideration, should have disappointed our contemporaries eager for information! No. The public was waiting in anxious expectation, they demanded that the companions of Napoleon should tell them what they had collected from

Digitized by Google

his words, or read in his mind. The journal which I had kept gave me the advantage of being soonest ready, and at the request of all I have hastened to fulfill this sacred duty; and happen what may, I already possess my reward in the testimonies, the wishes, the sympathy, which have been manifested to me, and in a kind of gratitude which some generous and noble hearts have expressed with rapture. Some have frankly confessed, that they had expected to find themselves more favourably spoken of, others have openly avowed that they had reasons to complain; but, said they, Napoleon has also had to complain of so many persons! he must have been so unhappy on his rock! may he not have been carried away by a moment of spleen? for you do not affirm that what he says is true, but merely that he said it. If therefore the accusation were of any great consequence, we should dispute it; if it were false, we should deny it; and they concluded by saying that they most willingly sacrificed their personal mortification, to the almost general satisfaction which was created by the recital of all that I had made known of him, in whose toils they had shared and to whom they owed their fortunes and their glory.

Digitized by Google

INDEX

TO

THE SIXTH PART.

ANTRAIGUES (*Count*). His arrest.—Pichegru's treason discovered by the seizure of his papers, 306. Owes his life to Napoleon—Breaks his parole and escapes into Switzerland, and publishes an infamous libel against his benefactor, 307. His death in England, 308.

AUSTRIA. Defect of her policy—Allowed a colossal power to embrace her in front, while she could not recede, having nothing but precipices in her rear and on her flanks, 281.

BALLOONS. That which ascended at the coronation of Napoleon carried the news to Rome in a few hours. Falsehood of the anecdote respecting that at the military school attributed to Napoleon, 313.

BAVARIA (*the King of*). His conduct to Napoleon, 54.

BERTRAND (*Grand Marshal*). Presented to Napoleon for the first time at the army of Italy. Anecdote, 179.

BESSIERES (*Duke of Istria*). The King of Saxony causes a monument to be raised to his memory on the spot where he was wounded, similar to that of Gustavus Adolphus, and not far from it, 33.

CASTLEREAGH (*Lord*). Napoleon said he had made peace as if he had been vanquished—neglected the welfare and greatness of England, 92. Was the factor of the Continental sovereigns rather than their partner, 93. Made himself the man of the Holy Alliance, 94.

CATINAT (*Marshal of France*). The Emperor's opinion of, 4.

CHARLES XII. His excesses, 149.

CLARKE (*Duke of Feltre*). Second French plenipotentiary at Campo-Formio. His mission from the Directory to Napoleon in Italy, 301. Aide-de-camp to the First Consul, 302. Ambassador to Florence. Favours conferred on him by Napoleon, 303.

COBENTZEL (*Count*). Endeavours to protract the conferences for the treaty of Campo-Formio. Napoleon, by a stroke of policy, and a feigned passion, forces him to come to a conclusion, 299.

CODE. Napoleon would have had no laws but those inscribed in the code.—Its publication was instantly followed by commentaries and supplements.—Napoleon's remark on this subject, 263.

CONDE' (*the Great*). The Emperor's observation on, 4.

CRESCENTINI. Receives the order of the iron-crown—Anecdote, 277.

DARU, (*Count*). The Emperor calls him a man of extreme probity, punctuality, and industry.—Anecdote, 21.

Digitized by Google

Decrès (*Duke*). The Emperor instanced his administration of the marine as the most regular and pure; he had rendered it a master-piece, 207.

Desaix (*General*). His arrival at Marengo. Conversation with Napoleon, 10.

Dutch. The Emperor captivated them by his journey to Amsterdam, 73.—On his return said he had become a Dutchman.—Eulogium on the people of Holland, 75.

Elba (*Isle of*). Historical sketch of Napoleon's return therefrom, 20th March, 156.

Emigration. Resources of the emigrants. Lessons in mathematics given by a prince of the blood.—Anecdote, 266.

England. The Emperor said she ought to emancipate her colonies to alleviate her debt.—Particulars, 90.—Derives no benefit from India, which is a resource for the high aristocracy.—The English aristocracy is very willing to gain ground, but not to retrograde an atom, 91.—Has given all to her allies, 92.—What she ought to have done for her own interest, 93.—Her public debt, a gnawing worm, the cause of all her difficulties, 95.—Traffics in every thing: "Why does she not set about selling liberty?" said Napoleon, 98.

Fatalism. The Emperor called it an absurdity. His arguments, 259.

Fenelon. The Emperor said his Direction of a King's conscience was a mere rhapsody, 4.

Fox. His heart, said Napoleon, gave warmth to his genius, 99.

French. The French are, of all nations, the easiest to make excellent soldiers, and to keep so; according to the Emperor, 7.

Gallo (*M. de*). One of the Austrian Plenipotentiaries at Campo-Formio. Portrait of him. Anecdote, 299.

Greek Tragedies. The Emperor had ordered one to be represented, in its original state, on the Court Theatre, 361.

Homer. Combat of Ulysses and Irus. Napoleon's observations, 278.

Inspectors of Reviews. Their utility, 206.

Israelites. Calculations on their population in Egypt, 181.

Italy. Topography of, dictated by the Emperor, 186.

Jourdan (*Marshal*). The Emperor's observations on, 361.

Lamballe (*Princess*). Recalled from her emigration by a letter from the Queen. Returned to her notwithstanding the opinions of her old advisers. Her abode at the Tuileries, 344.

Larrey (*Baron*), Surgeon-general. Napoleon's observations and eulogium on; all the wounded were his children.—Named by Napoleon, in his will, the most virtuous man he ever met with.—Probable explanation of so high an encomium, 354.

Las Cases (*Count*). The Emperor reads his Journal, and

Digitized by Google

appears pleased with it, 271.
the prisoners of whom the Go
Offers the Emperor a sum of n
Remarkable conversation with
LEONARD (*the Queen's hair-dresser*
the uproar of the King's arres
baton of a Marshal of Franc
M. de Bouillé, 342.
LIBRARY. Valuation of that sen
349.
LONDONDERRY. See Castlereagl
LOUIS XVI. Innumerable diffi
against this unfortunate prin
the Stuarts was not more cala
trand de Molleville, 340.
LOUIS BONAPARTE (*Ex-King of I*
of him by the Emperor, 217. I
ceived by him from Napoleon,
LOWE (*Sir Hudson, Governor of*
cavilling about the subsistence
allowance of wine at a bottle
154. Forbids the sale of the
the individual appointed by hir
of the greatest rudeness, 268
280. New restrictions, 283.
him away at his own capriee,
vations, 286. Requires new
peror is styled Bonaparte, 317
of the prisoners, 320.
LUCIEN. Analysis of his poem
dence of the ground on whi
Might have composed a good
have been a valuable present t
MAINTENON (*Madame de*). The
Capello of her time.—Not sat
terious marriage, 19. Napole
style, grace, and purity of lan
ferred them to those of Madan
MAISON (*General.*) The Emper
MARIE-ANTOINETTE (*Queen of I*
dame Campan.—Particulars,
had made it a rule to observe
Marie-Antoinette, 342.
MENEVAL (*Baron*). His qualitie
—Anecdotes, 236.
MERLIN (*Count*). Described by
prudent, upright, and honest
good old cause, 264.

Digitized by Google

MINISTRIES. The Emperor said, his ministry of the marine had been conducted with the greatest purity and regularity. —That of the war department beyond the strength of one person, 207. His intentions respecting that branch of administration.—Projected twenty or twenty-five military districts, 208. Great services rendered by the treasury and secretary of state's departments, 209. A Minister secretary of state a proper appendage to imbecile princes, 210.

MONGES (*Count de Peluze*). Correction of an article in the Fourth Part, (page 177.)—He never appeared at the Jacobins, 315.

MOREAU (*General*). Was acquainted with Pichegru's treachery three months before it was discovered, and had kept it secret, betraying his country by his silence. When he spoke, at last, it was only overwhelming a fallen man, 309.

NAPOLEON. Pleads his cause before all nations, who acquit him. —The French and Italians sigh on account of his absence.—Obtains the gratitude of the Poles, and even the late and bitter regret of the Spaniards.—Said that Europe is in the greatest danger, and constantly liable to be inundated by Cossacks and Tartars.—"And you Englishmen," he observed, "will bewail your victory of Waterloo," 2. False anecdotes told of the Emperor, 6. On his finest battle.—Had fought fifty or sixty.—The best troops.—Said that, with his guard complete, he should have thought himself strong enough to traverse all Europe, 7. His armies of Italy and Austerlitz will never be surpassed, 8. All Frenchmen have been partial to him, from Collot d'Herbois to the Prince of Condé.—Had been the sun travelling in the ecliptic, 9. Historical sketch of the return from Egypt to France, 11. Singular instances of the caprice of fortune in Egypt, 15. Rallies the prisoners on their dress, 23. Remarkable observations on the campaign of Saxony in 1813, which will be the triumph of innate courage in the youth of France, &c. 25. Had no reason to complain of any of the princes his allies, 26. A Frenchman who had obtained a crown through his French blood, had given us the *coup de grace* in that campaign, 27. Remarks on his lieutenants and soldiers. The great generals were tired of war; they had drunk of the cup of enjoyment. They would have liked to be marshals like those of Louis XV. 28. His great fault, his fundamental error in that campaign was that of believing that his enemies had as much judgment and knowledge of their true interest as he had himself, 29. His benevolence towards a farmer on a little isle in the Rhine, 71. And to a boatman in Holland, 72. Gains the favour of the public at Amsterdam. Would have no other guard there than the guard of honour of the country; leaves the Dutch quite captivated with

Digitized by Google

him, and carries with him very decided sentiments in their favour, 73. Remarkable observations on the massacres of the 2d of September, 75. Neither could nor would be king of a *Jacquerie*.—Said there never was a social revolution without terror, 76.—A revolution is always one of the greatest evils that can afflict a land.—True social happiness consists in the peaceful use and harmony of every individual's enjoyments, 77. His angry attacks always premeditated.—Had been obliged to surround himself with a halo of fear to prevent people from slapping him on the shoulder, 88. His irresistible impulse to put what was grand in action, to develope every thing that was fine, 88. Observations on England, her debt, and colonies, 89. What she ought to have reserved to herself on the conclusion of peace. Has given all to her allies, 92. The Emperor an enemy to public loans.—Had fixed the amount of the public debt at eighty millions per annum.—Had a private stock on which he drew for loans to banking-houses and families in difficulties, 97. Would have carefully supported the *caisse d'amortissement*, and created *caisses d'activité*, 98.—Says that the modern regeneration must be accomplished sooner or later: to contend against it is the task of Sysiphus, whose rock the old aristocracies keep suspended over their heads, 98. "Heaven grant," said he, "that the youth of the present day may profit by our "faults, and may shew themselves as wise as ardent!" 100. His favours and rewards an absolute lottery, notwithstanding his entire good will, 102. Opinions of the saloons with respect to him, 103. The eagerness of women to conceal their age, 105. Manuscript of the Isle of Elba, 106. It would be difficult to estimate the known sums which he has scattered around him—Grand motives of his lavish donations, 142. Had wished to found great families, effectual rallying-points, standards to collect round in any great national crisis, 143. Smallness of his bed, 144. Numerous reforms on his accession to the Consulate—Anecdote of the Tic, 145. Guards of the Eagle—Cuckoo—Freedom of the soldiers with him—Often addressed by them in the second person singular.—Anecdotes, 147. The physicians and chemists had recommended him to reject wine and coffee on the least uncommon flavour, 150. Analyses the poem of Charlemagne, by his brother Lucien, 151. On his return from the Isle of Elba, felt no personal animosity against those whom he came to overthrow, 155. Historical sketch of the return from the Isle of Elba, 156. Simpleton, an epithet which, in his phraseology, signified honest man, 176. All his family authors, 177. Genius lies in finding few or no impossibilities, 178. The productive soil of France inferior to that of Egypt, 181. His resemblance to Joseph becomes striking, 183. Has his plate

Digitized by Google

broken up to be sold, 184. His method of measuring a country, and making a good plan of campaign—Dictates the topography of Italy, 186. Famous debt of Saint-Domingo, 202. With his minister of the treasury and his minister secretary of state, and a dozen writers, would have governed the empire in the remotest part of Illyria, or on the banks of the Niemen, as well as in the capital, 209. The signet an implement for imbecile kings, 210. His sensibility—Tenderness towards his wife and son. Anecdotes, 212. Louis and Holland, 217. Said he had been ill seconded by his family. Less fortunate than Gengis Khan with his four sons. When he appointed a King, it was only making one more enemy to contend with, 220. Said it is difficult to govern, if we wish to do it conscientiously, 223. His letter to his brother Louis respecting Holland, 224. Declared that he was born for business; that he had known the limits of his faculties of locomotion and vision, but not of his powers of application, 233. Complained of the pitiful manner in which history is written. His intentions, 233. Would have had the history of our latter kings written from the original documents of the foreign office, 234. What he called after-midnight presence of mind, 240. Said he still distributed crowns even from Saint-Helena, 245. Fine dictation by the Emperor, 245. What he called his treasures, 248. Dictated without preparation, 255. Odd peculiarity, 256. Often clipped names.—His orthography; remarks thereon, 257. Never was subject to any involuntary pre-occupation of mind.—His curious explanation of this privilege, 258. Was not a fatalist, 259. Determines to receive the Governor no more, 261. Laws the type of perspicuity in theory, but a mere chaos in practice—This is because men and their passions deteriorate all they have to do with, 263. Wished to have reduced the laws to the simplicity of geometrical demonstrations, and to have none but what were in the Code; otherwise, by the assistance of a few old decrees of Chilperic and Pharamond, no man could say he was safe from being lawfully hanged, 264. The empire of opinion.—Napoleon wished to have given the cross of the legion of honour to Talma.—Made an experiment on Crescentini, 276. Gave crowns, but could not bestow a simple ribbon, 277. Said that civilization promoted the mind at the expence of the body, 280. On Austria and her policy.—Observations respecting his son, 281. New restrictions by the Governor, 285. Observations dictated by the Emperor, 286. MM. de Cobentzel and de Gallo at the Conferences of Campo-Formio, 298. The discovery of Pichegru's treason has a material influence on the course which the General of the army of Italy adopts in the affairs of Fructidor, 308. Dream, 309. Simplicity, his best ornament, 311.

Digitized by Google

Remarks on Prince Eugene, 312. Falsehood of the anecdote of the balloon at the military school, 313. Remarks on the new insults offered by the Governor.—Wished the captives not to sign the new declarations, 317. Said he ought to expect the worst extremities, but that his mind possessed strength enough to meet them, 318; that his body was in the power of the wicked, but that the soul reigns every where, and even from the depth of a dungeon aspires to Heaven, 325. Said he was deaf, 326. His grand principle was to prevent all re-action, and to bury the past entirely. Never persecuted opinions. Had surrounded himself with regicides. Did not approve of their doctrine, but was not their judge, 330. During the public fêtes, mingled, disguised, in the crowd. Anecdote, 332. Often traversed the capital in the morning alone, and disguised; mixed amongst workmen, 333. *Police of the Cadi*, 333. Anecdotes of his return from Moscow, and from the Isle of Elba, 334. Note sent to the Governor, respecting the declarations demanded by him, 337. Said of writers, that, in order to oppose him with success, it would be necessary for them to be supported by actions of their own. "If Frederick the Great were to "enter the lists against me," said he, "it would be time to "stir; but as to all the rest, whatever talent they may exert, "their efforts will be vain; and when they wish to shine, "they will praise me," 353. Accepts four thousand Louis of one of the captives; said that if it were imagined in Europe that he was in want, he should soon be abundantly supplied with every thing, 359. Once ordered a Greek piece to be acted before him in its original state, 361.

O'Meara. Prosecution now pending against him at the suit of Sir Hudson Lowe, 368. His work on Saint-Helena, 369.

Opinion. Its influence; its nature. Napoleon said he had been able to distribute sceptres and crowns at pleasure, but had not possessed the power to dispose of a simple ribbon, 277.

Pichegru. Sacrifices his soldiers to facilitate the enemy's operations, 307. His treachery was known to Moreau three months before, 309.

Pitt. The Emperor said that Pitt's genius dried up the flow of the heart, whilst Fox's heart gave warmth to his genius, 99.

Regent (*The*), Remarks on, and on Louis XIV, 18.

Revolution. Napoleon said there never was a social revolution without terror. That time and success alone render revolutions legitimate, 76. That they are always amongst the greatest evils with which Heaven can afflict a nation, 77. That ours was a moral eruption as inevitable as those of a physical nature. Napoleon thought it would have been very difficult to stifle it in its birth, 78.

Digitized by Google

SAINT-DOMINGO (*Island of*). Particulars of its famous debt, 202.
SAXONY (*Campaign of*). Napoleon said it will be the triumph of innate courage in the youth of France, of intrigue and cunning in English diplomacy, of wit in the Russians, and shamelessness in the Austrian cabinet, 25. Particulars of this campaign, 26. Fatalities, treachery, 57.
SAXONY (*The King of*). Napoleon declares his belief of his inviolable fidelity, 26.
SAXONS. The Emperor said that the annals of war would never be cleared from the stain left by the conduct of the Saxons, in turning upon our ranks to slaughter us. To *saxonize*, amongst soldiers, is an expression now used when one troop assassinates another, 26.
SEPTEMBER (*Transactions of the 2d and 3d of September*, 1792). Acts of fanaticism, rather than of mere atrocity. Remarkable expressions, 75.
SEVIGNE' (*Madame de*). Napoleon's opinions on her letters, 86.
SIEYES. Anecdote, 328. Described by the Emperor as a man of integrity, affability, and great talents, 331. His opinion on the probable duration of the consular authority, 332.
SMITH (*Sir Sidney*). The Emperor said he was not a bad man. Occasioned Napoleon's departure from Egypt for France, 11.
STAEL (*Madame de*). Her house became an absolute arsenal against Napoleon; she employed herself there in raising up enemies against him, and opposed him herself besides; she was at once Armida and Clorinda, 350.
TALMA. Napoleon wished to have given him the order of the legion of honour, 276.
TURENNE. The Emperor said that hardihood in him had increased with age and experience, 5.
WEST AND EAST. Napoleon includes all nations in these two classes. Difference between them, 214.
WURTEMBERG (*the King of*). His generosity in the campaign of Saxony. His conduct towards his troops which had gone over to the enemy, 66.
WOMEN. Of the pains they take to conceal their age. Anecdotes, 104.
WRITERS. Those who declaim against Napoleon, whatever talents they may possess, will only exert themselves in vain: when they wish to shine, they will praise him, 353.

END OF THE SIXTH PART.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY S. AND R. BENTLEY, DORSET STREET.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google